



CULTIVATION CHAT GROUP

BOOK 05

Legend Of The Sacred Knight

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Cultivation Chat Group

(修真聊天群)

by

Legend Of The Sacred Knight

(圣骑士的传说)

Synopsis

On a certain day, Song Shuhang accidentally joined a deeply afflicted Xianxia chuunibyou(Year 2 middle school disease) chat group, the group members inside all address each other as ‘fellow daoist’. Their contact cards are all either Sect Master, Cave Master, Spiritual Master or Heavenly Expert. Even the group master’s missing pet dog named Great Devil Dog abandoned his home. They chat all day about things like concocting pills, intruding mysterious territories, martial arts experiences and more.

One day, he abruptly realizes after lurking for a long time that..... In this group, every single group member is actually a real cultivator, with the ability to move mountains and drain seas, the kind that can live for thousands of years!

Ah ah ah ah, My worldview has utterly collapsed in a single night!

Copyright © by Lisa Hayes

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Premonition, LemonPEEL @ [volaretranslations](#)

Translation Edit by Khuja, Asvare @ [volaretranslations](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 401: The 21st-century good neighbor

Was this lazy-looking fellow daoist joking? He wanted them not to resist and obediently get beaten up, and even planned to take a photo of them later and upload it onto the internet?

For someone that was only at the Fourth Stage Innate Realm, he had a really big tone! Did he think that they were pushovers or something?

The middle-aged Spiritual Emperor and the white-haired but healthy Spiritual Emperor exchanged glances—teaching this guy of the Fourth Stage a lesson wouldn't take too much time.

In that case, they might as well give him a lesson before leaving!

"Let me do it. There isn't much time left, I will end the battle in an instant," said the middle-aged Spiritual Emperor. At the same time, he took a step forward, gathering spiritual energy between his fingers. His attack power was stronger than that of the other Spiritual Emperor.

Liu Jianyi scratched the back of his head and exclaimed, "What a headache, even though I said it so clearly..."

Things were always this troublesome. Some of them were clearly simple, but achieving them involved a very troublesome process.

Did people not realize... that it was a huge waste of physical and mental energy to process these matters?

Both physical and mental energy were very precious, wasn't it a shame to waste them? Moreover, there was the huge waste of time—just how great it would be to use the time spent on dealing with those things to sleep instead?!

"A mere Fourth Stage Innate Realm... and yet, he has the audacity to behave like this," the middle-aged Spiritual Emperor

said in a low voice. "It's a pity I can't use large-scale spells that would create huge fluctuations of spiritual energy... however, to get rid of a small Fourth Stage like you, I don't have to use any strong spells."

"Fourth Stage Realm? Oh..." Liu Jianyi was dumbfounded at first. Next, he clapped his hands and said, "Wait a moment, you guys! I'm so used to concealing my actual realm that I forgot about it."

In the next moment, strong spiritual energy erupted from Liu Jianyi's body.

The facial expressions of the two Spiritual Emperors immediately changed... the other party was also a Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor.

Even though his spiritual energy was weaker than theirs, it boasted much superior quality... this was because the quality of his golden core was far higher than theirs.

Disguising as a pig to prey on a tiger?

"Now then, can you guys let me beat you up?" Liu Jianyi said in anticipation. As he was speaking, he took out his phone and a selfie stick. Firstly, he fixed his phone at the chosen angle and snapped a picture of him and the two Spiritual Emperors in the front.

After putting away the selfie stick and his phone, Liu Jianyi said, "Don't worry, I won't hit you too hard. At most you'd only get some superficial wounds that can be recovered in a couple of minutes. After beating you guys up, I'll take a picture for me to report back after completing my task. Thereafter, we go our separate ways. Good for you and me!"

"..." The middle-aged Spiritual Emperor.

"..." The white-haired but healthy Spiritual Emperor.

"..." Venerable Spirit Butterfly who was in midair.

The nearby Soft Feather blinked her eyes slightly.



Liu Jianyi's lazy appearance caused people to feel a rush of anger when they laid their eyes on him—even though Liu Jianyi only wanted to slack off, his speech and mannerism caused others to feel that he was despising and provoking the two Golden Core Spiritual Emperors.

The white-haired but healthy Spiritual Emperor barely contained his anger. "Fellow Daoist, I would like to know why you are making things difficult for us."

Liu Jianyi scratched his head and said, "Ah, I didn't tell you guys? Explaining myself is rather troublesome, but I'll tell you guys anyway.

Previously... weren't you guys with the Illusory Sword Sect, supporting them? Thereafter, didn't you pressure the Chu Family camp with your power? Coincidentally, my little junior sister, the daughter of my master, was one of the guests of the Chu Family, and you scared her.

After that, my master got really angry. Hence, I need to beat you guys up to appease him.

I have already explained a lot. Why don't you obediently let me beat you up now? Besides, I am also very lazy, and I definitely wouldn't use too much strength and energy when beating people up."

As he spoke, Liu Jianyi lifted his sleeve. "I won't use any magical treasures, just my fists!"

"..." The middle-aged Spiritual Emperor.

"..." The white-haired but healthy Spiritual Emperor.

This fellow was really arrogant and had no respect for others!

"There's no point in talking more, if you want to beat us up, then use your power instead!" said the middle-aged Spiritual Emperor in

a low voice.

The white-haired but healthy Spiritual Emperor also did not speak any further. He spoke with his actions instead, taking out a small flag.

Liu Jianyi was speechless.

I already explained so much, and yet, it was of no use? In that case, why did I waste my breath saying all that earlier?

Don't those two fellows know that speaking is also a waste of physical energy? Also, it is not only a waste of physical energy, but it is also a waste of saliva—every drop of saliva is part of the human body's precious water content.



Hence, battle was unavoidable.

Liu Jianyi vs. two Spiritual Emperors.

The middle-aged Spiritual Emperor took the initiative to attack, while the white-haired but healthy Spirit Emperor was in-charge of defense—both had clearly defined roles and displayed flawless cooperation.

Liu Jianyi adopted a defensive tactic. He stood on top of the flying sword, adopting appropriate measures to counter the attacks. His defense was tight, and he'd launch attacks every now and then.

In the blink of an eye, both sides had already executed more than 300 moves.

Both sides had a tacit understanding and decided to avoid using large-scale spells or techniques.

The two Spiritual Emperors did not want to cause any huge uproar, especially since they were in the midst of escaping.

On the other hand, Lu Jianyi, as a person who believed in energy-saving and would use the most energy-efficient way to deal with

things, avoiding large-scale spells and techniques that consumed a lot of energy..



Unknowingly, both sides had executed another 300+ moves.

The long barrage of attacks of the Spiritual Emperor brought no results. Liu Jianyi furrowed his brows slightly as well—if this dragged on, it might consume even more of his energy.

Hence, in the next moment, the situation had a sudden change.

"Butterfly-Phoenix Transformation!" Liu Jianyi shouted.

Thereafter, an illusion of a phoenix that was burning with flames appeared behind Liu Jianyi. Its wings were actually a pair of butterfly wings.

Following the appearance of the butterfly-winged phoenix, the light from the burning flames engulfed the entire space.

Within the space engulfed in the burning flames, the two Spiritual Emperors' senses were rendered useless, and their mental energy could not be extended beyond the scope of one meter. All their five senses and mental energy could feel was the aura and flames of the phoenix.

"Aaaaah." The two Spiritual Emperors issued waves of shrieks.

Thereafter, they lost their consciousness.



The illusion of the butterfly-winged phoenix vanished, leaving behind only charred smell in the air.

Liu Jianyi smacked his lips. "Bastards, making me consume two days' worth of calories... how long do I have to rest to recover that amount of energy?"

After sighing, Liu Jianyi approached the two charred Spiritual Emperors and used spiritual energy to support their falling bodies.

Taking down the two Spiritual Emperors went a lot more smoothly than expected—it was not because Liu Jianyi's power increased, but because the two Spiritual Emperors felt quite apprehensive during the battle lest they attract the group of seniors' attention and ended up using only 70% of their power.

And so, the sudden eruption of Liu Jianyi's power brought them down just like that.

After approaching them, Liu Jianyi brandished his fists and relentlessly punched and kicked the two Spiritual Emperors, causing them to be bruised and swollen.

"Despicable and also unreasonable, they forced me to waste so much energy," said Liu Jianyi. As he spoke, he increased the strength used to throw his punches and kicks.

He thoroughly beat them up into pig heads. Liu Jianyi nodded his head in satisfaction.

Then, he took out his mobile and the selfie stick, choosing the right angle.

He snapped more than ten pictures in a row. Liu Jianyi then published the pictures on the wall of his instant messaging app, feeling perfectly contented.

After he was done taking pictures, Liu Jianyi put away his phone and lay on his flying sword, preparing to fly back to the Grievance Settling Platform.

As for the two Spiritual Emperors... after losing the support of Liu Jianyi's spiritual energy, they fell down from the sky, creating two large pits at the small mountaintop below.

In the sky.

Venerable Spirit Butterfly pinched his chin. "So he had already mastered the Butterfly-Phoenix Transformation... not long ago, that fellow told me he was still in the midst of practicing the 'Butterfly-Eagle Transformation' and even said he needed one

more year to master the 'Butterfly-Phoenix Transformation'. In the end, he was planning to slack off for a year?"

It was bad, even his heart was starting to ache.

How blind was he that he'd taken Liu Jianyi in as his direct disciple?

The morning sun rose, and unknowingly, a new day had already begun.

From today onwards, he had to be stricter with Liu Jianyi.



The start of a new day.

Wenzhou City, Baijing Street.

After meditating for a few days, Song Shuhang's 21st-century good neighbor, 'Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist', came as a guest to Song Shuhang's residence and brought a lot of generous presents. At the same time, he wanted to find out when Song Shuhang was going to be back from his holiday.

After entering the house, Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist received Mama Song's warm welcome.

Thereafter, Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist heard a piece of heartbreaking news from Song Mama. "What? They lost contact with the plane Song Shuhang boarded?"

Mama Song thought that Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist was worried about Shuhang's safety. Hence she hurriedly explained, "Yeah, I was extremely worried during that period, but you don't have to panic. Luckily, they landed on an island belonging to a good-hearted rich person. No one died and they're all safe."

Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist deeply sighed. Thereafter, he asked in a gentle tone, "Then, how long will it take for Shuhang to come home?"

"I don't know for sure. But it seems that that rich person's private

ship has already set out for the island, so it should bring Shuhang and the rest back very soon." Mama Song laughed—ever since she found out that Song Shuhang was safe, she was in a very good mood.

"That's good, that's good." The 21st-century good neighbor 'Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist' smiled agonizingly.

Dammit, he only wanted to freeload the enlightenment stone and practice for a bit, why did things turn out like in a television series, having so many twists and turns?



Underground, 50 kilometers away from the Chu Family's residence.

There was a smelted underground cave here.

Within the smelted cave, there was a man-made pond of blood, surging with waves.

Suddenly, a figure with no arms emerged from the blood pond. It was the 'mister' from whom Venerable Butterfly had snatched one of the scrolls.

"Hehe, it looks like you're in dire straits." An elegant whitish figure appeared and ridiculed him.

Chapter 402: A Blood Demon Boss suddenly spawning in the countryside

The mister stood up inside the pond. The blood inside the pond flowed backward, entering his body. Soon after, he recovered all the blood he lost while in the Chu Family, restoring from his mummified state.

"Weren't you trying to break through to the Fifth Stage Realm? How come you have come here?" the mister asked, his tone loathsome.

While he was speaking, two figures that resembled the servants that were with him in the Chu Family came forth while holding arm-like objects in their hands as well as a few mechanical tools.

The mister didn't move and waited for the two servants to use the mechanical tools to assemble and disassemble the place where his arms were supposed to be. After a while, two lifelike arms had appeared on that mister's body.

The mister clenched his fists, trying to adapt to his new artificial arms.

The fluttering white figure waited for the mister's arms to recover and with a faint smile, said, "Hehe... my main body has already started to break through to the Fifth Stage Realm. However... a small problem arose while I was breaking through, and I now need a certain treasure that was snatched away by an interesting fellow daoist. Therefore, I have been thinking of a way to get the treasure back... or to simply find a replacement."

After saying this much, the figure came out of the shadow; it was precisely Limitless Demon Sect's Young Master Hai. His current body wasn't real but illusory. It was some sort of 3D projection. Behind the projection was standing another figure dressed-up as a servant that was holding a gem in its hand. It was the gem that

projected Young Master Hai's 3D picture.

"Tsk, tsk. Young Master Hai, who usually has everything under his control, actually made a mistake?" the mister sneered.

"There is no such thing as perfection." Young Master Hai laughed and didn't mind mister's provocations.

The mister coldly snorted and said, "Stop being mystifying."

"Hehe. Too bad you don't understand the delight of it," Young Master Hai said happily, casually sitting on the edge of the pond. "Anyway, I've come here to carry out a transaction."

"What do you want to trade?" the mister said. Although he hated Young Master Hai, business was still business.

"I want to use the 'Blood God's Evil Saber Formation' to carry out a transaction with you. After all, we're both 'blood cultivators' and belong to the same category. If you were to condense a life-bound Blood God Saber, it would surely come in handy while breaking through to the Fifth Stage Realm, right?" Young Master Hai said with a smile.

The mister was a bit surprised after hearing these words. Young Master Hai wanted to hand over the Blood God's Evil Saber Formation? Wasn't that formation the very reason he was now breaking through the Fifth Stage Realm?

As though he had realized mister's confusion, Young Master Hai faintly smiled and said, "Although the life-bound Blood God Saber was the base I relied on to break through, it was only a temporary base. Moreover, it's not even a technique of our Limitless Demon Sect... as long as the terms are good, why not trade it?"

"Fine. What do you want in exchange?" The mister was obviously interested.

"I was thinking about the 'Blood Sea Jade'. Although I'm reluctant to admit it, it's unlikely that I'll be able to retrieve the Blood God Crystal from the hands of that youngster. Hence, I need

something as a replacement," Young Master Hai said with a smile.

"The Blood Sea Jade, eh? Hehe... your appetite is really big." The mister coldly smiled.

"Yes, but the terms should be still acceptable." Young Master Hai shrugged his shoulders and continued, "The only reason I'm doing this is that I don't have enough time... otherwise, I would have used the Blood God's Evil Saber Formation again and obtained more Blood God Crystals, truly a pity. If anything, you're the one benefitting from it. You can trade a Blood Sea Jade for a life-bound Blood God Saber that can sharply increase your strength. Your luck is really good!"

"Hehe." The mister snorted and said, "You have a point there, and I have no reason to refuse this trade. Now then, how do you want to carry out the transaction?"

"As usual. You can use a puppet to deliver the Blood Sea Jade to one of the branches of the Limitless Demon Sect, and I'll hand over the Blood God's Evil Saber Formation in exchange." Young Master Hai's projection started to fade slowly.

It wasn't their first time carrying out a transaction. Hence, there was no need for too many useless details.

"Fine, got it." The mister waved his hand and hinted for Young Master Hai to leave.

"In that case, I shall take my leave." Young Master Hai projection became more and more pale. However, before disappearing, he asked out of curiosity, "I'm curious about something though... in whose hands did you suffer a loss this time? I remember that you prepared this matter regarding the Chu Family for quite some time. Although your ability to strategize is quite revolting, your ability to deceive others is outstanding. Given your skills, you should be able to trick everyone and make them run in circles."

"Sometimes, being too curious isn't good, Young Master Hai!"

The mister clenched his teeth.

"I'm even more curious now. Since there is some time left before I disappear, how about telling me what happened? Who knows, I might even be able to help you? My mood is quite good today," Young Master Hai said with a smile.

After a short pause, the mister snorted. Next, he stretched out his hand and pressed on his chest, revealing a light screen.

He had to admit that Young Master Hai was superior to him in certain fields.

On the screen were displayed the events that took place in the secret room of the Chu Family.

An armed to the teeth Soft Feather, a calm-looking Venerable Spirit Butterfly, 'Chu Chu', as well as 'mister' who had activated the Star Shifting Formation appeared on the screen,

On the screen, 'Chu Chu' extracted a one meter long saber and dashed toward the Star Shifting Formation with great momentum.

After seeing this scene, Young Master Hai's face stiffened a bit.

If he wasn't mistaken... that treasured saber was the most precious weapon of the Moon Saber Sect.

Its name was Broken Tyrant and the blade was around one meter long. It was forged from heavy metals within a thunder pond and was extremely durable. It was much harder than other weapons of the same rank. It could even cut the body of a cultivator of the Fourth Stage.

Originally, it was the weapon used by the master of the Moon Saber Sect, Ba Qianjun. In the end, it should have fallen into the hands of that youngster called 'Stressed by a Mountain of Books', right?

What an interesting development.

Is this matter also related to that 'Stressed by a Mountain of

Books'?

Just as he was in deep thoughts, Venerable Spirit Butterfly pierced the space around the Star Shifting Formation with his bare hands, forcefully snatching the scroll away from the mister.

After this last scene, the video ended.

The mister silently switched off the screen and looked at Young Master Hai, waiting for his analysis.

After a short pause, Young Master Hai said, "There were four scrolls in total. You used a technique of the 'Thousand Hands Sect' to hide the other three, right?"

The mister nodded. Aside from being someone who specialized in 'blood cultivation', he was very proficient in the stealing techniques of the Thousand Hands Sect too.

At first, the Thousand Hands Sect wasn't inferior to the Penniless Thief Sect and was another paradise for thief cultivators. But unlike the still prosperous Penniless Thief Sect, the Thousand Hands Sect started to slowly decline. Right now, their heritage was almost extinguished.

"I'll give you a sincere advice. Quickly do whatever you have to do with those scrolls. Whether you want to make a copy or examine them to discover the secret they conceal, do it as soon as possible. Once you're done, destroy them or throw them as far as possible. Cut off any relation you might have with these scrolls." Young Master Hai faintly smiled and said one last sentence before completely disappearing. "That's all I have to say."

After hearing these words, mister's expression immediately changed.

He quickly understood the meaning of Young Master Hai's words... the other party had probably done something to the scrolls, and that powerful cultivator was likely planning to follow

the scrolls to find him.

"F*ck," the mister secretly cursed.

After a short moment, his expression became firm. He grasped the newspaper and stared at its contents.

"You want to follow the trail to get to me? In your dreams! At first, I was planning to lead that thing over here and catch it together with those idiotic sea urchins, extracting the source blood both from them and the cultivators of the Illusory Sword School... but now, I'll have to lead it here in advance."

The newspaper was the 'Daily Cultivator'.

He was reading an article about the 'cosmic demon'.

The cosmic demon, also known as 'extraterrestrial demon' amongst cultivators, was a strange creature of unknown origins. These creatures were like meteors, and each year, a few of them would fall onto the Earth.

Some of them would burn to ashes as soon as they entered the atmosphere.

But some whose luck or strength was good enough would successfully descend onto the surface of the Earth.

Ordinary human beings couldn't see cosmic demons, and they too weren't particularly interested in ordinary human beings or animals.

What they were looking for were strong cultivators, monster beasts, ghost cultivators, aboriginal deities, and other similar beings with a high quantity of spiritual energy. After finding them, they would hunt and kill them in order to eat them and increase their strength.

After hearing this much, these creatures appeared rather fearsome, right?

But in truth... cosmic demons were something very good for

cultivators!

Each cosmic demon had several treasures on its body. These treasures didn't belong to 'this world', and there were of many different kinds.

After killing a cosmic demon, the gains would be pretty good.

Regarding cultivators, cosmic demons were like game bosses loaded with items casually spawning in the countryside. It was worth to group up and hunt them.

If one's luck was good, it was possible to receive things that would give lifelong benefits!

According to the article, the cosmic demon was of the 'blood demon' category this time. The Daily Cultivator estimated that the strength of this blood demon was at the Sixth Stage Realm if not above.

Cosmic demons had rather low intelligence, and even their brain was one of the muscles of their body. On the other hand, this allowed them to display a fighting capacity that was superior to their rank.

The Daily Cultivator suggested forming a group with two or more cultivators of the Sixth Stage as the leaders, as well as twenty or more other cultivators of the Fifth Stage to slay the blood demon.

"I have to make the blood demon descend next to the Chu Family and have it eat their cultivators to become even more powerful. Then, I can use it to stall that powerful cultivator the Chu Family invited. After that, I can try to look for an opportunity to get the last scroll from Chu Chu's hands," the mister muttered to himself.

He had a special formation that would lure in the blood demon once it was activated.

It was a very incredible formation.

Chapter 403: Strange phenomena appearing while discussing profound principles

By using this formation, he would be able to lure in the blood demon and make it change its trajectory. He was confident in making it land within a range of 5000 meters from the designated location.

Since you want to follow the clues and get to me, I'll quickly gather all the scrolls and destroy them after I'm done examining them! Then, I want to look which trail you're going to follow!

The mister closed his eyes while still holding the 'Daily Cultivator'. It was a special method to get in touch with his other puppets.

In the surroundings of the Chu Family.

Three figures identical to those 'servants' from before quietly converged together. They wore the same clothes as average people and had a lifeless look in their eyes. While they were walking, it felt as though their bodies were balloons full of water, faintly swaying.

Under that mister's long-distance control, the three servants found a remote place and started to engrave the formation onto the ground.

After drawing the formation, the three servants cut their throats and used their fresh blood to fill the grooves the formation was made of.

Very soon, the small formation activated. After getting into action, the formation started to emit a particular aura that would attract the blood demon over there...

Everything was ready now... he only had to wait for the blood

demon to appear!

Now that all preparations were complete, the mister slowly restored his calm and muttered to himself, "Finally, to prepare for all eventualities, I should prepare an escaping technique as well. A pro swindler must always have a few ways to retreat in case of emergency."



In the front of the Grievance Settling Platform, the seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group were currently exchanging their experiences.

Since they were all gathered here due to Venerable White's disposable flying swords, they took advantage of the opportunity and decided to chat a bit. After all, it was pretty rare for them to reunite like this!

Thereupon, the seniors sat in a circle and started to share their recent cultivation-related experiences.

It was the perfect time to ask about things they were confused about. With a Venerable like Senior White here, it was possible to receive answers to many of their questions.

Although it was possible to communicate while being thousands of miles away with the advent of the Internet, cultivation-related problems could only be perceived through senses and not through words.

If they were having difficulties understand the explanation, they could just have the other seniors directly demonstrate it, which was far better than words alone!

At this time, Venerable White was explaining in detail some difficult cultivation-related matters to his fellow daoists. He explained the profound in simple words and some like Northern River who were on the verge of breaking through felt enlightened and intrigued. Their understanding toward the process of breaking

through deepened quite a bit.



When Song Shuhang returned to the Grievance Settling Platform, he saw a shocking scene.

Spiritual energy was visible to the naked eye and had condensed on top of the heads of the seniors, changing into mystical clouds.

Some of the spiritual energy was scattering and turning into fog, moistening the myriad things of the universe.

Beneath the feet of the seniors, small and tender shoots of grass quickly grew up, turning into a lawn of green grass.

Moreover, the nearby flowers were blooming and dying at a very fast pace.

There were white lotuses as well that were continuously blooming around the seniors.

Afterward, Song Shuhang saw that the real Chu Chu and other disciples of the Chu Family had fallen into a lethargic sleep; they were currently soundly sleeping on a side.

What's happening?

When he got a bit closer, he heard several strange voices beside his ear. Those voices were holy and sacred, but they didn't belong to the seniors. These voices were unconsciously generated while the seniors were exchanging with the principles of the world.

At this time, the enlightenment stone on Song Shuhang's body slightly shook.

He felt a refreshing feeling shroud his mind. Although he couldn't understand what the voices were saying, after hearing them, he felt enlightened about some fields in which his cultivation was 'lacking'.

Song Shuhang greatly benefitted just from hearing the several seniors exchange their experiences. Luckily, he had the

enlightenment stone with him. Otherwise, he wouldn't have gained anything by hearing these voices generated from the resonance between heaven and earth.

"All the seniors are really incredible," Song Shuhang muttered to himself. Soon after, he tried to approach them.

But when he took five or six steps forward, he felt a huge pressure weight on him.

This pressure was incredible, and it was even stronger than the one Yu Jiaojiao faced while jumping through the dragon gate back then.

Song Shuhang almost tripped and fell to the ground!



When discussing profound principles, powerful cultivators would give birth to strange phenomena.

Weaker cultivators were unable to approach them, and if they tried to forcefully get closer, they would have to face a huge pressure. And if one's realm wasn't high enough, their will to further cultivate might be affected as they heard the exchange.

That was the reason the seniors of the group put the surrounding disciples of the Chu Family to sleep; it was to avoid affecting them.

But Song Shuhang had just become a cultivator, how could he possibly know about these things?

Luckily, Senior White stopped his explanation after noticing that someone approached them. After turning his head around and seeing that it was Song Shuhang, he faintly smiled and waved at him.

Song Shuhang immediately felt his body become lighter, and all the pressure from before disappeared!

After heaving a sigh of relief, he trotted toward Venerable White and sat next to him.

The seniors of the group faintly smiled, and after glancing at Song Shuhang, they returned to their discussion.

The things they were discussing were too profound for the current Song Shuhang to understand. As he tried to listen, Shuhang felt as though he was looking at the truth through a layer of mist. After hearing for a while, his brain felt dizzy, as though it was about to explode. He had no choice but to stop listening.

After pondering for a moment, he took out the enlightenment stone and sat still next to Venerable White... after he took out the stone, it was much more effective than just being in his pocket.

Since all the people around were seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group, Song Shuhang was bold enough to take out the enlightenment stone.

While surrounded by the discussing seniors, the enlightenment stone resonated with the principles of heaven and earth and gave rise to a strange 'enlightening' effect, pouring all the knowledge into Song Shuhang's mind. Just as Song Shuhang was lost in thoughts, a miraculous glow flashed through his mind.

Likewise, the nearby seniors also felt their comprehension abilities becoming stronger. Their minds were brimming with countless ideas. All kinds of different inspirations surged forth like an endless stream, and their conversation became much more smoother.

"Strange, my state of mind seems particularly good today..." Thrice Reckless Mad Saber suddenly said.

It wasn't only Thrice Reckless, the other seniors also felt the same.

After seeing the confusion of his fellow daoists, Venerable White faintly smiled and pointed at Song Shuhang who was currently lost in thoughts.

After looking at Song Shuhang, they saw that he was holding an

unremarkable stone in his hands with a tender green onion growing on it.

This stone looked very ordinary! Did it have some special origin?

Northern River's Loose Cultivator furrowed his brows and tried to guess. "Is that the enlightenment stone?"

"Correct." Venerable White smiled and nodded.

True Monarch Ancient Lake Temple said, "The enlightenment stone? No wonder I felt that my state of mind was so good today. Eh? Wait a moment... is this enlightenment stone little friend Shuhang's?"

Venerable White nodded again.

"..." True Monarch Yellow Mountain.

"..." Northern River's Loose Cultivator.

"..." Thrice Reckless Mad Saber.

"..." All the other seniors.

Earlier, when they were discussing what they should gift to Song Shuhang, they felt that he was loaded as f*ck for a cultivator of the First Stage. They didn't expect that he had something like the 'enlightenment stone' too.

In the world of cultivators, something like the enlightenment stone was akin to a portable cheating device!

Although its effects would become weaker and weaker as the cultivator became stronger, in cases like today's where many seniors were reunited and discussing profound matters, even if it added a tiny bit of 'enlightenment', it was enough to let everyone greatly benefit from it.

Sometimes, one needed only a small enlightenment during these profound discussions to break through the bottleneck holding them back.

"Little friend Shuhang's luck is really good," True Monarch Yellow Mountain said after a while.

Perhaps Senior White's luck had changed from heaven-defying to heaven-destroying after he advanced to the Seventh Stage Venerable Realm?

The difference between the two was that one simply went against the will of the heavens, while the other treated the heavens like its personal plaything.

After knowing that little friend Song Shuhang had the enlightenment stone... his house was bound to have many guests.

If the fellow daoists in the group needed the effects of the stone, they could visit his place for a while. And if Song Shuhang was willing, he could 'rent out' the stone at small intervals of time, making a steady profit out of it.

"Wealth is bound to invoke jealousy. It's fine if the fellow daoists inside the group know about it, but this matter about the enlightenment stone mustn't spread outside the group," Northern River's Loose Cultivator reminded. Since he was a loose cultivator, he knew that although one could greatly benefit from treasures, they could also bring a disaster upon the owner.

The fellow daoists of the group were trustable people, but if the news were to spread out, it might reach the ears of someone with ill intentions.

"That's natural. All those present are seasoned people and know about that," Thrice Reckless Mad Saber said.

It sure was lucky that the Nine Provinces Number One Group was such a special group of cultivators.

"It wasn't only a reminder to you guys, it was a reminder to little friend Song Shuhang as well," Northern River's Loose Cultivator said to Song Shuhang. "The enlightenment stone is a very precious item, and its value surpasses your imagination. Therefore, don't

show it in front of others as to avoid someone with evil intentions targeting you."

"Thank you for the reminder, Senior Northern River. I'm well aware of it," Song Shuhang said earnestly. He took out the stone only because all those present were cultivators of the Nine Provinces Number One Group and the disciples of the Chu Family were in a deep slumber.

After all, even Lady Onion tried to snatch away his enlightenment stone back then. If her strength hadn't been so low, Song Shuhang might have lost the stone already. Shuhang had been very meticulous about this matter since that time.

But when he spoke, Shuhang used Chu Chu's sweet voice.

The seniors looked at Song Shuhang one after another with gazes full of compassion.

"It's good if you know," Northern River's Loose Cultivator said.

After that, since they now had the strengthening effect of the enlightenment stone, the seniors of the group kept discussing for quite some time.

After taking care of all the doubts that were gripping their hearts, they concluded their discussion. All of them seemed extremely satisfied.

"At this time, it would be wonderful if there was some good tea available," True Monarch Ancient Lake Temple said.

"It would be even more wonderful if a good cannon fodder were to come here so that I could practice my saber skills on it! I have so many inspirations right now; my saber is itching to get into action!" Thrice Reckless Mad Saber said.

Chapter 404: The seniors of the group using misdirection

"Practicing your saber skills? Your words reminded me of something." Northern River's Loose Cultivator took out a copy of the 'Daily Cultivator' from his robe and pointed at one of the articles. "According to this article of the Daily Cultivator, a blood demon is about to descend onto the Earth. The place where it's going to descend just happens to be the northwest of China, which is approximately our current location. Given the time, it should be about to land. If our luck is good, it might even fall somewhere close..."

Thrice Reckless Mad Saber's eyes suddenly lit up. "A blood demon? What is its rank? If it's only of the Third Stage, it wouldn't be able to take even one of my attacks."

His Seventy-Two Swift Saber Strikes were incredibly powerful. Except for Su Clan's Seven, he wasn't afraid of any fellow daoist in the group that was still in the Fifth Stage Realm. If the cosmic demon was of the Third or Fourth Stage, he could defeat it with one blow.

"It should be strong enough to satisfy your needs. According to the predictions, it should have a strength comparable to the Sixth Stage Realm. Given the special constitution of cosmic demons, even if it's only in the early period of the Sixth Stage, it should be able to burst forth with a strength comparable to cultivators at the peak of the Sixth Stage Realm. Too bad that its intelligence quotient is too low and it can't properly use its strength. It should be perfectly suited to your needs, a very good cannon fodder." Northern River's Loose Cultivator lifted the Daily Cultivator and smiled.

After hearing this much, Thrice Reckless Mad Saber's eyes lit up. "It would be great if this blood demon could land close to our

position!"

It was difficult to find better cannon fodder than the blood demon if one wanted to try their skills.

Although its rank of the Sixth Stage was a bit high, it wasn't that much of a problem. After all, there were several fellow daoists from the Nine Provinces Number One Group reunited here. Venerable White alone was at the Seventh Stage Realm, and there were several other cultivators of the Sixth Stage True Monarch Realm.

If the blood demon were to descend close to their position, they could happily hunt and kill it!

"Ahahaha. Such being the case, Fellow Daoist Thrice Reckless might as well pray for the blood demon to descend next to us." Cave Lord Snow Wolf teased him.

Then, Thrice Reckless Mad Saber had a sudden epiphany.

Then, under the dumbfounded gazes of the other members of the Nine Provinces Number One Group, he took a small incense burner and lit some incense. Next, he turned toward Venerable White and made a wish with a solemn expression on his face.

"..." Venerable White.

It seemed that the other members of the group weren't mistaken about Thrice Reckless Mad Saber. In regards to death seeking matters, Thrice Reckless was like a goldfish. He had a memory of three seconds and would soon forget previous bad experiences.



Far-off in the sky, an adorable cosmic demon was currently descending from the sky.

This cosmic demon belonged to the blood demon subcategory, which was a powerful species amongst cosmic demons. Its body was made of blood, and this alone made it immune to physical

attacks. Its self-recovery ability was also top-notch.

Moreover, as long as the enemies were injured and bleeding, the blood demon's blood-sucking ability would automatically activate, starting to absorb the blood of the nearby enemies. With that, it would both recover from its injury and strengthen itself.

It was precisely for this blood-sucking aura that the blood demon was somewhat difficult to deal amongst cosmic demons.

Cosmic demons had a relatively low intelligence quotient, and their brains couldn't really process thoughts. Their intelligence was even lower than that of wild beasts.

And even among them, the blood demon subcategory excelled at being stupid... perhaps it was because even their brain was made of blood fluid instead of cerebrospinal fluid?

The blood demon had no concepts such as 'where I come from or where I'm going now'. As soon as it appeared, it would search for a place to land. After landing, it would start searching for food to eat its fill. After eating its fill, it would evolve and keep repeating the above-mentioned actions until someone came and killed it.

This blood demon had a humanoid shape, and its height was fifteen meters. It looked like a person made of red-colored mercury. The blood composing its body had a certain sense of reality and moved and rippled from time to time.

At this time, it was curled up into a ball and was descending from the sky.

While falling, it smelt a very nice scent.

This scent really piqued its interest.

Therefore, the blood demon instinctively adjusted its trajectory and headed toward the place this nice smell was coming from!



Time slowly passed by.

The sharp-eyed Cave Lord Snow Wolf saw a red dot high-up in the sky that was slowly descending. "Eh? Is that the blood demon?"

F*ck, is the blood demon really falling to this place?

Is wishing something in front of Senior White so effective? Such being the case, should I also wish for something? I hope Senior White will give me his blessings so that I can advance to the Sixth Stage next year!

Just kidding. Something like advancing to the next realm must be done step by step!

"Ahahaha, the blood demon really descended here!" Thrice Reckless Mad Saber lightly grasped the saber hanging at his waist. In the next moment, he completely restrained his aura, just like a sharp blade that was sheathed.

He was building up strength. After all, a blade was sharpest when just unsheathed!

True Monarch Ancient Lake Temple squinted his eyes and looked at the red dot, saying, "It's indeed the blood demon. It has a humanoid-form, and its fifteen meters tall. Its strength is at the Sixth Stage... and it's getting closer and closer. From the looks of it, it's going to land somewhere close! Thrice Reckless, use your taunt move!"

"..." Thrice Reckless Mad Saber.

Taunt? The hell is that? I don't have such a move!

"Senior Yellow Mountain, can you aggro the blood demon and bring it over here so that we can beat it to a pulp?" Fairy Dongfang stepped into the void, and her long-sleeved dress fluttered in the wind. She was a bit tired of doing nothing. Thrice Reckless wasn't the only one that had benefited from the exchange earlier; all the fellow daoists benefited a lot and were itching to get some action.

True Monarch Yellow Mountain nodded and said, "Sure. You guys get ready. I'll aggro the monster!"

Soon after, True Monarch Yellow Mountain soared into the sky and dashed toward the blood demon.



At the same time, in the northwest area of China, more than forty cultivators were flying all over the place.

The majority of these cultivators were of the Third or Fourth Stage, and some even at the Second Stage. There were plenty of loose cultivators and experienced disciples from sects, as well as elders of medium-sized sects.

Most of these cultivators were here to have fun or pick the leftovers after the battle. After killing the cosmic demon, the winners would take away the valuable treasures or parts of its body, leaving behind the things that were of no use to them.

The leftovers of the cosmic demon's body weren't of any use to powerful cultivators, but they were incomparably precious treasures for small loose cultivators.

Moreover, it was a blood demon of the Sixth Stage this time. Even if they were to pick up a random part of its body, the average cultivator would profit from it.

As for personally killing the blood demon... they could only dream of it. This blood demon had a strength comparable to that of the Sixth Stage, and unless those cultivators of the Third or Fourth Stage had particular cultivation techniques, they wouldn't be able to defeat it even if it stood still!

"Now then, the blood demon should be about to land, right? How come there isn't a group led by True Monarchs to catch it?" a loose cultivator asked in puzzlement.

"This time, it was supposed to descend in a rather remote area. Moreover, there was only one day to prepare. Is it possible that the powerhouses of the True Monarch rank are not here yet...?" another loose cultivator said somewhat worried.

True Monarchs would sometimes close up for hundreds of years... what would they do if the blood demon of the Sixth Stage were to descend next to them and there were no powerhouses of the True Monarch level nearby to fight it? Wouldn't all the cultivators that were here to watch the show and pick the leftovers die a horrible death?

"Don't worry. Each time a cosmic demon descends, big sects would send some of their people to deal with it. So, there shouldn't be problems..." Someone tried to lighten the mood. Now then, what if these people were actually late...?

Just as they were in deep thoughts, some of the sharp-eyed cultivators saw a red dot in the sky.

"It's here! That red dot is the blood demon, I'm not mistaken!"

"Where is it going to descend?"

"Should we really go check it out if there isn't a senior cultivator of the True Monarch rank around?"

The group of cultivators was a bit hesitant. If there wasn't a True Monarch around... they would be in danger, right?

But amongst these cultivators, there were some strange wobbling forms with weird smiles on their faces.

They were precisely the 'servants' of that mister!

"What a bunch of idiots... the place where the blood demon is going to descend has changed. These guys will become the meal of the blood demon before the True Monarchs are here, becoming the energy it needs to evolve!" The mister looked at the scene through his puppets and laughed in his heart.

It's about to land. This blood demon will turn into a natural calamity and shake the world!

The puppet stretched its hand toward the sky, assuming a very awe-inspiring pose!

But right at this time, a big net suddenly appeared in the sky and caught the blood demon.

The blood demon didn't even have the time to dodge when it was firmly wrapped in the net.

Next, the net started to shrink, and the blood demon crazily fought back.

But the more it was struggling, the more it was getting entangled in the net.

Soon after, the blood demon, who was originally descending with a curved trajectory, was pulled by the big net to a certain place. Its new trajectory resembled that of a stock graph.

The mister who was watching the scene through his servants was speechless.

Did the Daily Cultivator mistakenly report the rank of this blood demon? For some reason, it didn't seem really that strong... it was casually pulled down with a net as though it was some sort of big fish...

Whatever, let's just go there and see!



True Monarch Yellow Mountain was worthily the founder of the Nine Provinces Number One Group. After catching the blood demon with the net, he used his physical strength alone to pull it down.

Cosmic demons were literally muscle heads, and their forte was precisely their great physical strength. But now, this blood demon turned out to be inferior to True Monarch Yellow Mountain even in that field.

"Come down!" After arriving at a good location, True Monarch Yellow Mountain stretched out his hands and opened the big net, throwing the blood demon to the ground.

"Boom!"

The blood demon crashed to the ground, and clouds of dust rose toward the sky.

"Roar, roar, roar..." The blood demon crawled out from the hole in the ground, roaring like a wild animal. It was thoroughly enraged!

True Monarch Yellow Mountain didn't descend to the ground but continued to hover in the sky.

True Monarch Ancient Lake Temple faintly smiled. Just as True Monarch Yellow Mountain was aggroing the monster, he walked around the area where the Grievance Settling Platform was held and arranged a huge formation. It was both to prevent the blood demon from escaping and to stop the attacks of his fellow daoists from destroying the surrounding area.

"Snow Wolf, use your freezing spells! I'm going in!" the already ready Thrice Reckless bellowed and soared into the sky. "Big fellow, get a taste of my saber!"

Chapter 405: Ostracized by his fellow daoists?

Since the blood demon possessed the strength of a Sixth Stage and was a tank with a lot of HP, Thrice Reckless Mad Saber attacked without reservations. If he was going to strike, he would use all his strength!

The saber was unsheathed!

Saber light flashed, and within an area of fifty meters, even the sunlight was overshadowed! Within that area, nothing except for the saber light unleashed by Thrice Reckless Mad Saber was visible!

The saber light was extremely quick!

Thrice Reckless' saber technique was incomparably fast, and its speed had long exceeded that of the 'Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor' rank.

A blood demon of the Sixth Stage was unexpectedly unable to react to Thrice Reckless' saber! The blood demon didn't even have the time to defend itself!

The saber light hit right on the head of the blood demon, leaving behind a deep gash that went from its forehead to its chest. The cut was very deep, and it almost cleaved the blood demon in half!

This blood demon had the strength of the Sixth Stage, and if we considered the toughness of its body alone, it could be compared to a mid-level Sixth Stage cultivator.

In other words... if Thrice Reckless were to make a surprise attack against a cultivator of the Sixth Stage, he would be able to leave a deep wound on them if the attack landed! His fighting capacity had already surpassed his rank!

"Roar~" the blood demon crazily roared due to the pain. It

clenched its fists and attacked the baboon-shaped Thrice Reckless in front of him.

At the same time, blood tendrils appeared around the wounded area and started to slowly drive out the saber qi permeating the wound in order to heal it. Although such an injury could kill other living beings, it wasn't any different than an ordinary external injury for a blood demon.

"Holy shiet! I just wasted my strength with the attack earlier, and even my hands feel numb," Thrice Reckless shouted after landing on the ground. He wasn't afraid of the incoming attack of the blood demon.

At this time, Cave Lord Snow Wolf shouted from the rear, "Icy Cold Tornado!"

He was currently holding two wolf-claw-shaped scepters in his hands. After shouting, Cave Lord Snow Wolf displayed an ice-type technique.

Even if it was summer, the temperature sharply dropped within an area of hundred meters, and a layer of ice quickly appeared on the surface of the earth. In the air, the cold qi condensed and turned into ice crystals, finally transforming into balls that floated in front of Cave Lord Snow Wolf.

Afterward, Snow Wolf stretched out his hand and pushed forward the ice crystals in front of him!

In the next moment, the icy balls turned into a twenty-meter-tall tornado that rushed toward the blood demon.

However... the speed of the icy tornado wasn't very fast.

Given its speed, it would be only halfway before the attack of the blood demon reached Thrice Reckless. The blood demon would have enough time to punch Thrice Reckless several times before the tornado affected it.



Then, just as the fist of the blood demon was about to land on Thrice Reckless Mad Saber's body, a stout figure suddenly appeared next to him.

It was another member of the Nine Provinces Number One Group, Dharma King Creation.

Song Shuhang had no idea when Dharma King Creation moved and appeared next to Thrice Reckless. It almost felt as though he was always there.

"Ahaha, let me test the strength of this blood demon." Dharma King Creation laughed and criss-crossed his hands, assuming a defensive stance to block the incoming fist of the blood demon.

"Boom!"

The fist of the blood demon ruthlessly smashed against Dharma King Creation's arms, and the terrifying impact created a huge shock wave.

Dharma King Creation almost looked like a nail; half of his body was hammered into the ground after the attack!

"Ouch, this is really something. What an incredible power." Dharma King Creation laughed; blue marks had appeared on his arm.

"Can you hold on? If you can't, you should transform!" Thrice Reckless Mad Saber sheathed his saber again in order to build up his strength once more.

"Roar, roar, roar~" The blood demon got even angrier after seeing that its fist was unable to crush to death those two ants. It joined its fist together and tried to hammer Dharma King Creation once more.

"Ouch, a joint attack with two fists! It seems I have no choice but to transform, I won't be able to resist otherwise." Dharma King Creation forced a smile and loudly shouted afterward.

The spiritual energy around his body started to churn, changing into an explosion of golden light that spread in all directions. Next, Dharma King Creation's hair was lifted by the spiritual power, shooting high up in the sky!

This scene was enough to make one's blood boil with excitement!

After seeing this scene, Song Shuhang immediately thought of something. Is he going to transform into a Super Saiyan?

"Boom, boom, boom~"

Dust rose toward the sky and the earth split.

The muscles on Dharma King Creation's body bulged, and his size increased of three times. In the next moment, even the clothes he was wearing exploded. Except for his indestructible leather pants, nothing was left. After the clothes were gone, his huge muscles were finally visible.

Even his clothes exploded!

Next, a golden radiance started to spread from his feet. Then, just like those fictional characters doing cool transformations, Dharma King Creation got shrouded in a golden metal-like luster.

The golden light kept rising until it reached Dharma King Creation's head!

Will his hair also turn golden? Is he really going to transform into a Super Saiyan? Song Shuhang closely observed Dharma King Creation; he was extremely excited at this time.

Although Super Saiyans were a bit old, they were still very cool!

"Boom, boom, boom!"

Finally, the golden light reached Dharma King Creation's scalp.

Next, his pitch-black shining hair shot up into the sky... flew very high... and finally fell to the ground...

...Scattering in all directions.

What was left behind was shining big bald head!

"Pfff~" Song Shuhang immediately coughed up a mouthful of blood.

Wasn't he supposed to transform into a Super Saiyan? How come he became bald?

"That's why I hate using the <Warring Buddha's True Body>... I lose both clothes and hair after each use!" Dharma King Creation touched his bald head, his expression aggrieved.

"Boom!"

Right at this time, the joint fist attack of the blood demon brutally pounded on his head.

This time, Dharma King Creation didn't assume a defensive stance and stood still, letting the blood demon hammer his head with its fists.

The huge fists clashed against Dharma King Creation's smooth golden head.

"Dong~" A loud metallic sound echoed.

Soon after, another shock wave followed... it was much stronger than the one created by the fist earlier.

After the attack...

Dharma King Creation merely tilted his head after the blood demon attacked it; the sound of muscles and bones moving transmitted from his neck area.

"Not bad. This fist was also very powerful. This strike really warmed up my body!" Dharma King Creation clicked his tongue in admiration.

"So strong!" Song Shuhang said. The powerful fist of the blood demon was only able to tilt Dharma King Creation's head a little after a frontal clash? Was this senior really in the Fifth Stage Realm?

The nearby True Monarch Fallout faintly smiled and explained to Song Shuhang, "No need to be surprised. Attacks of this level can only serve as a warm-up for Fellow Daoist Creation. What Fellow Daoist Creation practices is the ⟨Warring Buddha's True Body⟩ of the 'Warring Buddha Sect'. Amongst body tempering cultivation techniques, it's ranked in the first ten in the whole world of cultivators. This technique is extremely difficult to practice, and given Fellow Daoist Creation's talent, he would have already reached the Sixth Stage Realm like me if he were practicing another technique. Although his strength is still in the Fifth Stage Realm, the toughness of his body is comparable to the Sixth Stage rank once the ⟨Warring Buddha's True Body⟩ is active. Actually, it might even be stronger than that of ordinary True Monarchs!"

In other words, it was another senior that possessed a fighting capacity higher than his rank!



Just as they were speaking, Cave Lord Snow Wolf's 'Icy Cold Tornado' finally hit the body of the blood demon. Although the name of this magical technique seemed rather ordinary, its effects were anything but ordinary.

The cold wind swept the blood demon, and beautiful icy flowers made of cold qi bloomed on its body.

The beautiful icy flowers were like real plants. The cold qi changed into rhizomes that took root on the body of the blood demon. Its body wasn't only damaged by the cold, but also by the flowers that took root on it, continuously sucking out its energy and using it to bloom and become even more luxuriant.

If the enemy were a creature with intellect, they would have removed these flowers as soon as possible.

But the intelligence quotient of the blood demon was too low. It let the flowers take root and bloom on its body, not caring in the least.

Under the effects of the tornado, the speed of the blood demon decreased by 30%—the scene looked like a movie in slow-motion.

"What an incredible ice-type technique." Song Shuhang sighed with emotion once more. Cave Lord Snow Wolf was the highest authority in regards to ice techniques in the Nine Provinces Number One Group.

This ordinary-looking 'Icy Cold Tornado' had been personally modified to perfection by Cave Lord Snow Wolf.

"Fellow Daoist Snow Wolf is very talented with the ice element." True Monarch Fallout nodded and smiled. "Moreover, ice-type techniques can be used to attack, defend, and support. It's a very versatile element. In battle amongst cultivators, it's very important to use flexible techniques. Sometimes, even a small technique can change the course of the entire battle. Now then, little friend Song Shuhang is already a cultivator of the Second Stage. When you have free time, you should check your affinity. Your affinity with the elements is very important and will determine which techniques you'll be able to practice in the future."

Song Shuhang nodded his head slightly... he had already advanced to the Second Stage Realm, so he could start learning a couple of useful spells.

There are many things I would like to study. Later, I must show up in the Nine Provinces Number One Group a lot and get familiar with everyone. Now that I'm at the Second Stage, I can already start taking on the missions prepared by the seniors.



"Ahahaha! Fellow Daoist Snow Wolf, well done! Now, I'll take care of the frontal attacks of this blood demon. You guys can go ahead and use your skills. If you have any new skill or move you want to test, now is the time!" Dharma King Creation heartily laughed.

He bumped his metal-like fists against each other, sending out a metallic sound, and dashed toward the blood demon.

The other members of the Nine Provinces Number One Group also laughed and prepared to get into action and display all the things they comprehended earlier.

The glint of sabers and swords flashed, and all sorts of dazzling techniques were displayed.

Right at this time, a figure standing next to Shuhang bravely stepped forward. He blew some air on his fist and likewise prepared to get into action.

In the sky, the sharp-eyed Thrice Reckless immediately spotted the figure and shouted, "Senior White, wait a moment! You can't make your move! Otherwise, none of us would be able to have fun anymore!"

Venerable White stiffly raised his fist.

Did his fellow daoists ostracize him?

Chapter 406: Gathering the scrolls to summon the '1S edition'

As soon as Thrice Reckless said those words, Venerable White was stunned and blankly stared at his fist. Afterward, he silently took his hand back. What Thrice Reckless said wasn't wrong. Although this blood demon was a tank with a lot of HP, it would surely die if Senior White were to punch it.

Thereupon, Venerable White silently returned next to Song Shuhang, his expression disappointed.

Since he couldn't join in the fun and beat the blood demon, he got bored and brought the guided missile over to his position, starting to fiddle with it again.

This time, no one tried to prevent Venerable White from researching the missile. The fellow daoists that were supposed to stop him from researching this dangerous thing were currently happily playing with the blood demon...

The remaining ones were either interested in seeing Venerable White study the missile or were like True Monarch White Crane, who would raise its feet, hands, and wings and approve of whatever Senior White was doing. Even if Venerable White decided to destroy the moon, White Crane would prepare a spaceship to deliver Senior White there and help him destroy the moon.

Thus, no one prevented Venerable White from tearing apart the missile this time.



Inside the formation arranged by True Monarch Ancient Lake Temple, each fellow daoist of the Fifth Stage ganged up on the blood demon, even Doudou and Yu Jiaojiao inserted a claw or two.

This blood demon was so pitiful that one could only lit a candle

for it.

Although cultivators treated cosmic demons as bosses spawning in the countryside, this blood demon had been particularly unlucky. It had yet to land when it was caught and beaten up by a group of True Monarchs and Spiritual Emperors.

The blood demon angrily roared again and again. But it was the only thing it could do.

It didn't matter from which angle or position it attacked, the shining Dharma King Creation would appear in its front and promptly block all its attacks.

The fellow daoists of the group happily tested all the new things and attacks they learned earlier on the body of the blood demon.

On a side, Yellow Mountain, Fallout, Ancient Lake Temple, and the low-profile 'When the bright moon appears' were giving their fellow daoists pointers on the new skills and moves they learned.

"Fairy Dongfang's move wasn't bad. Once it's perfected, it might turn into a powerful killing technique. If she were to increase the quantity of true qi used by 10%, she should be able to break through the critical point, increasing the strength of the move even further!"

"Fellow Daoist Creation's ⟨Warring Buddha's True Body⟩ has reached a completely new level! Since it's already this strong, would it reach a strength comparable to the Seventh Stage Realm once he breaks through the Sixth Stage Realm?"

"Thrice Reckless, you goddamn baboon... you used a slash earlier and got tired? Don't you have the word 'thrice' in your name? Shouldn't you attack at least three times before stopping?"

"..." Thrice Reckless Mad Saber.

The scene was very lively overall.

Venerable White silently looked at his fellow daoists having fun

and continued fiddling with the missile.



Soon after, Song Shuhang approached Venerable White and said, "Senior White, you forgot to change my voice back."

Song Shuhang felt that Venerable White was a bit depressed. Therefore, he thought of diverting his attention.

"It's not a problem. It will return to normal once the effect of the medicine wears off," Venerable White said without lifting his head.

It will return to normal once the effect of the medicine wears off? That's good.

Song Shuhang heaved a sigh of relief and added, "Senior White, there is another matter. Earlier, when Soft Feather and I barged into the Chu Family, we discovered a few 'sea urchin warriors' lying in ambush in there. Then, we even met a strange guy in the secret room. Luckily, Soft Feather's father, Venerable Spirit Butterfly, was on the scene and was able to snatch one of the scrolls from that guy."

After explaining to Venerable White what happened in the Chu Family, Song Shuhang took out the scroll of the 'sword technique', hoping to pique Senior White's interest. After all, he was an ordinary university student not too long ago, and he felt rather scared seeing Senior White silently fiddle with a missile.

"Oh? Is that the 'sword technique' of the Chu Family? Let me see." Venerable White's interest was finally piqued. He threw the half-disassembled missile on a side and took the scroll from Song Shuhang's hands, starting to examine it.

"Senior White, can you see anything interesting in there?" Song Shuhang asked.

In the dreamland, Chu Chu was able to derive her own personal sword technique from those four pictures. Perhaps because he didn't have the talent to infer things just from looking at pictures,

Song Shuhang wasn't able to realize anything even after looking at the pictures for a while. Even now that he had retrieved one of the scrolls, he couldn't see anything interesting on it aside from Li Tiansu's cool pose.

Venerable White examined the canvas, and after pondering for a moment, he said, "It's an ingenious trick. I cannot make out the content with only one scroll. Each picture should be hiding a formation, and once all four are reunited, the formation should activate and the true content become visible."

Does that mean it wasn't due to my comprehension skills being too low? Song Shuhang thought to himself.

"Shuhang, you just said that the other three scrolls were taken away by the strange guy, right? Therefore, as long as this scroll is in 'Chu Chu's' hands, he should try to find a way to snatch it, correct?" Venerable White said after pinching his chin.

Song Shuhang replied, "From the expression he had when he left, he seemed rather unwilling to let go of this last scroll. Actually, it doesn't matter if he plans to come back or not. After all, Venerable Spirit Butterfly seemed very interested in that Star Shifting Formation. He should pay him a visit in the next couple of days."

"Fellow Daoist Spirit Butterfly entered the fray? Ahaha, interesting. In that case... let me join in as well. I'll spice up things a little." Venerable White faintly smiled and stretched out his finger, engraving a series of runes on the back of the scroll with his spiritual energy.

Finally, the runes assumed the shape of a 'flying sword'.

Song Shuhang looked at the familiar 'flying sword' and asked, "Senior White, where have I seen these runes before?"

"This is the new 'disposable Song Shuhang 1S edition'. Compared to the previous '001 edition', it has a few extra features. At first, I was thinking of engraving the 'disposable meteor sword 001

edition'. But the runes of that version are a bit complicated, and I feared they might affect the scroll itself," Venerable White explained.

After hearing the names of all those disposable flying swords, Song Shuhang's heart twitched... the 'disposable Song Shuhang edition' also got an upgrade?

True Monarch Fallout and the nearby fellow daoists had to forcefully suppress their laughter after hearing these names.

Afterward, they all looked at Song Shuhang with gazes full of compassion. Little friend Song Shuhang really had it hard.

"Shuhang, even if we keep the scroll, there is not much use to it. After Chu Chu wakes up, give it to her so that she can bring it back to the Chu Family. If that strange guy seizes the chance to steal it, the disposable Song Shuhang 1S will activate once all four scrolls are reunited, bringing that guy directly in front of me," Venerable White said.

Would that guy 'pew~' his way to Senior White?

Ah! For some reason, it sounds very cool.

Just think about it! The strange guy finally managed to reunite the four scrolls and was getting ready to summon Shenlong... ugh, wait. He was getting ready to thoroughly study them to uncover their mystery when the 'disposable Song Shuhang 1S edition' activated, bringing both him and the scrolls high up in the sky. Then, after breaching all the obstacles blocking his path like someone that was trying to jump through the dragon gate, he would fly and fly until arriving in front of Venerable White!

It would be a truly magnificent scene!

Except for the name 'disposable Song Shuhang 1S edition', everything else was absolutely perfect.

"Sure. Once Miss Chu Chu wakes up, I'll give her the scroll so that she can bring it back!" Song Shuhang held his thumb up in

approval.

Next, he thought of another matter and said, "Senior White, I also met a few 'sea urchin warriors' on my way back. It seemed they wanted to massacre the cultivators of the Illusory Sword School and collect 'true blood'..."

"They wanted to collect 'true blood'?" Venerable White slightly furrowed his brows and said, "Do they want to use it to untie a seal or bring something back to life? Sea urchin warriors, huh... where have I heard this name? After the members of the group are done playing with the blood demon, ask them if they know something about this matter. As for the Illusory Sword School... they are still a school of human cultivators. After the blood demon is taken care of, we'll take a look at their situation."

"Fine." Song Shuhang nodded and looked at the seniors of the group.

The poor blood demon was continuously roaring, but its voice was much weaker than before. Its original size of the fifteen meters was also reduced to ten meters.

Moreover, all the powerhouses of the Sixth Stage True Monarch rank had yet to take action!

"That cosmic demon is rather pitiful," Song Shuhang muttered.



On a side... Venerable White squatted down and started to fiddle with the missile once more.

Very soon, the guided missile was disassembled into many parts.

"So that's how it is. The principle behind it is rather interesting." Venerable White held his chin and examined the missile for a while. Then, he started to reassemble it.

The assembling process was much faster than the disassembling one.

In the time it takes to breathe a few times, Venerable White had already reassembled the missile. "Done. I've learned many new things from it!"

Venerable White seemed very satisfied.

"Senior White, wait a moment. What about those several box-like things next to your foot? Or those big screws? And that pipe as well... what about them?" The sharp-eyed Song Shuhang immediately saw those objects lying next to Venerable White's foot.

Chapter 407: A beautiful saber attack

"Oh, those! Those things were superfluous. I can't put them back into the missile now, and it's also possible that they were ruined during the disassembling process... but you don't have to worry! I used a simple formation to replace their functions. There won't be any problem!" Venerable White said self-satisfied while patting the newly assembled missile. Then, he also said in a low voice to Song Shuhang, "Moreover, I also added two attack-type formations to the warhead of the missile. If the missile were to explode, other than the damage caused by the explosion, it would inflict damage from a powerful lightning explosion as well. In a while, once we find the headquarters of the Limitless Demon Sect, we can test its strength."

Song Shuhang got a scare... he felt that the missile was already scary enough, and now, Venerable White even added an attack-type formation to it? It was like adding fuel to the fire! If this thing were to explode, what kind of terrifying power would it have?

Just as he was in deep thoughts, something unexpected happened. Perhaps because Venerable White used too much strength while patting the missile, the vertically-standing missile tilted to the right, starting to fall toward the ground.

"Senior White, it's falling!" Song Shuhang quickly shouted. It was a very dangerous gadget that had undergone Venerable White's modification. There was a chance it might explode if it were to fall down.

"Don't worry, I'm here." Venerable White laughed and stretched his hand toward the missile. Venerable White could stop something of this size effortlessly. Therefore, there was no need to be worried.

But right at this time, a figure rushed over from a distant place and supported the falling missile with its hand. Its pose was very

cool.

It was True Monarch White Crane!

White Crane had been paying attention to Venerable White the whole time so that it could help him if there was a need to!

Therefore, as soon as it saw the missile falling, it rushed over and supported it with its hand.

"Senior White, you don't have to worry. With me here, nothing bad will happen!" True Monarch White Crane said as it held its thumb up in approval.

"Senior White Crane, you did very well!" Song Shuhang also held his thumb up and praised White Crane.

True Monarch White Crane was very pleased with itself.

Venerable White was speechless.

It wasn't because of True Monarch White Crane. It was because he realized he made a mistake while assembling the missile.

The missile was emitting black smoke at this time.

It meant it could explode at any time!

"White Crane, throw that thing away," Venerable White said. Although he was reluctant to admit it, it seemed he had committed a mistake while reassembling it. "It might explode!"

"Eh?" True Monarch White Crane was stunned at first. Then, it said loudly, "It might explode?"

True Monarch White Crane put the missile on its shoulders and looked all around. It was trying to find a good place to deal with it.

Very soon, its eyes lit up.

The blood demon! Since the missile was about to explode, it was better to throw it at the blood demon.

"Everyone, get out of the way! I'm going to use a powerful move! Aaaaah!" True Monarch White Crane loudly shouted.

Next, it used all its strength to throw the modified missile toward the blood demon.

All the fellow daoists were happily beating the blood demon when they saw a smoking missile flying toward them.

"㊄" Northern River's Loose Cultivator opened his eyes wide.

"F*ck! Fellow Daoist White Crane, you're courting death! Why did you throw a missile here?!" Cave Lord Snow Wolf bellowed.

Fairy Dongfang narrowly dodged the missile and screamed, "Senior White Crane, stop causing trouble!"

The missile almost hit her!

"Launching a missile toward a blood demon is of no use. Senior White Crane, go play somewhere else!" Dharma King Creation roared.

But right at this time...

True Monarch Fallout who was previously explaining things to Shuhang suddenly shouted, "Everyone, get out of there! It's something Venerable White personally modified!"

But True Monarch Fallout was just halfway through his speech when Thrice Reckless casually turned around and unsheathed his treasured saber.

"Senior White Crane, stop causing trouble with that useless missile! You should go on a side and spectate, leaving the blood demon to us!" Thrice Reckless Mad Saber shouted.

Just as he was speaking, he assumed a cool pose and attacked.

This technique was worthy of being called 'Seventy-Two Swift Saber Strikes'. In a mere instant, Thrice Reckless slashed seventy-two times.

The beautiful saber lights intertwined and covered the missile

like a net.

But just as he used the attack, Thrice Reckless finally heard True Monarch Fallout's words...

What? The missile was modified by Venerable White?

"..." Thrice Reckless Mad Saber.

I'm f*cked!

At this time, he wished he could open his mouth and gobble down that net of saber lights! But it was too late... the dazzling saber lights reached the missile and cut it into bits.

"Boom~"

A huge explosion followed. The range of the explosion covered both the blood demon and the fellow daoists of the Nine Provinces Number One Group.

"Aaaaah! Thrice Reckless, it doesn't end here!"

"Dammit! Thrice Reckless, you almost killed me!"

"Did you do it intentionally? Thrice Reckless, were you plotting this together with White Crane? Ouch, f*ck! Fellow Daoist Creation, quickly stop the blood demon. This bastard seized the opportunity to throw a fist at me. So painful."

"Uwaaah... you're dead, Thrice Reckless!"

"Aaaaah! This year's limited edition dress I bought from the 'Silk Gauze Sect' is ruined!" Fairy Dongfang screamed.

Thrice Reckless Mad Saber held his saber and stood in the wind with a confused expression on his face. He felt that he was done for this time.

Far-off, True Monarch White Crane was still in the throwing-missile pose. It hadn't expected that Thrice Reckless would such use a beautiful saber attack to screw itself too. Eh? Wait a moment. Am I not dead already? Such being the case, I don't have to worry

about seeking death anymore.



Straight ahead, Thrice Reckless Mad Saber's calamity had just started.

After the missile exploded, the 'lightning explosion' magical formation Venerable White engraved on it also activated.

"Buzz, buzz, crack, crack~" A mass of purple lightning burst forth from the center of the explosion, condensing into a purple ball.

Although it was just an experimental product, the purple lightning still had a killing power comparable to that of the Sixth Stage.

Thrice Reckless Mad Saber bore the brunt of the attack. The lightning explosion didn't hit his body directly, but some of the overflowing electricity found its way to him and charred his body black...

Had the lightning explosion hit Thrice Reckless directly, he would have passed the next few months on Medicine Master's sickbed.

Luckily, the person who engraved the formation on the missile wasn't too far away.

"Extinguish!" Venerable White lightly shouted.

After Venerable White shouted, the lightning element inside the explosion quickly weakened, and the ball changed from its original gigantic size to that of a fist.

At last, the electricity kept getting weaker and weaker until it disappeared.

Thrice Reckless opened his mouth and exhaled a mouthful of black smoke. This mass of black smoke perfectly described his current mood.



"Roar, roar, roar~" The roar of the blood demon echoed.

The missile suddenly exploding disrupted the coordination of the fellow daoists of the Nine Provinces Number One Group. Dharma King Creation, who was in charge of keeping the monster at bay, lost his grip on the blood demon.

The blood demon immediately seized the opportunity and ran with all its might, using its superior physical strength of the Sixth Stage and durable body to break through the encirclement of the members of the group.

Soon after, it headed in Song Shuhang's direction. Since it was heavily injured, it needed to eat something to replenish its strength.

Although its intelligence quotient was very low, it still had a little bit of instinct.

The blood demon needed to replenish its strength as soon as possible. Therefore, it looked for the weakest lifeform. On the scene, Song Shuhang and Chu Chu were the ones with the lowest cultivation.

Since Chu Chu was a bit further, the blood demon decided to aim for Song Shuhang!

Thereupon, it rushed toward him and tried to catch him with his big hands.

"Don't let it run!" the members of the Nine Provinces Number One Group bellowed.

But in this life and death crisis, the blood demon burst forth with an incredible speed.

Even Yellow Mountain and Ancient Lake Temple, who were in the sky overseeing the scene, were unable to stop the blood demon in time.



In the front, Venerable White pinched his chin and clicked his tongue.

Then, he stood up and stretched his fist out, blowing some air on it.

When they were discussing earlier, he thought of an interesting fist attack. At first, he thought he wouldn't have the opportunity to use it. Little did he know that the blood demon would suddenly rush toward his position and give him a chance.

"Roar, roar, roar~" the blood demon madly roared as it rushed forward.

However, it had yet to approach Song Shuhang when Venerable White raised his fist and lightly jumped, appearing on the top of its head. Thousands of runes were rotating around the fist, looking like chains.

In the next moment, Venerable White finally launched his fist attack.

The fist had yet to reach the body of the blood when the head of the latter started to dissipate. Just like a strong wind blowing over a pile of sand, the head of the blood demon changed into countless grains.

After falling to the ground, the grains condensed and turned into several blood-colored pearls, emitting "ding, ding, ding" sounds while hitting the ground.

Venerable White's fist slowly descended, and the body of the blood demon kept turning into pearls as though a meat grinder was mincing it.

Two breaths later.

The originally ten meters tall blood demon disappeared without a trace. The blood pearls on the ground were the only proof that a pitiful blood demon had crossed the atmosphere and arrived here.

Venerable White took his fist back and held his chin. From his pensive expression, it seemed he wasn't completely satisfied with the effects of this fist.

In the rear, the seniors of the group wanted to cry. They didn't expect that Venerable White would be able to ultimately use his fist attack and spoil the fun.

Was it fate?

"I need to improve this move further. It actually wasted a lot of spiritual energy. When it was turning the body of the blood demon into energy crystals, at least 30% of the energy was wasted," Venerable White muttered to himself.

Song Shuhang picked up one of the pearls and asked in puzzlement, "Do blood demons turn into blood pearls after their death?"

He sensed pure spiritual energy coming from these beautiful pearls.

"It was an experiment." Venerable White smiled and said, "I was trying to turn the blood demon into something akin to 'spirit stones', but the result wasn't too good. Now then, let's take a look at which treasures the blood demon brought here with it."

Now that the boss was defeated, it was time for the loot!

Chapter 408: Blood Bone

Cosmic demons didn't only have great endurance; they carried many treasures on their bodies as well.

One of the best things about them was that they would drop items after their death.

Regardless of the type, each cosmic demon would drop spirit stones, medicinal materials, and other refinable materials.

If one's luck was good, a high-level cosmic demon might drop magical weapons and magical treasures as well.

These magical weapons and treasures were manufactured in a rather strange way, completely different than how treasures or weapons were forged in the world of cultivators. However, cultivators only needed to modify them a little in order to use them.

Some senior cultivators guessed that cosmic demons might be related to the era of the previous Wielder of the Will or that they were products of an even more remote era. Some thought that they might come from other worlds or timelines.

There were many different opinions about the origin of cosmic demons.

Since they were brainless creatures, cultivators couldn't discover anything useful by reading their memories with mind-reading techniques. As a consequence, their origin became a big mystery in the world of cultivators.

Venerable White got ready to open the loot box.

He stretched out his hand and rummaged through the pile of blood pearls. Soon after, a blackened staff appeared in Venerable White's hand. It was unknown which material it was made of, but it seemed very hard and heavy.

"An embryonic form of a staff-type magical treasure. After refining it a bit, it would be possible to obtain a pretty good staff. Moreover, it's made of a very special material. I can guarantee that it would be very hard. Who wants it?" Venerable White asked.

Dharma King Creation raised his hand and said, "If no one needs it, I would like to have it. Senior White, you can keep looking and see how many treasures you can find. If the total number is somewhat low, I'll put on the table an equal number of spirit stones to compensate everyone's loss."

Dharma King Creation's sect, the Warring Buddha Sect, had another worldwide famous technique aside from the ⟨Warring Buddha's True Body⟩, the ⟨World Overturning Staff Technique⟩. The material this rough staff was made of wasn't bad. After properly refining it, it would turn into a fine staff that would perfectly match Dharma King Creation's style.

"Sure, you can take it. At the time, we'll calculate whether or not you have to compensate your fellow daoists." Venerable White threw the rough staff toward Dharma King Creation.

Venerable White continued to rummage through the pile and said, "A magical ring of the ice attribute. It should have the power to strengthen ice-type techniques. Cave Lord Snow Wolf, it's yours!"

Cave Lord Snow Wolf took the magical ring and grinned.

Venerable White kept searching and said, "A thin red-colored piece of silk. Although I don't know what use it might have, it seems very suitable for Fairy Dongfang Six!"

Venerable White threw the red silk toward Fairy Dongfang. This red silk would surely look very good on her while she was dancing.

Venerable White kept searching. "Eh? These are medicinal materials. I think I've seen this herb before. It was called green... or cyan-something? I don't remember its complete name, but I

remember that one can produce a medicinal pill from it after adding some other materials. This pill can help one increase the chances to break through the bottleneck to the Sixth Stage Realm. Northern River, you seem to need it. Take it."

On the scene, only Northern River's Loose Cultivator was close to breaking through the Sixth Stage.

Northern River's Loose Cultivator happily took the medicinal material. With this thing, his chances to break through would increase by at least 10%.

Venerable White kept searching. "A small defensive amulet. Oh? This item is somewhat strange... Hmm? It's not bad, actually. It's a protective amulet that contains a little bit of 'luck'. It can increase the luck of its owner by a certain degree. Who wants it?"

This thing was somewhat similar to the small dragon tail in Venerable White's possession.

"Me, me, me! I want it!" Thrice Reckless Mad Saber quickly raised his hand and took a deep breath. He felt that he had been very unlucky for the past few days and that everything was going wrong for him.

Even today, he doomed himself with that slash from before. Therefore, if he could obtain an item that could increase his luck, regardless of its use, it would at least let him have some peace of mind. Hopefully, under the protection of this item, the hits of his fellow daoists would hurt less.

"Good, you can take it." Venerable White threw the small defensive amulet toward Thrice Reckless.



Afterward, Venerable White kept pulling out treasures one after another.

Medicinal materials, magical treasures, weapons, there were all sorts of items.

Very soon, all the members of the Nine Provinces Number One Group on the scene obtained a treasure. Even True Monarch White Crane, who did nothing the whole time, obtained two strange pieces of metal that could be used to forge weapons as a consolation prize.

Doudou and Yu Jiaojiao also received two small treasures. Yu Jiaojiao received a pearl that increased the strength of water-type techniques, while Doudou received a black collar of unknown use. It just happened to be similar to the dog collar he was tricked into putting on before.

"Now then, I don't think cosmic demons are supposed to drop so many high-level items..." True Monarch Yellow Mountain held his chin. In normal circumstance, one would be lucky if they could find three, four magical treasures and some spirit stones on the body of a cosmic demon after killing it.

Finding six, seven magical treasures was already a huge stroke of luck.

In the last several hundred years, True Monarch Yellow Mountain didn't remember of any cosmic demon that had dropped ten or more treasures.

But right now... Venerable White had already found a great number of them... more than fifty!

Although it was a special variety of cosmic demon, the blood demon, and its strength was comparable to the Sixth Stage, it was still exaggerated that more than fifty treasures dropped from its body!

"Senior Yellow Mountain is also surprised?" True Monarch Ancient Lake Temple said. "When Senior White took out the sixteenth treasure, I was already speechless. But then I thought to myself that it was about Venerable White, so no matter how many treasures he pulled out, it was completely reasonable and not in the least strange."

"Is it possible that Senior White is secretly taking out treasures from his spatial equipment and giving them to everyone? No matter how I look at it, fifty treasures are just too much. Where did this blood demon hide all those items?!" "When the bright moon appears' also known as Scholar Drunken XXX said.

"Is it possible that this cosmic demon was previously a 'merchant' or something similar to have so many treasures with it?"

"Fellow Daoists, you're overthinking."



At last, Venerable White pulled out a huge pile of spirit stones with all different sizes and types. "Oh, it seems there are no more treasures. Only spirit stones are left. Such being the case, I'll keep the spirit stones! Right, there is still Shuhang. Shuhang, come here. Take some spirit stones as a consolation prize."

After saying this much, Venerable White casually threw three spirit stones toward Song Shuhang.

Although Song Shuhang hadn't participated in the battle and only acted as a spectator, there were cases where the onlookers received a share as well. It was something to rejoice about.

"Thank you, Senior White." Song Shuhang took the three spirit stones with a smile. So, these were spirit stones? They felt soft to the touch when he squeezed them between his fingers.

After looking at the spirit stones, Song Shuhang immediately recalled the poisonous urchin warrior Sui Qianjun. Aside from the <Sea Urchin Warriors' 20 Years of Mandatory Education Manual>, Song Shuhang found two grotesque small stones on his body. They looked very similar to these spirit stones, albeit much smaller.

Were they also spirit stones?

"I'll keep these blood pearls as well. I want to study them and see if they can be of any use." Venerable White waved his hand, making all the blood pearls and spirit stones on the ground

disappear. It seemed he stored them away in his spatial equipment.

After the pile of blood pearls disappeared, Venerable White discovered that there was another small thing on the ground.

It was a bone-shaped object, its color deep-red.

"Eh? There is also this thing?" Venerable White picked the bone and looked at it for a while, not understanding what it was. "What is this thing? I feel ripples of soul energy come from it."

The people on the scene shook their heads. Strange items would often drop from the bodies of cosmic demons. A lot of cultivators had rare items in their hands but didn't know their use and could only store them away. Perhaps this thing was also a treasure?

Venerable White swung the red bone and turned his head toward Cave Lord Snow Wolf. "Snow Wolf, it's a bone. Do you want it?"

"..." Cave Lord Snow Wolf.

He quickly shook his head... he was a snow wolf, not a snow dog!

"Oh, I asked the wrong person. I should have asked Doudou." Venerable White had a sudden realization and turned toward Doudou, saying, "Doudou, this blood-red bone seems very good to chew, do you want it?"

"Woof woof woof woof!"

'No, I would prefer some pork-flavored dog food!' was what Doudou wanted to say, but what came out was a series of weak barks. He was still muted by True Monarch Yellow Mountain and had yet to recover his voice.

Thereupon, Doudou bared his teeth with a depressed look on his face and shook his head.

"Wahahaha! Doudou is very cute when he can't speak. Doudou, if you were not to speak for the rest of your life, your cuteness would increase by at least 100 points!" The nearby Thrice Reckless laughed loudly.

"Woof woof woof~" Doudou jumped and turned into a three meters long beast. Soon after, it dashed toward the baboon version Thrice Reckless and used his sharp teeth to bite on his head with lightning speed.

But when Doudou put strength into his bite, he was unable to damage Thrice Reckless' head...

"Ahahaha! Naive! Did you think I didn't prepare? No move can work on Thrice Reckless Mad Saber twice! I put up a very good defense around my head, it's too tough for you to break! Wahahaha!" Thrice Reckless laughed out loud once more.

But halfway through his laughter, Doudou's saliva started to flow down, and since he was biting Thrice Reckless' head, it flowed directly on his face...

"..." Thrice Reckless Mad Saber.

Thrice Reckless quietly shot a glance at the defensive amulet hanging around his neck... Wasn't this gadget supposed to increase his luck? Or perhaps his luck had already a value of -1000 and this small amulet only added 1 point, hence having no effect?

Venerable White asked around, but none of the fellow daoists seemed interested in this red bone...

Actually, many of them were interested in the bone, but they were too embarrassed to ask for it. After pulling out so many treasures, Venerable White only kept a bunch of spirit stones for himself. None of them had the courage to ask for the bone.

Chapter 409: Song of the Stupid Yellow Mountain

"Such being the case, Shuhang can take the blood bone. Don't look down on it. Since it's something dropped by a cosmic demon, it's surely a high-level item. Since the fellow daoists of the group don't want it, I might as well give it to you." Venerable White threw the blood-red bone toward Song Shuhang. "It's very hard. If you decide to raise a puppy, you can give it to the puppy so that it can chew on it."

Venerable White wasn't too interested in this strange object. Moreover, Senior White's treasure house was so full that he himself couldn't remember how many treasures he had, either. Even the treasure-houses of some large sects couldn't be compared to that of Senior White's.

Song Shuhang didn't know whether to laugh or cry as he received the red-colored bone. It was a treasure dropped by a cosmic demon, how could he give it to a puppy to chew on it!



After the death of the blood demon, all the treasures were divided.

The members of the group gathered together once more and started to discuss what they had learned from the battle earlier... only a certain big white and a certain reckless guy were left out.

The big white crane didn't seem to care. After all, it only cared about Venerable White.

But Thrice Reckless Mad Saber was a very talkative person! Hence, he felt uneasy when he was left out.

Just as they were chatting, True Monarch Yellow Mountain received a call.

Soon after, he said to his fellow daoists, "I just received news that the medicinal pills are ready. Additionally, 400 hand-guided tractors will be soon delivered here. Do you guys need something else too? If you need something, say it now so that I can deliver everything in one go."

He prepared so many hand-guided tractors so that the fellow daoists of the group could carry out the modifications and enhancements more conveniently.

After all, it was sure that there would be some failures during the modification process. Hence, True Monarch Yellow Mountain prepared several vehicles for each fellow daoist, allowing them to fully display their creativity. Moreover, the tractors weren't that expensive. When he bought 350 of them, they gave him another 50 as a gift.

"Senior Yellow Mountain, prepare a few tools to carry out the modifications as well," some of the members of the group said.

"Can you get some writing brushes to engrave fine formations? Senior White's proposal was too sudden, and I couldn't prepare properly!"

"I need a set of refining tools!"

The members of the group put forward their requests one after another.

"I understand. I'll tell the staff to prepare enough tools and send them here together with the tractors." True Monarch Yellow Mountain wrote down the requests.

Aside from when he appeared in the group to coldly 'hehe' at his fellow daoists and use the great muting technique, True Monarch Yellow Mountain was an exemplary group founder.

When the hand-guided tractor competition was mentioned, Venerable White's mood became excellent.

"Such being the case, I'll prepare the place where the competition will be held. Shuhang, come with me. On the way, we'll take a look at the Illusory Sword School too." Venerable White waved his hand at Song Shuhang.

Since the sea urchin warriors wanted to destroy the Illusory Sword School, it was better to take a look at the situation.

"Sure," Song Shuhang replied. Then, he suddenly thought of another matter and said, "Senior White, don't forget about Chu Chu and the others!"

"Right. Doudou, create an ordinary clone with your dog fur." Venerable White waved his hand at Doudou. "Then, after the technique affecting them is untied, use your dog fur clone to escort them back to the Chu Family."

Doudou replied, "Woof woof woof woof~"

"Speak properly," Venerable White said.

True Monarch Yellow Mountain snapped his fingers, and the technique muting Doudou temporarily disappeared.

Doudou opened his mouth and started to sing. "The fragrance of blooming flower baskets~ Hear this song of mine~ Come to the great Yellow Mountain~ It's a beautiful place with beautiful sceneries~ There are crops everywhere~ with a stupid Yellow Mountain all over the place~"

"..." True Monarch Yellow Mountain.

Yellow Mountain stretched out his hand, getting ready to mute Doudou again.

Doudou quickly shut his mouth and said in all seriousness, "Senior White, an ordinary dog fur clone doesn't have too much combat strength. How about using a special one?"

"There is no need. An ordinary one is more than enough," Venerable White said with a faint smile.

What if the dog fur clone was too strong and managed to put on the run the guys trying to steal the sword technique?

After saying this much, Venerable White told Song Shuhang to place the scroll of the 'sword technique' on Chu Chu's body.

* * *

When Chu Chu and the others woke up, they had confused expressions on their faces. How did they exactly fall asleep?

It would be fine if only one or two fell asleep, but all of them? Was this the doing of these seniors?

They didn't know if it was a misconception or not, but they felt their bodies full of energy when they woke up. They felt as though their bodies were purified and thus much stronger. Some of the disciples of the First Stage felt that their apertures had loosened up a bit, becoming easier to open.

Although they were sleeping while the seniors were discussing, the condensed spiritual energy of the world and the strange phenomena helped them quite a bit.

In ancient times, when sages were explaining the way of heaven and earth, the listening disciples would obtain many benefits, and their cultivation realm would increase. It was what happened this time as well.

Venerable White said to Chu Chu, "Little friend Chu Chu, that scroll contains part of your family's sword technique. You can bring it back to your family first. In the meantime, the others and I will stay here... after you're done dealing with what happened within your family, we'll come to your place as guests."

"Senior, I understand." Chu Chu quickly took the scroll of the 'sword technique'.

At the same time, Doudou's clone came over and put the severely injured Chu Chu on his back.

Before leaving, Chu Chunying said sincerely, "If any of you Seniors need help from us disciples of the Chu Family, you just have to ask."

If so many seniors were gathered, it meant they were planning to do something.

Therefore, if the disciples of the Chu Family could help them and form a good relationship with them, it was not impossible that they could obtain great success if one of the seniors took a liking to them.

True Monarch Yellow Mountain shot a glance at Chu Chunying and smiled as he said, "At the time, we might need the help of the disciples of the Chu Family. We'll compensate you with either spirit stones or other things."

Afterward, Doudou's clone carried Chu Chu and headed toward the Chu Family with the remaining disciples.



Soon after, True Monarch Yellow Mountain activated a small palace-shaped magical treasure to provide lodgings for his fellow daoists.

At the same time, Venerable White carried Song Shuhang and headed toward the place where he decided to hold the hand-guided tractor competition in order to prepare the terrain.

After all, an ordinary race track couldn't satisfy the need of cultivators.

Venerable White had a lot of ideas in regards to the track where the tractors would race. He was planning to place traps, labyrinth-like sections, and other dangerous things on the track to make the race more exciting for cultivators.

For example, explosions, explosions, and explosions!

Or flying up, flying up, and flying up!

In short, all sorts of stimulating attractions.

On their way, they would conveniently glance at the situation of the Illusory Sword School and see what had happened between them and the sea urchin warriors.

* * *

Right at this time, the cultivators that wanted to spectate the battle with the blood demon, as well that mister's servant, arrived around the area where the Grievance Settling Platform was held.

"Eh? Where is the blood demon?"

"Was it killed already? Wasn't that blood demon a monster with the strength of the Sixth Stage? Even if the opponent was a powerful Sixth Stage True Monarch, they would take a long time to kill it, right?"

"If the blood demon was killed... there must be something left behind, right? How come I can't see anything?"

"Was it disintegrated directly?"

The group of cultivators looked from a certain distance toward the place where the Grievance Settling Platform was held and that palace-shaped magical treasure on a side, not daring to approach.

Just as they were discussing amongst themselves, the door of the palace opened.

True Monarch White Crane stepped out, its face pure and holy.

"Eh? It seems a lot of people came here!" True Monarch White Crane heartily laughed.

"It's Senior White Crane!" Some of the cultivators recognized True Monarch White Crane.

Aside from its cute look, True Monarch White Crane was also helping the with development in the West. Therefore, it had a certain popularity in the world of cultivators.

Male cultivators liked True Monarch White Crane because it would turn into a pretty woman if it were to fall in love with a male.

Female cultivators liked True Monarch White Crane because it would turn into a handsome man if it were to fall in love with a female.

Hence, there were a lot of its fans amongst the cultivators that had come here to spectate the battle.

"Ahahaha. Ladies and gentlemen, you arrived late. The blood demon was already killed. But since you came here from far away and endured many hardships, Senior White prepared a small gift for you all." True Monarch White Crane smiled and waved its hand.

Immediately after, a large number of blood pearls fell from the sky, and each cultivator received two of them.

Venerable White left these blood pearls to True Monarch White Crane before leaving... in the past, whenever a cosmic demon was killed, the winner would leave behind the body of the blood demon so that low-level loose cultivators could benefit from it.

But this time, the body of the blood demon was completely transformed into blood pearls. Hence, Venerable White prepared some blood pearls for these cultivators.

After all, he had a lot of them.



Although they didn't know how to use these blood pearls, the cultivators could feel the pure spiritual energy within. This spiritual energy wasn't inferior to that of spirit stones. If they could extract it, these pearls would act as two high-level spirit stones.

Thereupon, each cultivator expressed their gratitude to True Monarch White Crane and left.

The puppets of that mister were also hidden inside the group.

He likewise received a pair of blood pearls. When he got them, he felt the aura of the blood demon come from them.

F*ck... it was really killed.

The mister felt that he was on the verge of having a mental breakdown. Just how much time had passed before the blood demon was killed?

Such being the case, his plan also failed.

Without the blood demon causing trouble in the Chu Family, how was he supposed to get the scroll from Chu Chu's hands?

The mister rubbed his temples.

But just as he was in deep thoughts, he saw a very interesting picture through another puppet.

It was a picture from the puppet lying in ambush on the road linking the Chu Family and the Grievance Settling Platform.

From the eyes of the puppet, he saw that Chu Chu, several other disciples of the Chu Family, and a huge monster pekingese were heading toward the territory of the Chu Family.

At this time, Chu Chu was holding the last scroll of the 'sword technique' in her hands.

Chapter 410: All the scrolls are gathered

"This is a heaven-sent opportunity!" The mister was overjoyed.

At this time, he was fifty kilometers away from the Chu Family. If he were to use that magical treasure that allowed one to move at the speed of the sound, he would reach the territory of the Chu Family in around three minutes!

"It seems that the 'sword technique' of the Chu Family is fated to fall into my hands." The mister crawled out of the blood pond and stretched out his hand, waving it. Soon after, a ferocious black-colored beast came out from the depths of the cave.

This wild beast had the appearance of a huge western dragon. It had the shape of a lizard with two curved horns on its head and two wings on its back. It was covered in scales and looked very fierce.

However, this western dragon wasn't alive. It was merely a beast-shaped puppet capable of flight.

Cultivators made use of such magical treasures to quickly reach their destinations. Spirit stones or similar source of energies were enough to activate this kind of treasures. The higher the quality of the spirit stone, the higher a speed the flying puppet would reach.

The mister took out a blood-colored piece of jade from his chest, his expression aggrieved. It was the Blood Sea Jade he refined following the instructions of a fragmentary refining manual he found in some ancient ruins. It was the same treasure Young Master Hai wanted to use to replace the Blood God Crystal!

The manufacturing process of the Blood Sea Jade wasn't much easier than the Blood God Crystal's. Moreover, 'mister' needed to use two pieces of the Blood Sea Jade whenever using the Star Shifting Formation; it was a painful experience each time.

After clenching his teeth, he opened the cavity in the chest of the

puppet and extracted the spirit stones inside, replacing them with the Blood Sea Jade.

If he weren't in a hurry, he wouldn't have wasted the Blood Sea Jade like that.

Unfortunately, the speed of the black dragon puppet would reach only half the speed of sound if he were to use normal spirit stones to operate it. Only after exchanging the source of energy into something purer and stronger like the Blood Sea Jade could the black dragon puppet reach the speed of sound or supersonic speed.

After the Blood Sea Jade was placed inside its chest, two strange dots of red light appeared in the eyes of the black dragon.

"Let's head toward the territory of the Chu Family," the mister said in a grave tone as he jumped on the back of the black dragon.

The black dragon flapped its wings and soared into the sky.

A passage automatically opened in the ceiling of the cave, allowing the black dragon to pass through it and speed toward the Chu Family.



Around two minutes later.

The black dragon suddenly landed and stepped onto the ground with its sturdy hind legs, blocking the path of Chu Chu and the other disciples.

"Who is it?" The disciples of the Chu Family looked both at the dragon and the person riding it vigilantly.

The strange mister coldly snorted and looked at Chu Chu.

"Miss Chu Chu, we meet again." The corner of the mister's mouth rose, his expression pleased.

"?" Chu Chu.

She didn't remember meeting his guy.

The mister jumped from the dragon, and a small curved saber floated behind his back, intimidating the disciples of the Chu Family in from of him. "I don't have time to waste with you guys. Give me that scroll with the sword technique!"

"You can forget about it!" Chu Chu held the scroll tightly.

At the same time, one of the disciples next to her pulled out a thin rope-shaped object, planning to launch it into the sky to release a signal.

They were already pretty close to the Chu Family. If they were to release the signal now, the family leader and that powerful ancestor that fought on the Grievance Settling Platform earlier would rush here as soon as possible!

But the disciple had yet to give the signal when he felt a stabbing pain transmit from his shoulder. The small curved saber quietly chopped the arm he was planning to use to activate the signal.

"As I said earlier, I don't have time to waste with you guys." The mister used an exquisite footwork and bypassed the various disciples of the Chu Family, arriving next to Chu Chu. Then, he held her chin between his fingers and said, "Miss Chu Chu, this time you're not as calm as that time in the secret room. You disappointed me."

"..." Chu Chu.

Now, she was clear about what happened. It seemed that this man met Song Shuhang when he posed as her.

Just as they were speaking, the mister stretched out his hand and took the painting of the 'sword technique' from the weak Chu Chu.

"Miss Chu Chu, I'll take the scroll for now. If you hate me, come and find me." The corner of the mister's mouth rose as he said to Chu Chu, "I'll wait for you and prepare a big welcoming ceremony!"

"One day, I'll find you and kill you," Chu Chu said after clenching

her teeth.

"I'll wait for you, but you'll have only one opportunity to kill me. If you fail, obediently become my wife." The mister laughed and jumped on the back of the black dragon.

The black dragon soared into the sky and broke the sound barrier, disappearing without a trace. The mister felt that the current Chu Chu wasn't as valiant as the last time when she managed to move his heart. Was it because of the different setting?

Anyway, there was no time for that. The most important thing was that he had managed to reunite the four scrolls of the 'sword technique'!



After the mister disappeared...

Doudou's clone was speechless.

This piece of trash actually dared to rob Chu Chu in my presence? If this dog god's main body was here, I would have bitten you to death!

"Senior Sister Chu Chu, what now? The 'sword technique' was stolen!" the disciples of the Chu Family said, flurried.

"First, stop Chu Bu's bleeding and carry him back to the family so that he can have his wound treated. As for the stolen 'sword technique', we'll take it back." Chu Chu took a deep breath and tried to calm down. "Chu Gui, you're the fastest. Return to the family ahead of us and tell everything to the ancestor. With his strength of the Fifth Stage Realm, he must have the means to catch up to that guy!"

"Senior Sister Chu Chu, I understand." The guy named Chu Gui put the things he was carrying on his back down. Soon after, he dashed toward the Chu Family at full speed.

Chu Chu heaved a sigh. In the end, the complete version of the

'sword technique' still fell into the hands of the enemy.

Although Song Shuhang risked his life to get that portion of the 'sword technique' back, it was still snatched away by the enemy...



Illusory Sword School.

The Illusory Sword School lost the battle on the Grievance Settling Platform, and their strongest elder, Jian Yuanhai, lost an arm. As if that wasn't enough, they would have to give their signature technique, the <Illusory Sword Scripture>, to the Chu Family as a compensation. The morale of the disciples was extremely low. Their heads hung low in dejection as they were lamenting from time to time.

After returning to the school, Jian Yuanhai didn't utter a word and directly went into secluded meditation to recover from his injury.

After comforting the disciples, the school head Xu Zheng returned to his dwelling all alone.

Once he returned to his dwelling, the disappointed expression on his face immediately disappeared.

He cautiously took out his phone and looked at the last message he received from that mister: 'The plan succeeded.'

Although it was just a short message, it made him feel extremely relieved.

So what if the Chu Family won the battle on the Grievance Settling Platform?

After all, their 'sword technique' was still stolen in the end.

Now, he only had to wait for that powerful mister to contact him so that they could study the 'sword technique' of the Chu Family together.

He had been stuck in the Third Stage Realm for quite some time

since the ‹Illusory Sword Scripture› wasn't profound enough! As long as he could get his hands onto the 'sword technique' of the Chu Family, his strength would reach new heights. Let alone the Fourth Stage Realm, perhaps he could even condense a Golden Core and reach the Fifth Stage, gaining a lifespan of a thousand years!

After restraining his excitement, Xu Zheng sent a message to the mister: 'Mister, what do I have to do now that the plan has succeeded?'

Very soon, that mister replied: 'Fellow Daoist Xu Zheng seems really impatient. In a while, I'll send six of my servants to your Illusory Sword School to deliver you a jade talisman. With that talisman, you'll be able to find my position. At the time, we can study the 'sword technique' of the Chu Family together and increase our strength.'

After receiving the message, Xu Zheng heaved a huge sigh of relief.



Soon after, two of the servants of that mister, as well as four strange guys shrouded in black clothes and with many needles sticking out of their heads, came to visit the Illusory Sword School.

Xu Zheng quickly welcomed the six guests in his private courtyard, receiving them very cordially.

The two servants didn't waste time. One of the two took out a box of jade from his clothes and delivered it to Xu Zheng as soon as he entered the courtyard.

In the rear, one of the strange spiky guys cupped his fists and said in a muffled voice, "Fellow Daoist Xu Zheng, 'mister' told us to deliver this box of jade to you. Please accept it and examine the contents. If there are no problems, we'll take our leave."

Xu Zheng smiled and nodded. Then, he opened the box in front

of the two servants and four guys in black clothes.

But when he opened the box, there was no jade talisman inside...

On the contrary, a strange fog came out of the box and quickly filled the entire courtyard and kept spreading beyond, as though it wanted to cover the whole Illusory Sword School.

"Eh?" Xu Zheng opened his eyes wide. What about the jade talisman? Where was the talisman?

Soon after, his head started to feel dizzy.

What's happening?



"Hehehehe... both stupid and greedy." The spiky guy that spoke earlier evilly grinned. Then, he turned around and said to the two servants, "As per the agreement, we sea urchin warriors will take the 'true blood' of the people of the Illusory Sword School. As for their bodies, we'll leave them behind so that your master can use them to refine the Blood Sea Jade, alright?"

The two 'servants' slightly nodded.

"Get into action, sea urchin children. Collect all the 'true blood' and don't let a single human cultivator escape!" the spiky guys bellowed. Along with his roar, more than 500 sea urchin warriors that were hiding in the surroundings of the Illusory Sword School showed themselves, starting to kill the people of the Illusory Sword School while borrowing the cover of the fog.

With the fog covering the place, the disciples of the Illusory Sword School were in the same situation as the guys from the Chu Family back then. They just had to inhale a bit of it to get dizzy and lose consciousness. The sea urchin warriors rushed into the fog and killed all the cultivators of the Illusory Sword School they met. Then, they pierced their bodies with their needles, extracting the 'true blood' from the bodies.

In the meantime, the sea urchin warrior that spoke in a muffled voice arrived in front of Xu Zheng.

"Why?!" Xu Zheng roared. With his cultivation of the Third Stage Realm, he didn't immediately faint under the effect of the fog. But he felt his whole body weak.

Why was his dear friend 'mister' trying to kill him?

Chapter 411: Ah? Pew~

Xu Zheng recalled the day he met 'mister' two years ago.

Two years ago, he brought the elite disciples of the Illusory Sword School into some ancient ruins. There, they chanced upon a powerful and ferocious beast that chased them.

The wild beast was very strong, and in the blink of an eye, it killed more than half of the disciples of the Illusory Sword School. Even Xu Zheng himself suffered severe injuries and almost lost his life.

Right at that time, the powerful mister appeared and chased the ferocious beast away, saving the lives of Xu Zheng and the remaining disciples of the Illusory Sword School.

After he saved his life, Xu Zheng came to know the powerful mister.

In the next two years, both he and the Illusory Sword School received a lot of help from the mister.

The two of them quickly became friends.

And now, that same mister wanted to kill him and destroy the Illusory Sword School?

"Why? Because you are useless." One of the servants shot a glance at Xu Zheng and said in a robot-like voice, "Everything in the world has a certain value. And you, Fellow Daoist Xu Zheng, have already given me everything you could, exhausting your value. Actually, you can still be of use to me... I'll use you and the people of the Illusory Sword School to create another Blood Sea Jade, turning all of you into resources."

Although it was just one of the servants speaking, the tone was clearly that of the mysterious mister.

Xu Zheng roared, "Were you deceiving me all along?!"

"Yes. I'm happy that you were able to understand it at last," the servant continued. "Laying down the truth in front of you right before your death, making you truly despair... as a swindler, nothing makes me more happy than this."

For a whole two years, he was able to deceive the head of a school of cultivators and make him run in circles. From beginning to end, he had him under his control. This meant that his ability to swindle others had increased quite a bit! It was something that made him even happier than advancing in realm.

"You aren't the first person I swindled and you won't be the last... hence, you don't need to feel bad about it," the servant continued.

"Hehe... what's the point of wasting breath with someone that is about to die?" The leader of the sea urchin warriors strangely laughed. Then, he stretched out his hand and extracted a needle from his leg, ruthlessly piercing Xu Zheng with it.

It was a special needle that started to extract the 'true blood' in Xu Zheng's body after stabbing him. True blood wasn't ordinary fresh blood, and it wasn't the blood essence cultivators possessed either. Even the mister didn't know what sea urchin warriors meant when talking about 'true blood', but it was bound to be something found inside blood, right?

Xu Zheng clenched his teeth and endured the pain. "Don't get ahead of yourself... this is the territory of the Illusory Sword School... since you used vicious tactics, don't blame for doing the same!"

Although the Illusory Sword School was just a small school, it still had its defensive formation.

In the capacity of the school head, Xu Zheng had the means to activate the defensive barrier even in his weakened state. Right at this time, both the sea urchin warriors and the two servants were inside the Illusory Sword School and thus in the range of the formation.

"All of you, die!" Xu Zheng didn't hesitate and immediately activated the defensive barrier.

A burst of spiritual energy spread out, covering the whole Illusory Sword Sect.

This sudden burst of spiritual energy came from the spirit stones inside the treasure house. Ordinary spirit stones were usually stored inside the treasure house, and in times of need, the spiritual energy inside would be extracted by the formation, flowing out of the treasure house through the hidden channels.

The spiritual energy flowed like water and changed into terrifying sword qi under the effects of the defensive formation, getting ready to kill all the people inside the sect that weren't members of the Illusory Sword School.

"Hehe." The leader of the sea urchin warriors laughed and allowed Xu Zheng to activate the formation.

On the outside, the sect protecting formation activated.

Sword qi numbering in the thousands appeared in the sky and hovered above the Illusory Sword School, both thick and thin as well as long and short, ready to kill all the intruders. It felt as though myriad swords were about to rain from the sky, truly a magnificent scene.

Although it was just a small school, the Illusory Sword School had a few tricks up its sleeve.



However, the swords didn't attack the intruding sea urchin warriors who were currently killing the disciples of the Illusory Sword School.

Xu Zheng could induce the state of the defensive formation through a special technique.

At this time, he was dumbfounded. Why? Why isn't the defensive

formation attacking the enemies?

"You must be confused, right? No need to be this surprised," the servant said once more in a stiff voice. "In these two years, I secretly studied the defensive formation of the Illusory Sword School. The disciples of the Illusory Sword School are secretly branded after they joined the school. The function of this mark is to allow the defensive formation to tell between 'friends' and 'foes' once it's activated. A rather old-style model if you ask me... After knowing how it worked, cracking the defensive formation of your sect was rather easy. After all, fudging the system that differentiates between friends and foes isn't difficult."

"Right now, all the sea urchin warriors that entered the defensive formation have the same mark as the disciples of the Illusory Sword School. Therefore, they are treated as 'friends' by the formation and not as 'enemies'. There is nothing too complicated about that."

Xu Zheng opened his eyes wide and pointed his trembling finger toward the servant.

"Are you done with the explanations? If you're done, it's time to finish this up!" The leader of the sea urchin warriors extracted the needle from Xu Zheng's body.

After losing all his 'true blood', Xu Zheng became even weaker. Now, he didn't even have the strength to lift a finger.

"Yes. Leave the rest to us," the servant said in a robot-like voice. Then, he took a step forward and pierced Xu Zheng's chest with his hand.

His hand was like a straw, and after a few seconds, he extracted all the blood from Xu Zheng's body, turning him into a mummified corpse.

The school head of the Illusory Sword School was dead...

"Let's go. Since both the Chu Family and those powerful

cultivators have yet to notice our actions, let's activate the sacrifice offering formation to condense the Blood Sea Jade!" the two servants said to the sea urchin warriors.

Unfortunately, the blood demon died ahead of time. Otherwise, he would have led it here at the Illusory Sword School and made it kill these sea urchin warriors together with the disciples of the Illusory Sword School.

Although it was going to swallow down the corpses of the sea urchin warriors, the mister still had the means to retrieve most of their bodies from the stomach of the blood demon.

With that, he could have refined even more Blood Sea Jades.

However, he didn't expect that a blood demon of the Sixth Stage would be such a trash and die in just a few minutes.

Whatever... this time, he had no choice but to let these sea urchin warriors live. The next time, he would surely turn them into Blood Sea Jade!



In that smelted cave fifty kilometers away from the Chu Family.

The mister opened his eyes. For the time being, he had no further instructions for the two puppets inside the Illusory Sword School. Once the sea urchin warriors were done killing the people inside the school, he would control the puppets again and activate the sacrifice offering formation, turning everyone into Blood Sea Jade.

"It's time for the main event!" The mister took the scroll of the 'sword technique' from the black dragon. Soon after, a servant came out of the smelted cave, bringing with him the remaining three scrolls.

With the help of the puppet, the mister unfurled Li Tiansu's four huge paintings.

The mister had an excited expression on his face. Next, he took

out from his clothes two tubes of fresh blood. It was the blood of the traitorous disciples of the Chu Family.

"The door hiding the secret of 'immortality' is about to open!" the mister muttered in a low voice and splashed the blood of the two traitors above the paintings.

In the next moment, the canvases lit up and emanated light in all directions!

"Ooooh, this feeling... As expected, the blood of the direct descendants of the Chu Family was the key to the secret hiding in the paintings?" the mister said excitedly. As he saw it, the doors of immortality were about to open for him.

The Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor Realm? Tsk. Let alone that, even the Sixth, Seventh, and Eighth Stages weren't much! He was very ambitious and aimed to become an 'Immortal'!



In the meantime.

Song Shuhang and Venerable White flew for a long time and finally managed to find the Illusory Sword School with much difficulty... Not asking about the position of the Illusory Sword School before leaving was a big mistake.

When they arrived in the airspace of the Illusory Sword School, they saw three familiar figures standing on top of a huge cloud-like magical treasure hovering above the Illusory Sword School.

These three figures were precisely Venerable Spirit Butterfly, Soft Feather, and Liu Jianyi.

"Eh? Those are Venerable Spirit Butterfly and Soft Feather," Song Shuhang said. What were they doing in this place?

"Senior Song!" Soft Feather cheerfully called out as soon as she saw Song Shuhang, waving at him.

As expected, bald-headed edition Senior Song was very amusing.

When she saw Song Shuhang's familiar kind-looking features, Soft Feather felt a warm feeling.



Venerable White descended on the cloud together with Song Shuhang.

On the cloud, Venerable Spirit Butterfly turned his head around and said to Venerable White, "Fellow Daoist White?"

Venerable White faintly smiled at Venerable Spirit Butterfly and said, "Fellow Daoist Spirit Butterfly, how are you?"

One was an extremely handsome man that no one dared to approach, while the other was like an immortal banished to the mortal world and didn't seem to belong to this world.

Although the two had communicated through letters before, it was their first time meeting face to face.

"Fellow Daoist White is interested in these sea urchin warriors as well?" Venerable Spirit Butterfly asked.

Venerable White shook his head and said, "I was going toward a place with little friend Song Shuhang and decided to pass here while at it. Then... eh?"

"Fellow Daoist White, what happened?" Venerable Spirit Butterfly asked in puzzlement.

"I was careless earlier and messed up while engraving some runes." Venerable White held his chin.

"?" Song Shuhang.

"?" Soft Feather.

"?" Liu Jianyi.

"?" Venerable Spirit Butterfly.

Just as everyone was confused, Venerable White shot up into the sky with a 'pew~'.

His speed was extremely fast, and he turned into a small black dot in the blink of an eye.

"Fellow Daoist Spirit Butterfly, I'll return in a while... I hope you'll take care of little friend Song Shuhang in the meantimeee~"

"...Timeeeeeee~" Venerable White's last syllable echoed throughout the sky.

Venerable White had flown away.

Chapter 412: Scattering sword qi

"What is Fellow Daoist White trying to do?" Venerable Spirit Butterfly asked in puzzlement.

Soft Feather and Liu Jianyi curiously looked at Song Shuhang.

Song Shuhang rubbed his temples. After pondering for a moment, he thought of a possibility... Venerable White engraved the disposable Song Shuhang 1S edition on the scroll of the 'sword technique' earlier, right? Is it possible that something went wrong with the 1S edition and instead of bringing that mister over here, it was Venerable White that got 'pewed~' away?

However, the disposable Song Shuhang 1S edition is something that Venerable White himself created! Therefore, he should be able to easily stop it if he wanted to, right? Did he decide against stopping it as not to waste this opportunity?

"Senior Song, what game was Venerable White playing?" Soft Feather asked out of curiosity.

"I'm not sure either," Song Shuhang said. "Perhaps he went to catch a certain person... it should be that guy we met in the secret room of the Chu Family."

"Oh? Fellow Daoist White is also interested in that guy? Such being the case, we better speed things up. I'm also very interested in him and his teleportation technique." Venerable Spirit Butterfly heartily laughed.

Perhaps it was time to lit a candle for that mister. He could die without regrets now that he had managed to draw the attention of two Venerables at the same time.

"Senior Spirit Butterfly, why are you here at the Illusory Sword School?" Song Shuhang asked.

Earlier, he thought that Venerable Spirit Butterfly and Soft Feather had gone to meet the other seniors. He didn't expect that

he would find them here at the Illusory Sword School.

When the nearby Liu Jianyi heard these words, he forced a smile.

Then, he quickly explained the situation to Song Shuhang.

Earlier, when the lessons finished and he left school—cough, when the battle on the Grievance Settling Platform finished, Liu Jianyi quietly followed the two Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperors that helped the Illusory Sword School to beat them up.

After beating them up and taking some pictures as a souvenir, he decided to return to the Grievance Settling Platform.

However, something unexpected happened on the way back.

Thirty sea urchin warriors of the Fourth Stage screamed like madmen and charged toward him, blocking his way. The reason was probably the Mark of the Sea Urchin Slayer on Jianyi's body...

The fact that the sea urchin warriors wanted to kill him wasn't such a big deal. After all, they were sea urchin warriors of the Fourth Stage, and Liu Jianyi could kill them after using his full strength.

Aside from the racial ability to hold extreme grudges, sea urchin warriors had developed a powerful 'taunting ability' due to the <Sea Urchin Warriors' 20 Years of Mandatory Education Manual>.

After finding Liu Jianyi, they started to recite their usual sentences, 'Arrogant fellow, you unexpectedly dared to kill another sea urchin warrior!', 'If you obediently let us cut your head off, we'll forgive your family members!', 'Not only you, even your family members and the people related to you, as well as the members of your sect, will be killed!'...

Liu Jianyi secretly heaved a sigh and prepared to reveal his strength of the Fifth Stage Realm to kill these guys.

But just as he was about to make his move, a red-colored spirit butterfly suddenly appeared next to the thirty sea urchin warriors.

The spirit butterfly lightly bumped into the bodies of the sea urchin warriors, and in the next moment, they all changed into fireworks, exploding and lighting up the sky with beautiful lights.

Immediately after, Venerable Spirit Butterfly appeared out of nowhere while maintaining a straight expression on his face. Next to him was also an overjoyed Soft Feather.

Although he considered Liu Jianyi a sluggard, he was still someone that Venerable Spirit Butterfly trained since he was a kid. Even though the sloth cancer of this disciple of his made his liver ache, he still considered him as a member of his family.

Therefore, how could Venerable Spirit Butterfly not be angry when the sea urchin warriors said things such as: 'we'll kill your family', 'destroy your sect', 'kill all the people related to you', and so on?

Today, it was already the second time that someone said they would kill his family... hence, Venerable Spirit Butterfly made his move and immediately killed the sea urchin warriors.

Then, he brought Soft Feather and Liu Jianyi along as he followed the traces of the sea urchin warriors, stopping in the airspace of the Illusory Sword School.



After hearing this much, Song Shuhang wiped the sweat from his forehead... he felt that it was already a miracle that a race such as the sea urchin warriors managed to survive until now.

Was it possible that they were a race with an incredible reproductive capacity? After laying the eggs, they would mature in one year, and each nest had like a hundred eggs with a survival rate of over 90%?

At this time, Soft Feather happily said, "Senior Song, Senior Song! When Venerable White shot up in the sky earlier, was that the disposable meteor sword?"

Miss Soft Feather's interests were somewhat different than other people's.

"It wasn't the disposable meteor sword. That one should be even more exciting," Song Shuhang replied. Even Senior Seven screamed with all his might when he shot up into the sky with the coiling flight feature!

"Then, what's the name of the disposable flying sword Senior White used to fly away?" Soft Feather looked at Song Shuhang with her bright eyes full of curiosity.

"It should be called '1S edition'." Song Shuhang forced a smile... as for the full name, he wouldn't say it even if he were beaten to death.

"Magnificent!" Soft Feather sighed with emotion and said, "I really wish I could try the disposable meteor sword too!"

The nearby Venerable Spirit Butterfly smiled at this daughter and said, "Soft Feather, I've already analyzed the principle behind the disposable meteor sword. Once we return to the Spirit Butterfly Island, I'll manufacture a flying sword with a similar feature just for you."

"Good, good!" Soft Feather continued. "However, I still want to try Senior White's disposable meteor sword. When we meet him in a while, I have to ask him to give me another 'gift'. All the seniors in the group managed to fly happily, but unfortunately, I couldn't receive my gift in time."

The corner of Venerable Spirit Butterfly's mouth twitched.

Song Shuhang didn't know whether to laugh or cry. Venerable White developed the disposable meteor sword series as a punishment. How would Senior White react if Soft Feather were to treat it as something fun and enjoy it?

After thinking this much, Song Shuhang was really looking forward to seeing the scene.

Cough, wait a moment. Soft Feather completely sidetracked them from the topic.

Since he arrived at the Illusory Sword School, should he take a look at the situation?

Had the sea urchin warriors already started to kill the members of the Illusory Sword School?

After thinking this much, Song Shuhang moved toward the edge of the cloud and cautiously looked downward... there was no guardrail on the edge of the cloud, hence he didn't feel too safe. Someday in the future, when he could ride a flying sword, he would get one that was as big as a door and had a railing on all sides, even above if necessary! He would feel much safer with that.

After looking in the direction of the Illusory Sword School, Song Shuhang furrowed his brows.

A thick layer of fog covered the whole Illusory Sword School, and it was impossible to tell what was going on inside. After seeing this layer of fog, Song Shuhang recalled the strange soporiferous fog in the core area of the Chu Family.

Therefore, he asked, "Senior Spirit Butterfly, did the sea urchin warriors start to attack the Illusory Sword School?"

"Yes, they already started. That dense fog suddenly appeared and knocked out many of the disciples of the Illusory Sword School. The sea urchin warriors seized the opportunity and killed them. However, some of the disciples were able to react in time and took some countermeasures. They're currently fighting against the sea urchin warriors inside the mist," Venerable Spirit Butterfly replied.

"They already started? Such being the case, aren't you going to intervene?" Song Shuhang asked out of curiosity. Wasn't Venerable Spirit Butterfly planning to kill all the sea urchin warriors?

"I'll wait until the Illusory Sword School and the sea urchin

warriors are finished with their battle," Venerable Spirit Butterfly replied.

Given his strength, he didn't really need to wait for both parties to weaken themselves before taking care of the sea urchin warriors, right?

Song Shuhang was confused at first, but very soon, he remembered something... from a certain point of view, the Illusory Sword School was the 'enemy' of Soft Feather's good friend, Chu Chunying!

As expected, Venerable Spirit Butterfly continued and said, "Little friend Shuhang, there is some friendship between the Chu Family and me, and Soft Feather has a good relationship with a girl that lives there. Since the Illusory Sword School antagonized the Chu Family, the fact that I'm only acting as a bystander should be already good enough for them. Therefore, I'll by no means intervene to help them. That's why everyone says that I fuss over every single detail!"

When he said the last sentence, Venerable Spirit Butterfly had a very satisfied look on his face.

"..." Song Shuhang.

Senior, saying that you fuss about every single detail is hardly a compliment! Is it really alright for you to be so proud of it?

Song Shuhang stretched his neck and tried to look toward the mist-covered Illusory Sword School.

Since Venerable Spirit Butterfly had no intention to make his move, the Illusory Sword School seemed to be doomed.

"Eh? Father, is that why we are standing here and watching the battle amongst the sea urchin warriors and the Illusory Sword School?" Soft Feather immediately understood what was going on after hearing her father's words. "Father, please stop acting as a bystander and take care of them already! Once these sea urchins

are taken care of, we can follow behind Senior White. I think it will be much more interesting down there... moreover, the Illusory Sword School already lost the battle on the Grievance Settling Platform and isn't a threat to the Chu Family anymore!"

After hearing these words, Venerable Spirit Butterfly smiled and nodded. "What Soft Feather said is reasonable. Such being the case, let's take care of the sea urchin warriors below!"

"..." Song Shuhang.

Senior Spirit Butterfly, didn't you just say that you will 'by no means intervene to help them'? Where did your 'by no means' go?!

Perhaps... the Illusory Sword School might survive this calamity?



Venerable Spirit Butterfly moved toward the edge of the rosy cloud. The wind blew and made his long robe flutter. No matter from which angle you looked, he looked handsome.

Soon after, he said to his disciple Liu Jianyi, "Jianyi, watch closely. What I'm about to display next is another transformation of our Spirit Butterfly Sword Technique. It's completely different than the Butterfly-Phoenix Transformation."

A good teacher would seize each opportunity to teach his students.

After saying this much, Venerable Spirit Butterfly used his finger as a sword and slashed in the direction of the Illusory Sword School, releasing a stream of sword qi.

The sword qi transformed into a huge spirit butterfly. The wings of the butterfly were imbued with sword qi.

"Scatter!" Venerable Spirit Butterfly lightly shouted.

In the next moment, the huge spirit butterfly started to split, changing into countless small butterflies that filled the sky. Each butterfly was made of sharp sword qi.

Chapter 413: Dying while transforming

In the Illusory Sword School.

The sea urchin warriors went on a killing spree. They only needed casual attacks to kill the unconscious disciples of the Illusory Sword School.

Even those disciples that were valiantly fighting back couldn't show their full strength due to the strange fog. At this time, they could only use 60% of their strength and were thus no match for the sea urchin warriors.

"This time, we'll be able to collect a lot of 'true blood'. Once we offer it to His Highness the Sea King, he'll be very happy and bestow even more power to us sea urchin warriors, making us even stronger!" the sea urchin warrior in charge of collecting the 'true blood' said happily.

But right at this time...

Countless multicolored butterflies swarmed into the fog, changing the whole Illusory Sword School into a valley of butterflies; it looked incredibly beautiful.

When the sea urchin warriors saw the butterflies, they immediately got vigilant. "Butterflies? Where did they come from?"

A toxic fog was filling the whole area, and small creatures like butterflies would immediately die after coming in contact with it. However, these multicolored butterflies were happily dancing in the airspace of the Illusory Sword School without being affected at all.

It was very strange!

At this time, one of the sea urchin warriors extracted his pointed needle from his body and stabbed toward a nearby butterfly.

However, his attack was useless. It was skillfully dodged before it could even reach the butterfly.

The attack of this sea urchin warrior gave birth to a chain reaction...

In the next moment, all the butterflies filling the sky started to move and changed into countless lights, simultaneously slitting the throats of the sea urchin warriors.

Fresh blood splattered... and the multicolored butterflies flapped their wings, happily dancing in the sky.

The sea urchin warriors below were all decapitated, and their bodies loudly fell to the ground. At this time, their eyes were still filled with an incredulous look.

Aside from the leader of the sea urchin warriors who was standing in Xu Zheng's courtyard and was thus far from the rest, all the remaining sea urchin warriors that invaded the Illusory Sword School were killed.

In the sky, Song Shuhang looked at Venerable Spirit Butterfly's powerful attack and sighed with emotion. He didn't expect that sword qi could be split up like that and used in such a way. Venerable Spirit Butterfly was worthy of being an existence of the Venerable rank.

Inside Xu Zheng's room, the leader of the sea urchin warriors who just survived the calamity bellowed, "What's happening?!"

Indeed, what was happening?

Where did these fearful butterflies come from? They managed to behead all the sea urchin warriors in just one blow!

Then, he thought of a possibility!

He swiftly turned his head around and stared at the mister's two

servants. "It was you!"

Since the beginning, the leader of the sea urchin warriors was somewhat wary of this mister.

He was vicious and capable of doing anything. Moreover, the tricks he used were rather eccentric. As the leader of the sea urchins saw it, only this mister could have made these strange butterflies appear in this place.

Truly infuriating! At first, he thought that they could maintain an 'each takes what they need' relationship since there was no conflict of interest among them, but he didn't expect that this guy would still make a move against them!

"If I were to say that it wasn't my doing... would you believe me?" the puppet said in a robot-like voice.

The mister was still inside the smelted cave, examining those four paintings. When he splashed the blood of the disciple of the Chu Family on them, they started to emanate a blinding light. But after that, they didn't react at all. Therefore, the mister was a bit confused... and right at that time, he induced through the puppet that something strange was happening inside the Illusory Sword School.

The mister furrowed his brows. Although he wanted to kill the sea urchin warriors and turn them into the foundation of the Blood Sea Jade... what happened earlier wasn't his doing!

"Dammit! As expected, it was your doing! Just wait and see. Since you provoked us sea urchin warriors, we'll definitely kill your family!" the leader of the sea urchin warriors bellowed.

The mister in the smelted cave was speechless.

Without waiting for him to explain further, the mad sea urchin warrior brutally punched the two puppets.

The puppets were only there to operate the 'sacrifice offering formation' and didn't have any fighting capacity. Therefore, how

could they resist someone that had the strength of the Fourth Stage?

After a few punches, the bodies of the puppets were full of holes and fresh blood gushed out.

With the servants dying, the contact between the Illusory Sword School and the mister was cut off.

"F*ck!" the mister said gloomily. Then, he looked once more at the four scrolls in front of him. Dammit! Just wait until I discover the secret hidden in these scrolls... then, I'll turn all these sea urchin warriors into Blood Sea Jade!



After destroying the two puppets, the leader of the sea urchin warriors clenched his teeth.

If that mister was thinking of taking care of him with those butterflies, he was too naive!

He still had a final secret technique to preserve his life!

Right now, the surrounding area was filled either with the branding blood his companions left behind or the 'true blood' they gathered earlier.

With these two things around, it was all good.

With the secret technique, the leader of the sea urchin warriors could use the branding blood of his companions as a 'sacrificial altar' to offer the 'true blood' to the mysterious and powerful Sea King. Thanks to the offering, he could obtain a formidable power from the Sea King.

Since there was a lot of true blood around, the quantity of power he would receive would also be very large!

Unfortunately, using this method would waste a lot of 'true blood' and wasn't as effective as carrying out the offering on a real altar in the depths of the sea.

But at this time, he had no time for such thoughts.

The leader of the sea urchin warriors got ready to activate the secret technique. He took out a deluxe edition of the 《Sea Urchin Warriors' 20 Years of Mandatory Education Manual》 from his clothes and flipped through it, starting to recite the text on a certain page.

This paragraph was written with special characters and wasn't in human language.

The leader of the sea urchin warriors started to read this paragraph about sacrificial offerings in a high and resounding voice... after receiving the strength of the great Sea King, he would go to the place where that mister was hiding and kill him, avenging his comrades!

While carrying out the transaction with that mister earlier, he secretly left a mark on his body so that he could find his position at any time.

"Sea urchin warriors mustn't be trifled with!"

The branding blood of his dead companions became the base of the sacrificial altar, and the true blood they collected with much difficulty became the sacrificial offering.

"Come forth, strength of the great Sea King!" The leader of the sea urchin warriors raised his hands toward the sky.

Very soon, he felt the great Sea King answering to his offering.

Come, come, come!

The great Sea King accepted his offering of true blood and bestowed upon him his power!

The leader of the sea urchin warriors felt his body was full of energy.

The power was endlessly pouring inside his body and strengthening him.

Thereupon, he exited Xu Zheng's courtyard with large strides and looked at the sky filled with butterflies. The ground was still littered with the corpses of his companions.

"Come, come, come! I'll tear that bastard to shreds!" The eyes of the leader of the sea urchins were bloodshot. He raised the ⟨Sea Urchin Warriors' 20 Years of Mandatory Education Manual⟩ toward the sky and shouted at the butterflies in the sky, "The great Sea King bestowed upon me his power! Battle Transformation!"

Immediately after, the deluxe edition of the ⟨Sea Urchin Warriors' 20 Years of Mandatory Education Manual⟩ started to emit a dazzling light, resonating with the blood splattered all around.

Next, a strange power appeared out of nowhere and fell onto the body of the leader of the sea urchin warriors.

His clothes were wrapped by the strange power and changed into what resembled 'light'.

At the same time, he assumed a series of strange poses. It seemed he was using these poses to adapt to the power of the great Sea King and carry out the 'Battle Transformation'...?

High up in the sky, on the rosy cloud.

"Eh? It seems he is trying to transform?" Soft Feather said. She knew that many cultivators with special bloodlines could transform while facing a deadly situation.

Sea urchin warriors possessed the bloodline of 'monster sea urchins'. Was it possible that they could transform into huge sea urchins?

"..." Song Shuhang.

Song Shuhang gazed at the leader of the sea urchin warriors who was currently assuming all those weird poses. Considering that his

clothes had changed into 'light' as well, the whole scene was rather 'blinding'. Even a spectator such as him was feeling an incredible sense of shame while watching this scene unfold... just how mentally strong was the leader of the sea urchin warriors to assume all those cringey poses as though it was nothing?

Luckily, there wasn't any mysterious music playing in the background. Otherwise, other than his eyes going blind, his ears might have gone deaf too.

"He is the last one left. Do you want to wait for him to complete the transformation?" Venerable Spirit Butterfly asked.

"You can do as you please. By the way... Teacher, what is this 'Sea King' that guy mentioned?" Liu Jianyi said.

Venerable Spirit Butterfly replied, "I have no idea, but it might be some powerful aboriginal deity."

Song Shuhang added, "Senior, I feel that I can't keep watching this show."



In truth, even the state of mind of the leader of the sea urchin warriors below was in shambles.

What's happening? Why hasn't the power of the great Sea King allowed me to carry out the transformation?

Earlier, as long as he performed the ceremonial dance three times, the power of the great Sea King would pour inside his body and create a powerful armor of blood all around him!

But now, he had already performed the dance a few times, and the power of the Sea King had indeed started to pour inside his body... how come he couldn't complete the last step and condense the blood armor?



In the sky, Venerable Spirit Butterfly said straightforwardly,

"Hmm... I'm also finding it difficult to bear. Such being the case, let's kill him."

Then, he stretched out his finger, and tens of butterfly-shaped sword qi slashed toward the sea urchin warrior.

❄ ❄ ❄

The butterfly-shaped sword qi pierced the body of the sea urchin warrior, directly penetrating his light clothing.

"Aaaah!" the leader of the sea urchin warriors called out pitifully.

What was happening?

With the help of the blood armor, he would have been able to defend against these butterflies!

Was it possible that the power of the Sea King was delayed because they were on land and the offering wasn't thoroughly prepared?

"Aaaaaah!" Just as he was screaming, a pool of blood formed beneath his body...

He was unwilling, very unwilling!

Chapter 414: The eyeball of the Sea King

The dense fog covering the Illusory Sword School was dispersed by Venerable Spirit Butterfly's sword qi, which allowed Song Shuhang to see everything happening below clearly.

"Is he dead?" asked Song Shuhang.

Liu Jianyi replied, "Indeed!"

Dead both in soul and body—he couldn't be more dead than this.

Venerable Spirit Butterfly's fingers moved slightly, causing the sword qi in the form of butterflies that filled the airspace above the Illusory Sword School to dissipate and disappear without a trace. "It's over... let's go, we need to go to Fellow Daoist White and find that interesting guy."

Suddenly, Soft Feather called out, "Eh? Father, the guy below is still transforming!"

Actually, Soft Feather's reminder was unnecessary—Venerable Spirit Butterfly and Liu Jianyi already noticed the change below.

The leader of the sea urchin warriors that was clearly dead and had already stopped breathing suddenly stood up from the pool of blood.

To put it more accurately, it wasn't the leader himself that got up—a surge of energy that came out of nowhere supported his body, allowing it to move about like a puppet attached to a string.

Immediately after, the 'branding blood' and the 'true blood' gathered, flowing in the direction of the sea urchin warrior leader's corpse.



Song Shuhang asked curiously, "Could it be that he survived?"

Liu Jianyi shook his head. "Even his soul was destroyed by teacher's sword qi, so he can't be any more dead... Perhaps that

transformation was delayed for some reason and is only starting now?"

Soft Feather's interest was immediately piqued. "He's transforming, he's transforming! I'm really curious what he's going to transform into."

As Shuhang and company were speaking, the branding blood and the true blood on the ground of the Illusory Sword School transformed into streams of blood, twisting around the body of the leader of the sea urchin warriors.

In the blink of an eye, the streams of blood intertwined into an exquisite red full-body armor, tightly wrapping the body of the leader of the sea urchin warriors within it—it looked majestic.

The remaining streams of blood were gathered on his back, transforming into a blood-red cape.

Transformation... complete!

The corpse of this sea urchin warrior had both hands placed at its waist and was currently in the horse martial stance. Afterward, under the effect of the strange energy, it executed two punches...

If he hadn't made those embarrassing, strange movements during the transformation, he would have looked really cool in this armor.



"The transformation is complete? He looks rather cool!" Soft Feather stared at the cool-looking leader of the sea urchin warriors and said, "Can he move?"

"This fellow can continue fighting?" Song Shuhang also asked out of curiosity.

Liu Jianyi replied, "He shouldn't be able to, I guess... if he could continue fighting even after dying, that would be too awesome!"

Just think about it! If he didn't need to do anything and could

make use of the transformation and continue fighting even after death... then wouldn't it mean that Liu Jianyi could borrow the power of the transformation as well as do all kinds of things while asleep?

It would definitely be a good tool to slack off, wouldn't it?

* * *

Unfortunately, Liu Jianyi's expectations were betrayed.

After the corpse of the leader of the sea urchin warriors completed the transformation, it fell to the ground once again with a loud crash.

"Clang, clang, clang." The metal armor hit the ground with a loud noise.

Just as Liu Jianyi guessed, the transformation was delayed... the transformation power from the Sea King's body was sent over only after the leader of the sea urchin warriors died. Similarly, because of the delay, his corpse had to complete the whole transformation even though he was already dead.

After the transformation, the corpse continued to lie silently on the ground.

Such dedication!

Liu Jianyi immediately said disappointedly, "And here I thought it could move."

"Why would you hope for it to move, Senior Brother Jianyi?" asked Soft Feather out of curiosity.

Liu Jianyi sighed deeply and said, "Forget it. In any case, it can't move, so there's no meaning in talking about it."

* * *

After the corpse collapsed on the ground, the power inside the armor seemed to have realized the death of the host.

Hence, that surge of power from the 'Sea King' came once again from out of nowhere.

The blood armor came off the corpse. Thereafter, something akin to a 'space gate' appeared next to it.

The 'Sea King' or whatever it was seemed to want to retrieve the blood armor.



"Hmph, what a poser," said Venerable Spirit Butterfly from above the clouds.

He got to meet several guys that could use the power of 'space' today—it was originally an ability that could be used only by cultivators in the Ninth Stage Tribulation Transcender Realm. But today, it appeared a couple of times. It was indeed interesting.

However, Venerable Spirit Butterfly could tell that the guy on the other side of the gate was definitely not a Ninth Stage Tribulation Transcender. The space technique used by a Tribulation Transcender was much more superior to his.

"Just what kind of special method did he use to access the power of 'space'?"

Was it a formation, or some sort of ceremony? Or did he use a precious magical treasure like the guy he saw in the hidden room of the Chu Family?

Soft Feather looked at Venerable Spirit Butterfly and said, "Father's interest was piqued."

Venerable Spirit Butterfly had been researching the power of space for quite some time. Hence, any ability that did not belong to the Tribulation Transcender Realm and was related to space evoked his interest.

Thereafter, Venerable Spirit Butterfly took action—he reached out with his hand and pressed downward while aiming at the

blood-red armor.

Spiritual energy surged, descending onto the Illusory Sword School like a tsunami. In the blink of an eye, space seemed to solidify under Venerable Spirit Butterfly's spiritual energy.

The remaining surviving disciples of the Illusory Sword School suddenly crouched on the ground—they were being suppressed by the spiritual energy, unable to breathe.

As for that armor, it was also confined to its current location by Venerable Spirit Butterfly's power, unable to move.

Based on Venerable Spirit Butterfly's research on 'space' abilities, even though he was unable to use the power of space like Tribulation Transcenders, he could easily perform acts like interfering with teleportations and other tasks of similar levels.

"You want to take the armor back? It won't be this simple." Venerable Spirit Butterfly laughed and slightly raised his right hand.

The blood armor was pulled away and flew in Venerable Spirit Butterfly's direction.

Venerable Spirit Butterfly's actions offended the 'Sea King' hiding on the other end of the space gate—a roar was transmitted from there.

That roar was extremely fearsome; cultivators with low strength would simply lose their consciousness and fall to the ground upon hearing it.

"Haha, are you angry? If you are that mad... then come out from there!" said Venerable Spirit Butterfly without any fear.

On the other side, the roar of the Sea King slowly quieted down.

"From the looks of it, it seems you're unable to teleport here... Interesting." Venerable Spirit Butterfly made a grabbing motion with his right hand, and that exquisite blood armor ultimately

landed in his hand.

Thereafter, he quickly used several sealing techniques and sealed the armor inside and out.

"Roaaar!" From the other end of the space gate, the Sea King's angry voice resounded like thunder.

The space gate abruptly swelled to approximately double its original size, thereafter... a huge eye looked towards the rosy cloud above the Illusory Sword School from there.

Just the eyeball was already five meters in diameter. It was hard to imagine how big his entire body was.

"Finally willing to reveal yourself?" asked Venerable Spirit Butterfly.

Suddenly, the spiritual energy next to the space gate transformed into countless swords of qi, stabbing toward the eye of the 'Sea King'.

The sword qi pierced into the space gate, stabbing the enormous eyeball within it.

"Aaaaaah!" the Sea King screamed.

The sword qi was unable to hurt his eye, but it made him feel a lot of pain.

After screaming in rage, the Sea King's eye glared once again at Venerable Spirit Butterfly who was in the sky. Thereafter, he firmly shut the space gate.

Soft Feather said, "He escaped? I thought he would come out and fight 300 rounds with you, father."

"He seemed very strong. So this is the Sea King?" asked Liu Jianyi.

"He should be the Sea King. It's a shame we don't know much

about the situation on the other side; hence it's not advisable to attack them directly," Venerable Spirit Butterfly mumbled... otherwise, he would have leapt through the space gate and valiantly fought against the Sea King.

Even though the opposite party only revealed an eye, Venerable Spirit Butterfly induced that its strength was only at the Seventh Stage Venerable Realm.

"Forget it. The next time, we can capture more sea urchin warriors and study them to discover more about the Sea King and his origin," said Venerable Spirit Butterfly. Thereafter, he grabbed the blood armor, wanting to place it in his space storage equipment so that he could bring it back to the Spirit Butterfly Island to study it.

But just as he was trying to store the armor, he realized that no matter how hard he tried, he could not squeeze it inside.

"Tsk, he has quite a number of tricks," said Venerable Spirit Butterfly.

If he could not store the blood armor into the space storage equipment, that would mean that the Sea King might suddenly make a move to retrieve the armor. In that case, it would be very troublesome.

"Forget it. If it's really not possible, I'll have to destroy it," said Venerable Spirit Butterfly.

The defense of the armor wasn't too strong and was only comparable to that of the Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor Realm. It was not difficult for Venerable Spirit Butterfly to smash it to smithereens by himself.



As soon as Venerable Spirit Butterfly completed his sentence.

In midair, the space gate suddenly opened again, and the Sea King's enormous eyeball appeared once more. This time, he

hurriedly attacked—a white ray of light shot out from his eye, aiming towards Venerable Spirit Butterfly.

The armor seemed to be of great importance to him.

"Haha." Venerable Spirit Butterfly flicked his finger, and an ancient bronze mirror appeared before him, easily blocking the attack of the enormous eye.

Thereafter, Venerable Spirit Butterfly violently punched the blood-red armor.

The scarlet armor immediately got smashed to smithereens...

"Hiss..." The Sea King's painful cry came from the other side of the gate. It felt as though the thing that got smashed into smithereens was not the armor but his own body.

After he let out a painful cry, the Sea King looked bitterly at Venerable Spirit Butterfly before shutting the space gate once again.

Venerable Spirit Butterfly stood on the clouds, not moving at all. A moment later, he laughed and said, "Successfully marked."

Earlier on, when the Sea King appeared once again, Venerable Spirit Butterfly quietly left a 'position tracking' mark on the other party.

Even though the other party might immediately detect the mark and destroy it, it didn't matter—Venerable Spirit Butterfly needed but a brief moment to lock onto his location.

At this time... the pieces of the broken blood-red armor scattered on the rosy cloud, and a few of them landed next to Song Shuhang.

Chapter 415: Summoning Venerable White!

Song Shuhang squatted down and picked up one of the pieces of the armor.

Earlier, he saw that the armor was created from a mass of blood. But now, aside from the color, it had absolutely nothing to do with it! This was something akin to alchemy!

Song Shuhang felt that it was rather interesting. Therefore, he asked, "Senior Spirit Butterfly, are these fragments of any use to you?"

"No. After the armor broke, all the strange energy inside dispersed. It lost all its research value," Venerable Spirit Butterfly casually replied.

Song Shuhang played with the piece of the armor in his hands and asked in a melodious voice, "Oh, can I take these fragments then?"

Venerable Spirit Butterfly smiled and said, "Sure."

"Thank you, Senior." Song Shuhang picked four large fragments and tried to fit them inside his 'size-reducing purse'. After the armor broke and the mysterious energy inside dispersed, Shuhang was able to successfully store the fragments inside his purse.

Venerable Spirit Butterfly secretly shot a glance at Song Shuhang's size-reducing purse.

It had the shape of an adorable rabbit? It was even cuter than Soft Feather's purse! Then, he recalled the scene where Song Shuhang was dressed up as a woman... from a certain viewpoint, this little friend Song Shuhang really made him feel relieved!

Venerable Spirit Butterfly's mood got much better. "Sit tight. We'll head toward Fellow Daoist White now."

The cloud-shaped magical treasure accelerated and flew toward

that mister's underground smelted cave.



At this time, inside True Monarch Yellow Mountain's palace-shaped magical treasure.

The fellow daoists of the Nine Provinces Number One Group were sharing the insights they got while fighting the blood demon. Unexpectedly, strange phenomena appeared once more.

Just as his fellow daoists were happily discussing, True Monarch Yellow Mountain quietly left the crowd.

He cautiously moved toward a room on the upper floor. A pitiful guy was locked in there... this person was scammed by that shady fortune teller and reduced to poverty, as well as beaten by Fairy Lychee when he mistook her for Copper Trigram. The name of this pitiful person was Deng Yima.

True Monarch Yellow Mountain opened the door and entered.

Deng Yima had an unyielding expression on his face. At this time, his strength had been sealed, and he was tied up and thrown on a bed. He still refused to believe that the 'Fairy Lychee' he saw back then was just a disguise Immortal Master Copper Trigram used... how could there be such an incredible disguising technique in the world?

In his heart, he felt that none of those guys were honest people.

After seeing True Monarch Yellow Mountain stealthily enter the room, he felt even more uneasy. What was he planning to do?

"Fellow Daoist Deng Yima, no need to be anxious. I'm True Monarch Yellow Mountain, you should have heard of me, right?" True Monarch Yellow Mountain took a chair and sat down. In the Chinese world of cultivators, True Monarchs were akin to celebrities. Even Immortal Fairy Bie Xue's 'Immortal Feast' wouldn't lack a guest such as him.

Deng Yima shot a glance at True Monarch Yellow Mountain... this man indeed resembled the famous 'Senior Yellow Mountain'...

"What does True Monarch need of me?" Deng Yima asked. Although he wasn't sure if this person was really 'True Monarch Yellow Mountain', given his strength, he was definitely a True Monarch.

True Monarch Yellow Mountain faintly smiled and said, "I wanted to ask you how many of those pellets you obtained in the Black Tiger Secret Realm do you have left?"

"Eh?" Deng Yima looked at True Monarch Yellow Mountain in puzzlement.

True Monarch Yellow Mountain continued, "I'm very interested in those pellets. Therefore, if you're willing to sell them, state your price."

"You are interested in those pellets? I had six of them, but I used one when I was testing them and one earlier... hence I have four left." Deng Yima was a sincere person, and his chubby face accentuated this point even more.

True Monarch Yellow Mountain replied, "From what I see, you also seem interested in selling them, right? Such being these case, do you already have a price in mind? Go ahead and tell me."

"I'll inform you beforehand that my price will be very high," Deng Yima said. He had no intention of selling the pellets if the price was too low.

"Fellow Daoist, just speak your mind. The transaction can be carried out only if both parties are willing. After all, I am someone that will not buy or sell under coercion." True Monarch Yellow Mountain comforted him.

Deng Yima clenched his teeth and said, "I'll say it then! I want 100,000 spirit stones of the Fifth Stage!"

Spirit stones were classified according to the quantity and purity

of the spiritual energy inside, and just like cultivators, they had nine stages in total. Generally speaking, if a cultivator of a certain stage used the spirit stones of the equivalent stage, the effects would be much better since there would be no waste of spiritual energy.

The price was obviously lower than the value of the family property Deng Yima lost. However, it could at least compensate for some of his losses, and he would have enough money to buy a suitable flying sword. After that, he wouldn't have to go around on that Superman-shaped flying sword anymore.

However, this price was still very high and unreasonable... when he tried to sell the pellets inside the sect, people were willing to pay him at most 10,000 spirit stones for five of them!

"The price is reasonable." True Monarch Yellow Mountain nodded and said, "In that case, let's simply carry out the transaction with cash!"

Yellow Mountain was especially rich these days... not long ago, he discovered a vein of spirit stones on a certain satellite. The purity of the spirit stones was also very high.

After seeing that the opposite party replied so straightforwardly, Deng Yima was stunned... from the looks of it, this man would have accepted even if he had added a few more spirit stones!

Is it possible that I sold those pellets at a loss? Are they really that valuable?

But since he had already stated his price, it would be embarrassing to go back on his word now. And if he were to anger this True Monarch, turning him away, wouldn't he be left with nothing?

"Deal!" Deng Yima said at last. "I ask Senior Yellow Mountain to untie my bindings!"

True Monarch Yellow Mountain happily freed Deng Yima and

removed the seal blocking his spiritual energy.

Afterward, the duo carried out the transaction.

"Fellow Daoist Deng is a really straightforward person." After taking the four pellets, True Monarch Yellow Mountain took out a fine flying sword of the Fourth Stage from his sleeve, giving it to Deng Yima. "I've heard from Fellow Daoist Liu Long that your flying sword had some problems. Since I have a spare flying sword with a good flying speed, I decided to gift it you."

Deng Yima took the flying sword with a grateful expression on his face. Soon after, he bid farewell to True Monarch Yellow Mountain.

Before leaving, he beat around the bush for a while and asked True Monarch Yellow Mountain about Medicine Master's address.

It seemed that his next stop was Medicine Master's place.

True Monarch Yellow Mountain squeezed the four pellets between his finger... if he wasn't mistaken, these four pellets were a priceless treasure related to the power of 'time'.

In a while, he was planning to ask the Venerables of the group to assemble and study these gadgets together.



Inside that smelted cave fifty kilometers away from the Chu Family.

The mister dripped the blood of the disciples of the Chu Family on the scrolls once more.

Soon after, the four scrolls lit up once again, emitting a blinding light!

"The secret concealed inside the scrolls is surely related to the lineage of the Chu Family.... but how can I uncover it?" the mister said, somewhat worried.

He only knew that the key to immortality was hidden inside the

scrolls, and he was sure that this key didn't consist in comprehending the 'sword technique'!

The key should be something more 'material'.

Just as he was in deep thoughts... something exploded on top of the cave!

What's happening?

The mister raised his head in surprise and looked toward the place the explosion came from.

Soon after, he saw a celestial figure descend from the hole in the ceiling.

The celestial figure was so perfect that words alone weren't enough to describe it. The mister felt that it wasn't exaggerated to consider this figure the very embodiment of 'beauty', 'handsomeness', and 'perfection'.

Perhaps because the figure was too perfect or perhaps because it possessed an incredible charm, the mister couldn't find it a threat even though it just destroyed the ceiling of his cave and rushed inside.

Finally, the figure stopped midair, stepping into the air without the aid of any power.

"Eh? I've finally arrived?" Venerable White shook his arms and looked all around. Soon after, his vision fell on the four scrolls... he was in the right place!

"Senior, can I ask why you came to my immortal cave?" The mister greeted Venerable White. He had managed to recover his senses with much difficulty. At the same time, he quietly mustered the strength of the blood pond behind, getting ready to attack Senior White at any time.

"Let me explain..." Venerable White coughed and continued, "I messed up a little while engraving a rune... hence I have to

congratulate you for gathering the four scrolls of the 'sword technique'. After gathering them, you managed to summon me here!"

The mister was speechless.

Just what the hell was going on?

Venerable White also added, "Now that you summoned me, I'll seize the opportunity to conveniently take away the scrolls."

"No way!" the mister bellowed. Then, he pounced toward the scrolls and activated the power of the blood pond to attack Venerable White, shouting, "These scrolls belong to me, and no one will be able to them away from m—"

"Slap!"

Venerable White gave him a resounding slap in the face. The mister flew across the air, performing thirty-two and a half rotations before crashing against the wall of the smelted cave.

What happened a moment ago? He didn't even see when the opposite party attacked!

In the next moment, he saw the figure in white stretch out its hand and collect the four scrolls, starting to flutter in the air once more. The mister was inwardly cursing; it took him so much effort to gather those scrolls, and now, someone stole them!

"It's time to go. Goodbye, Fellow Daoist." Venerable White waved his hand at the mister and prepared to leave.

But after rising to the height of two meters, he suddenly stopped.

His eyes fell on the 'black dragon puppet' inside the smelted cave! That was truly an exquisite puppet!

It seemed it would be rather interesting to disassemble it....

Thereupon, Venerable White descended to the ground and squatted beside the puppet.

"Can I disassemble it?" Venerable White shot a glance at the mister.

But without waiting for his reply, Senior White muttered to himself, "I forgot that I don't need to ask him. After all, he's an enemy."

Chapter 416: It seems it will be very interesting to disassemble you

"Run! Get away from this place!" the mister bellowed. He only needed a thought to control the black dragon puppet.

After that slap, he knew that he was no match for that man in white clothes that had suddenly barged into his smelted cave. Luckily, the black dragon puppet still had the 'Blood Sea Jade' inside. Hence, it could run away at supersonic speed.

This puppet was very valuable, and he couldn't let someone damage it!

After receiving its master's order, the black dragon puppet flapped its wings and rose into the sky. It was planning to run away at supersonic speed toward another secret immortal cave.

But just as it rose to the height of one meter, a slender hand gently pressed on its back.

Although the puppet frantically flapped its wings, it wasn't able to move at all!

Immediately after, another slender hand started to fiddle with the black dragon with its finger.

"Clang, clang, clang..." The sound of components being disassembled echoed.

In just a few seconds, the outer layer of the black dragon was disassembled, revealing the innards of the puppet.

Soon after, the Venerable White extracted the Blood Sea Jade from it.

"Thump~" As soon as it lost its source of power, the puppet crashed from the sky and fell by Venerable White's feet.

The mister, who was still mounted on the wall, had a

dumbfounded look on his face.

"This stone used as a source of energy was refined through evil and cruel techniques..." Venerable White said while casually putting away the Blood Sea Jade.

Next, he squatted beside the black dragon puppet and started to disassemble it. "Its structure is really interesting. It seems it was manufactured using the techniques of the Jet-Black Sect as a foundation together with some modern mechanical parts. A combination of the puppet technique of the Jet-Black Sect and modern technology... truly wonderful."

In the blink of an eye, the black dragon puppet was disassembled into a pile of mechanical parts, and the metallic skeleton of the dragon was revealed.

Venerable White reluctantly stopped and turned his head around, looking at the mister who was mounted on the wall. "Where did you get this black dragon-shaped puppet?"

The mister was trying to get out of the wall and froze after hearing this question.

It's not like he didn't want to reply... the problem was he couldn't.

Indeed, where did he exactly get this black dragon puppet from?

The mister himself had forgotten about the origin of this puppet. He remembered that it was his property and knew how to operate it, but that was it.

The mister was momentarily stunned.

"You don't want to reply? Forget it. Anyway, I've already comprehended the structure of this puppet," Venerable White muttered as he started to assemble the puppet back.

A few seconds later...

The mister finally managed to come out of the wall. He gently

jumped and returned to the smelted cave.

He furrowed his brows and looked at Venerable White's back... it took him so much effort to steal the paintings of the 'sword technique' from the Chu Family, and now, all of them had been snatched away. How could he possibly get them back?

Those paintings concealed the secret of immortality; he couldn't let go of them!

Should I fight back?

The mister started to slowly mobilize the power of the blood pond... My best opportunity to catch him off-guard is now that he's studying the black dragon puppet!

"Done, it's reassembled! This time, there is no problem with the parts, none were left out!" Venerable White suddenly laughed. He was extremely satisfied at this time.

In his front, the completely disassembled black dragon puppet was now assembled once more... however, it wasn't exactly the same as before. The mister noticed that several parts were assembled back the wrong way.

"It's unfortunate that I do not possess the mechanical puppet technique of the Jet-Black Sect. Even if I comprehended the structure of the black dragon, I'm unable to manufacture some of the parts on my own!" Venerable White said with a regretful face.

Although he could simply go to the Jet-Black Sect and purchase those parts, it was definitely not as cool as building the whole thing from scratch.

The mister was speechless. Such speed. It took him longer to disassemble it rather assembling it back!

"Very good. I'm done researching it, you can have the puppet back. Then, I'll take my leave... eh?" Venerable White had no intention to kill this guy and was planning to take his leave. After all, Fellow Daoist Spirit Butterfly was interested in him as well.

Hence, he decided to let him handle the situation.

But just as he turned his head, he noticed something that piqued his interest.

Due to the powerful slap from before... that mister's face had been smashed to pieces!

His face wasn't swollen as it should be. Instead, the external layer of skin was broken, revealing the black-colored metallic structure inside.

Earlier, when the mister was mounted on the wall of the smelted cave, Venerable White couldn't see his face properly. But now that he had come out of the wall, the broken part was fully visible.

Venerable White's eyes lit up.

Was this 'mister' a puppet as well?

He was very lifelike. Earlier, Venerable White didn't notice any difference between him and a real person. He had the aura of a living person, a cultivation of the Fourth Stage Realm, and looked exactly like a real person. He could even feel his soul fluctuate!

But when the outer layer of his skin was ruptured and the innards were revealed, Venerable White discovered that his face was made of mechanical parts!

Was it a puppet? An artificially created man? Or a cyborg?

No matter what he was, Venerable White found him very interesting!

When Venerable White stared at him like that, the mister stiffened a bit.

"Hello, you seem very interesting to disassemble. Do you mind if I disassemble you a bit?" Venerable White said.

"Ah?" The mister opened his eyes wide.

But without waiting for him to reply, Venerable muttered to

himself once more, "I forgot that I don't need to ask him. After all, he's an enemy."



In the sky, Venerable Spirit Butterfly and the others left the territory of the Illusory Sword School.

The cloud streaked across the sky at a speed that wasn't inferior to that of a flying sword. Very soon, they arrived above the smelted cave.

"It's that place down there. I can sense Fellow Daoist White's aura coming from there as well. Let's descend to the ground," Venerable Spirit Butterfly said.

But just as he finished his sentence...

Liu Jianyi said eagerly, "Teacher, let me go there first to check the situation!" If he could reach the place first, he could seize the opportunity to slack off for a few seconds~

After saying this much, he jumped down from the rosy cloud and headed toward the smelted cave.

Afterward, Soft Feather happily said, "Senior Song, let's go jump down as well!"

"Sure!" Song Shuhang replied.

Next... Soft Feather pulled Song Shuhang's hand and jumped from the cloud just like Liu Jianyi!

Eh?

Wait a moment!

At this time, there was a distance of at least 400-500 meters between the cloud they were standing on and the ground! This height was comparable to that of a hundred-storied building!

Shouldn't she have used some kind of technique before jumping down? Even if it's not a flying technique, at least something to

reduce the weight of the body! Or something to drop like a feather!

But Song Shuhang had yet to remind her about this matter when he felt a powerful force pull his wrist... a small cultivator of the Second Stage like Shuhang had no hope of resisting Soft Feather's strength!

Soon after, he heard the piercing-cold sound of the wind beside his ears...

"Ahahaha!" Soft Feather's laughter echoed in the midst of the wind. "I've always wanted to do some bungee jumping! It's truly wonderfuuuuul!"

Soft Feather... before performing bungee jumping, you have to tie a rope to your feet! Otherwise, you'd be just jumping to your death!

"Aaaaaaah~" a certain guy surnamed Song pitifully called out. He already suffered from acrophobia. Moreover, the symptoms were getting worse and worse every day.

"Ahahaha! Senior Song, are you also happy?" Soft Feather smiled.

Senior Song: "Aaaaaaaah~" Happy~? Not at all!

"Hehehe! As expected, Senior Song also likes bungee jumping! When I looked at those pictures you took while bungee jumping with Senior White, I noticed that Senior Song had such a radiant smile on his face," Soft Feather said happily.

Senior Song: 'Soft Feather, when you looked at those pictures with your bright eyes, did you really see my 'radiant smile'? Did you really see it?'

At this time, Senior Song felt his eyes tear up, and his nose was running... but he would never admit it. He would insist that those were merely tears that had suddenly flowed out of his eye sockets and entered his nostrils, that was it.

"Oh, right. Senior Song, let's take a picture as well." Soft Feather

took out her phone and adjusted the angle of the camera, saying, "Senior Song, make a smile."

Senior Song sniffled... since he had done this before, he was somewhat used to it! He could make it! He could take a photo high in the air!

Thereupon, he tried his best to squeeze out a happy smile.

"Click, click, click, click!" Soft Feather took four pictures at once!

"Ahahaha! It's so cool!" After taking the photos, Soft Feather adjusted the angle once more and took a photo where they were both upside-down. Unfortunately, they crossed those 500 meters very quickly and were already approaching the ground.

Soft Feather was forced to put her phone away. "The height this time wasn't enough... I couldn't enjoy myself properly! Senior Song, we must jump from an even higher place the next time! With that, we'll be able to take pictures from several other angles!"

"Aaaaaah~" Senior Song started to scream again.

On the cloud, Venerable Spirit Butterfly stiffly retracted his hand. Just now, he was thinking of performing some bungee jumping with his beloved daughter. After all, she had always wanted to practice this sport.

But his beloved daughter suddenly grabbed little friend Shuhang's hand and leapt down while the poor father was left on the cloud all alone, drying in the sun.

"Thump~"

At last, Song Shuhang and Soft Feather fell into a huge pond. They had managed to land successfully.

The reason they weren't injured after the fall was that Soft Feather used a small technique just before the crash.

Just as they were about to reach the ground, Song Shuhang felt

his body became lighter and lighter. Afterward, they lightly fell into the blood pond.

"Ugh! What's this thing?" Song Shuhang's mouth and nose were full with what resembled the smell of raw meat. Soon after, he discovered that he was inside a pond of boiling blood. All his clothes were dyed red.

Soft Feather stood up while inside the blood pond, but there was a pale layer of firefly-like glow keeping off the blood from her body.

Even if it seemed to be only ordinary women's clothing, what she was wearing was actually magical cultivators' clothing... it was surely something that had been custom-made for her!

Chapter 417: Senior Song, don't die!

"A blood pond... do people still build such things these days? Are they not afraid of being discovered by the monks from the Radiant Samsara Temple?" Soft Feather, who was clean from head to toe, climbed out from the blood pond.

Climbing out next to her was Song Shuhang who was dyed red by the blood. The two of them were in stark contrast.

After climbing out of the blood pond, Soft Feather saw Liu Jianyi standing still in front of her. She asked, "Senior Brother Liu, what are you doing?"

"Hmm?" Liu Jianyi slowly turned his head around and replied, "I'm looking at Senior White disassembling a person."

Song Shuhang replied, "What?"

He hurriedly took a step forward and looked in front.

Very soon, he saw the arrogant 'mister' he met in the Chu Family's secret room being pressed against the ground by Venerable White. Both of his hands and legs were dismantled by Venerable White.

At this moment, Venerable White was disassembling the mister's skull.

In the blink of Song Shuhang's eye, the mister's skull got opened.

However, what appeared before his eyes was not a human brain... but a refined electric circuit, and a thin transparent tube. Within the thin transparent tube, there was a blue energy liquid that was flowing slowly... was it true qi?

This 'mister' wasn't a human being?

When he was in the secret room of the Chu Family, Venerable Spirit Butterfly tore off both his arms, and one could see that there were mechanical components inside. At the time, Venerable Spirit

Butterfly thought that some parts of the mister's body were like that of a puppet.

But little did he expect that the mister's entire body was a mechanical puppet!

"How is this possible! Just how...!!" A shocked voice resounded.

It was the mister himself shouting—he saw his current physical state from the reflection in Venerable White's eyes. "How did my brain become like that!? Why is it like that? You devil, what did you do to me?!"

"Calm down, I merely disassembled the outer part of your head. I did not do anything else," Venerable White explained calmly. "You have always been a mechanical puppet."

"Impossible! How can I be a mechanical puppet? I am a disciple of the Thousand Hands Sect, She Lan! I have flesh and blood running through my veins; I have a father and a mother, how can I be a mechanical puppet?!" the mister shouted—he was extremely agitated. "I was heavily injured before; hence my hands and feet underwent a modification and turned into those of a puppet. But how can the rest of my body be mechanical... what kind of spell did you cast on me? It's an illusory technique, isn't it? You used an illusory technique on me, right?!"

His 'eyes' really became 'bloodshot'—it looked extremely realistic and lifelike.

Upon hearing this, Venerable White temporarily stopped disassembling the mister. He pinched his chin, seemingly thinking. This fellow is actually not aware that his entire body is a mechanical puppet?

Song Shuhang took a few steps and squatted down beside the mister, examining the structure of his body. "Artificial intelligence? A robot that possesses human feelings and always thought he was a human?"

Liu Jianyi chimed in, "There once was a pair of disciples from the Jet-Black Sect who could not have children. Hence, they meticulously created a 'mechanical puppet', nurturing it as their own child and constantly changing his body to become slightly bigger. With that, the puppet was allowed to have its own life experiences and mistook itself for a human being. Is this that kind of story?"

"No." Venerable White shook his head.

Soft Feather similarly came over and guessed, "Then, could it be a magical treasure that developed intelligence after cultivating? I heard that a lot of magical treasures can turn into intelligent weapons. Some high-level sentient treasures can be as intelligent as cultivators."

"It isn't a sentient treasure either. The structure of a sentient treasure is completely different from that of a human soul." As he was speaking, Venerable White lightly moved his finger, and the Meteor Sword at his waist started floating. The sword was acting like a pet and was attracted by Venerable White's finger, seeming very affectionate.

"My Meteor Sword has already developed some intelligence. If you try sensing for a little bit, you'd know that the difference between sentient weapons and the human soul is akin to the difference between ice and flames. Their properties are completely different."

Lastly, Venerable White guessed, "Perhaps this guy used some very extreme techniques on himself..."

"...like transforming his human body into a mechanical puppet. The lifespan of human beings is limited, and the body will decay... but after transforming it into a mechanical puppet, the body would be able to achieve immortality. A long time ago, a genius disciple of the Jet-Black Sect that had what it takes to carry the Will of the Heavens developed his own way to immortality using this concept

as a foundation. Also, from a certain point of view, all the talented disciples of the Jet-Black Sect can use similar methods to obtain an immortal body," Venerable Spirit Butterfly added while descending from the sky.

Venerable White nodded his head and continued, "As long you pay close attention to maintenance and replace the broken parts, the transformed body would be able to become immortal. However... the soul of a cultivator will still be slowly consumed over time. Based on what I know, apart from that genius of the Jet-Black Sect, no one else was able to reach the Immortal Realm with a similar method."

Song Shuhang nodded and said, "Oh, I know! Mechanically transformed human beings appeared in science-fiction movies as well. After human beings in the future mechanically transformed their bodies, they have to maintain their important parts, apply lubricating oil, etc. It's very interesting."

Venerable White replied, "Yes, you can understand it in that way."

The two Venerables had explained the problem with mister's body with this short exchange.

The mister on the ground, otherwise known as the Thousand Hands Sect's disciple She Lan, was in a daze and did not move.

His body got transformed into a mechanical puppet?

After staying silent for a while, She Lan could not accept the truth. He frantically shouted, "How can this be, according to my entire lifetime worth of memories, there was absolutely nobody who could have done any transformation to my body... impossible, this is impossible!"

"From the looks of it, even the memory of him undergoing the transformation was erased?" Venerable White said. "I think I need to disassemble him a little further and take a look at where his

memories are stored. For all we know, we might find some unexpected surprise."

"No, don't disassemble me further..." Mr. She Lan said in anguish. If this was a nightmare, he wanted to wake up from it as soon as possible.

"If Fellow Daoist White wants to continue disassembling, then could I trouble you to retrieve that glowing thing from within his body? Compared to his mechanical body, I'm more interested in that thing," said Venerable Spirit Butterfly—the item that was hidden in She Lan's body was the treasure that he used to activate the Star Shifting Formation.

"Alright!" Venerable White started to disassemble She Lan's chest, lifting open the outer shell.

In that place, they were able to see the few tissues left behind from She Lan's original body. The tissues complemented his mechanized body, preserving the part where the 'dantian' was located at. This allowed She Lan to maintain his cultivation of the Fourth Stage Innate Realm even after becoming a mechanical puppet.

Inside his chest was an eight-sided crystal, and the design of a miniature world was carved on every side.

Venerable Spirit Butterfly laughed. "It is this thing without a mistake, I can sense the power of space from it."

Venerable White reached out with his hand and took the eight-sided crystal...

When the crystal got taken out, She Lan's struggles came to an abrupt stop.

"Senior, this guy isn't moving anymore!" said Song Shuhang.

"Eh? Could it be that the crystal is one of the energy sources of the mechanical body? Or is it a more important part, similar to a switch?" Venerable White passed the eight-sided crystal to

Venerable Spirit Butterfly.

Venerable Spirit Butterfly took the crystal. "Sorry to trouble you, Fellow Daoist White... as for the results of the research of the crystal, I will share a complete set of information with you."

"Alright." Venerable White nodded his head and continued disassembling She Lan's body.



At this time, Song Shuhang carefully looked at She Lan's body on the floor. "Something's amiss. Did he really stop just like that? In movies, when the villain robot boss gets defeated, wouldn't it self-detonate?"

"Bang... bang... bang... bang..."

Frightful sounds of explosions echoed...

However, it wasn't She Lan's body self-detonating, but the domineering black dragon puppet next to it, exploding for no apparent reason.

After it exploded, in succession, She Lan's body exploded as well.

Luckily, there were two Venerables on the site. Even if the explosion was very sudden, the two Venerables were able to set up a barrier of spiritual energy in time.

The power of the explosion was isolated on the outside.

"It really exploded?" Soft Feather was dumbstruck. Senior Song has the gift of clairvoyance!

Liu Jianyi said, "But what really exploded was the black dragon puppet on a side!" He had been observing the black dragon puppet since the beginning and found it really cool. But more importantly, that thing could substitute a flying sword and fly in the sky.

If he could take it away, he wouldn't even need to ride a flying sword—he would simply lay on the black dragon puppet, flying to all corners of the world. He could slack off wonderfully for a long

time, just thinking about it felt great.

But just as he started daydreaming, his dream exploded!

"Eh? Could it be that Senior White disassembled the black dragon puppet before?" Song Shuhang subconsciously blurted out.

"Hehe." Venerable White made a hollow laugh. The corners of his mouth twitched.



The residual force of the explosion dissipated.

Venerable Spirit Butterfly and Venerable White removed the defense barrier.

At the front, the black dragon puppet had already been blown to pieces—all sorts of components scattered on the ground.

That Mr. She Lan was also blown into several pieces that got scattered on the ground as well. He looked more than dead. After it was destroyed to such an extent, even that genius from the Jet-Black Sect that came up with technique to mechanically transform one's body to reach immortality would not be able to piece the components together and make him look like before.

In midair, Mr. She Lan's unwilling and angry scream was still echoing.

It was a shout coming from deep within his soul. If it did not get purified, it might become a resentful ghost or something.

"It turns out that transforming oneself into a mechanical person is not devoid of dangers! You don't know when you will suddenly detonate," lamented Song Shuhang.

"Yes, the explosion was rather sudden." Soft Feather nodded her head... but when she turned around and looked at Song Shuhang, she cried out in fear, "Senior Song, this is bad! Your soul is coming out of your chest! Senior Song, don't die...!!"

Chapter 418: An innate inability in regards to sword techniques

"What?" Upon hearing Soft Feather's shout, Song Shuhang hurriedly lowered his head and looked at his chest... thereafter, he saw a transparent, shrunken version of himself trying to get out of his body.

He had the exact same face, and even the bald head and the clothes on his body were the same. Furthermore, the mini Song Shuhang's clothes similarly had been stained with blood.

It was Song Shuhang's shrunken version!

"Eh?" Song Shuhang was dumbfounded... Fck, what is this?*

He subconsciously reached out with his hand and touched the transparent 'mini Song Shuhang'.

Ugh!

As soon as he touched mini Song Shuhang's head, he felt an ice-cold sensation transmit to his hand. It felt like touching the head of a doll made of rubber.

Immediately after, Song Shuhang felt as though someone was touching his own head.

Sensory sharing?

"Eeeeh?" Song Shuhang hurriedly let go as he thought of something. This 'mini-me'... couldn't be the ghost spirit, right?

However, how did his ghost spirit turn into this appearance?

The nearby Venerable Spirit Butterfly looked curiously at the mini Song Shuhang. "is that a ghost spirit?"

"I don't think so. Ghost spirits don't look like that." Soft Feather blinked her eyes. Then, she reached out her hand, and a transparent human-shaped ghost spirit appeared on her hand. It

was her ghost spirit, its face indistinct.

Song Shuhang himself was baffled. "I don't know either. It used to look different in the past."

Venerable Spirit Butterfly asked out of curiosity, "Did little friend Song's ghost spirit undergo a mutation before?"

At one side, Venerable White nodded his head and replied, "Just once. When Shuhang was making a contract with the ghost spirit, a loose cultivator of the Fifth Stage crashed to our place and died. Perhaps because the soul of that cultivator dispersed next to it, little friend Shuhang's ghost spirit underwent a mutation at the time.

"..." Soft Feather.

"..." Liu Jianyi.

"..." Venerable Spirit Butterfly.

A Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor flew over just to die in front of Song Shuhang and trigger a mutation of the ghost spirit? How much more lucky could he get?

"But the mutation of the ghost spirit took place a long time ago! How did it suddenly take on the same appearance as me?" Song Shuhang scratched his bald head... when he scratched his head, he remembered that his hair was gone...

On his chest, the mini Song Shuhang was also scratching his little bald head, looking very adorable.

"It's so lifelike, how cute." Soft Feather curiously reached her hand and grabbed mini Shuhang's bald head, pinching it.

"Agh, Soft Feather, don't use so much strength, be more gentle," Song Shuhang called out---when Soft Feather was pressing the ghost spirit's head, he could also feel it. The feeling of having your head being pinched was particularly strange.

"It's so amusing. It would be great if my ghost spirit could mutate

as well." Soft Feather laughed and poked the shiny bald head of the mini Shuhang.

"Lightly, lightly," Song Shuhang hurriedly called out---the head of the mini Shuhang was especially sensitive. Even though Soft Feather used only a bit of strength, it made his head feel very painful.

Venerable White thought about it and answered, "From the looks of it, it might be because the synchronization between the ghost spirit and you has been completed, hence it transformed."

It had been a while since Song Shuhang completed the contract with the ghost spirit.

Considering the time that passed, it should be about time for the synchronization to be completed.

"The synchronization is complete? Oh! Speaking of which, I do feel that my connection with the ghost spirit is no longer intermittent," said Song Shuhang joyfully.

In other words, the ghost spirit would incessantly refine the true qi within his body from now on, continuing to accumulate the true qi for him even when he was resting. The fully automated practice add-on that one deserved!

"However, why did it suddenly leave my body?" asked Song Shuhang.

When he asked that question, a thought was transmitted to him from the ghost spirit.

The paintings of the 'sword technique'!

This was the reason the ghost spirit involuntarily came out from Song Shuhang's body.

"Oh, so that's the reason." Song Shuhang nodded his head and said, "Senior White, the four scrolls did not get caught in the explosion, right? Can you show them to me?"

Venerable White waved his hand, and the fragments of the blown up puppets were swept aside with just his thought.

Thereafter, he opened up all four scrolls, placing them in order.



Daoist Priest Li Tiansu, executing different poses, was painted on those enormous scrolls.

"Eh? Senior Song, isn't the ring on Daoist Priest Li Tiansu's finger the same as the one on your finger?" Soft Feather had sharp eyes. She could see at a glance that Song Shuhang's ancient bronze ring was exactly the same as the one on Daoist Priest's finger in the scrolls.

"Yes," Song Shuhang said with emotion, "the ring on my finger belongs to Daoist Priest Li Tiansu. Also, this daoist priest was the loose cultivator that came flying and died next to Venerable White and me while I was making a contract with the ghost spirit."

Soft Feather was speechless. It was too coincidental!

Liu Jianyi thought to himself, Senior White's legendary luck is actually so terrifying?

"Everything is ready. Now, let's see what the secret hidden within these paintings is." Song Shuhang rubbed his eyes and stared intensely at the scrolls.

On his chest, the mini Song Shuhang similarly rubbed his eyes and stared intensely at the scrolls.



One minute, two minutes, three minutes...

Song Shuhang felt that his eyes were getting rather sore. 'Strange, could it be that the scrolls have a problem?'

The ghost spirit on his chest also looked perplexed. The feeling where the ghost spirit desired to come out of his Heart Aperture in Chu Chu's dreamland did not appear.

"Hehe, I saw it." At this time, Soft Feather laughed.

"What?" Song Shuhang turned his head around.

"The 'sword technique' hidden in the scrolls! I saw it with one glance; it was very easy! It's a rather interesting sword technique!" As Soft Feather was speaking, she lightly patted the butterfly-shaped treasured sword on her waist.

Soft Feather unsheathed and gripped the treasured sword, starting to execute the sword technique at a super-fast speed.

Over the time period of three breaths, Soft Feather had executed the 108 variations of the sword technique; the burst of sword light looked very spectacular.

Soft Feather's sword got faster and faster, as well as more and more dazzling. At last... the 108 sword variations transformed into four unique sword styles. And within these four styles, each sword consisted of twenty-seven different variations---it was unpredictable and incomparably swift and violent.

What Soft Feather executed was similar to the sword technique Song Shuhang saw in Chu Chu's dreamland. Except that Soft Feather executed it in a more exquisite manner, eliminating a few unnecessary sword styles.

Song Shuhang agonizingly blinked his eyes... previously, he could still use the excuse that the four 'sword technique' scrolls were not assembled to console himself about being unable to see through the hidden sword technique. But right now... it seemed that there was a problem with his comprehension skills.

To put it more accurately, there was a problem with his comprehension skills in regards to 'sword techniques'!

After all, his combat skills---fist techniques, daoist techniques, footwork---had already been acknowledged by Senior Medicine Master and Venerable White.

Am I destined to be unable to become a swordsman decked in

elegant white clothes? Do I really have an 'innate inability' in regards to sword techniques?

Chapter 419: What is Senior Song's clone eating?

No, I refuse to accept it!

Isn't it merely a 'sword technique'? I can't believe that I can't comprehend it! Song Shuhang widened his eyes once more, carefully watching every single detail he could find on the four paintings.

As the saying goes, everything comes to those who wait. This time, the scenery before Song Shuhang's eyes changed.

He saw... he saw hundreds of Soft Feathers displaying their swordsmanship...

It was the scene of Soft Feather brandishing her sword earlier. There were a total of 108 sword variations that fused together, giving birth to four unique sword styles. The numerous Soft Feathers continuously glittered before Song Shuhang's eyes, making his vision blurry.

...Am I having hallucinations?

Song Shuhang rubbed his eyes.

In the end... I really don't have any talent when it comes to sword techniques?

In Li Tiansu's dreamland, Scarlet Heaven didn't teach him sword techniques. Instead, he decided to teach him the 'Flaming Saber Technique'... was it because he noticed that Shuhang had some talent in regards to saber techniques?

Such being the case, which dao name should he choose in the future?

Should he follow in Senior Thrice Reckless Mad Saber's footsteps and call himself 'Heavenly Saber Shuhang' or 'Thrice Song Phantom Saber'?

No, I don't want that!

Song Shuhang fiercely shook his head and tried to get those scary thoughts out of his head.

He opened his eyes wide and carefully looked at the paintings of the 'sword technique' again.

At this point, he didn't even want to comprehend the whole 'sword technique', just a small piece was fine!

Soon after, Song Shuhang saw something!

It was a scene full of Soft Feathers swinging their swords left and right with awe-inspiring sword light flashing by... a scene with a lot of long legs.

I'm having hallucinations again!

Song Shuhang blinked his eyes a few times and prepared to let them rest a bit.

But just as he blinked, the scene on the paintings changed.

That scene full of Soft Feathers somehow merged with the four scrolls before his eyes.

It felt as though each Soft Feather went and occupied the black spaces in each painting.

After a short moment, the scenery changed once more!

A huge golden disc appeared in front of him.

The disc was as big as a small mountain and was made of layers upon layers of golden rings. There were almost 10,000 in total. Different numerical symbols, patterns, or letters were engraved on each ring.

"Clang, clang, clang~"

In the next moment, the golden disc started to rotate, while the 10,000 rings moved into different directions. Sometimes the 8000th ring would start to move, and at others times, it was the

4000th that would move. Sometimes, two rings would move at the same time.

It was an extremely complex mechanism.

Song Shuhang quickly understood what was going on... this was the secret concealed inside the 'sword technique'.

This whole mechanism seemed incredibly complex. Song Shuhang tried his best to memorize all the steps in his mind.

Luckily, he had already reached the Second Stage True Master Realm. Otherwise, it would have been difficult to note down all these passages with the memory of a cultivator of the First Stage!

Finally, the golden disc completed its transformation. The numbers, patterns, and letters on each ring finally merged together to form the picture of a human.

Two horns were growing on the head of this human, and mysterious runes were tattooed all over his body. He looked like an ancient magician from remote times.

When Song Shuhang saw the picture of this ancient magician, he felt somewhat uneasy.

"Whoosh~"

After reaching this point, the scene before Song Shuhang's returned to normality.



Song Shuhang felt extremely exhausted, to the point that even standing up was difficult.

The nearby Venerable Spirit Butterfly stretched out his hand and gently supported him. Then, he took out a medicinal pill and squeezed it in his mouth.

After the pill melted in his mouth, Song Shuhang felt a refreshing feeling gush into every corner of his body, erasing all his exhaustion. "Thank you, Senior Spirit Butterfly."

Venerable Spirit Butterfly smiled and asked, "What did you see?"

"It was an incredibly complex golden disc made of over 10,000 rings. In the end, the rings of the disc moved until they formed the picture of a man with two horns growing on his head and mysterious runes tattooed all over his body." Song Shuhang described what he saw.

"Eh? Senior Song didn't see the 'sword technique'?" Soft Feather asked out of curiosity.

"No." Song Shuhang's eyes teared up a little... it seemed he really had no talent for sword techniques.

Venerable Spirit Butterfly faintly smiled and said, "It might be the key to a certain secret realm. If even the method to open this secret realm is so complex, its level mustn't be low."

Venerable White smiled and nodded. "It sounds like an interesting place."

"Secret realm..." Song Shuhang rubbed his temples.

Then, he unconsciously blurted out, "A forbidden area!"

"?" The people on the scene were confused.

"Let me recall a few things." Song Shuhang carefully thought of the past events, trying to recall the life experiences of the loose cultivator Li Tiansu.

At the time, the dream about Li Tiansu was divided into two parts.

When the second part of the dream ended, Song Shuhang discovered that Li Tiansu sold all his family property to cure his daughter's illness, getting seriously indebted in the process. Afterward, the illness of the daughter flared up again, aggravating her condition. Cold qi exploded from her body, directly creating an ice coffin all around her body and imprisoning her inside.

In the end, Li Tiansu had no choice but to seal his daughter inside

an immortal cave and lock the entrance.

Afterward, he made up his mind and headed toward the forbidden area in the hopes of finding a cure for his ill daughter.

Song Shuhang's dream about Li Tiansu's life experiences was in no way complete... in fact, he knew almost nothing about happened inside the forbidden area.

After seeing that golden disc earlier, fragmentary memories of the dreamland resurfaced in Song Shuhang's mind. He faintly remembered the presence of a huge golden disc when Daoist Priest Li Tiansu entered that area to explore it.

Li Tiansu activated the disc to open the forbidden area and enter it!

He wasn't mistaken about this point. The golden disc was the key Li Tiansu used to enter the forbidden area.

But in the end, he failed in his quest. He traveled thousands of miles and crashed next to Song Shuhang and Venerable White, dying and leaving his equipment behind...

"That place is a forbidden area. In there, Daoist Priest Li Tiansu received the severe wound that caused his death. The golden disc is the key to enter the place," Song Shuhang muttered.

Venerable White pondered for a moment and asked, "Do you happen to know the location of that secret realm?"

"I'm not sure. The information regarding the 'forbidden area' is incomplete." Song Shuhang shook his head and said, "But... there is a person that might know about the location of that secret realm."

Song Shuhang tried to recall a certain scene from Li Tiansu's dreamland... after all, Li Tiansu didn't go there only once.

Over twenty years ago, Li Tiansu entered that place with a good friend. However, they didn't even reach the place where the golden

disc was located when Li Tiansu's friend was severely injured. Due to this reason, the plan to explore the forbidden area was canceled.

After receiving that severe wound, Li Tiansu's friend had no choice but to return to his home to recover.

And this friend of Li Tiansu happened to be a senior of the Chu Family.

This senior of the Chu Family met Daoist Priest Li Tiansu 150 years ago, and Li Tiansu seemed to really care about him. Even these paintings containing the 'sword technique' and the key to the forbidden area were things that Li Tiansu gifted to this good friend of his hundred years ago.

"A senior of the Chu Family went there with Daoist Priest Li Tiansu once. Hence, he might know about the location of the forbidden area," Song Shuhang replied.

Venerable Spirit Butterfly, Soft Feather, and Liu Jianyi silently nodded. Although they didn't know how Song Shuhang obtained this information, it was likely that the Chu Family knew about the location of the forbidden area.

Then, Song Shuhang glanced at the fragments of the blown up 'She Lan' and black dragon puppet. "Actually, if Senior White hadn't disassembled that black dragon, causing that explosion earlier, we might have asked this Mr. She Lan about the location of the forbidden area. After all, he put in so much effort to steal the paintings from the Chu Family. Therefore, there was a chance he might know about the position of that place as well."

"It seems reasonable." Venerable Spirit Butterfly nodded in agreement.

"Haha..." Venerable White was a bit embarrassed and made a hollow laugh.

"Senior White, I advise you to make a video the next time you start disassembling something. Both the missile and the black

dragon puppet were ruined after you disassembled them. If you had recorded the process before proceeding with the disassembling, you could have taken a look at the recording while assembling them back. With that, there wouldn't have been any explosions, and everyone would have been happy!" Song Shuhang seized the opportunity to make this suggestion to Venerable White.

He felt that Senior White's hobby to disassemble things was too dangerous. It would be rather fearsome to get home one day and discover that all the electric equipment was malfunctioning and exploding as soon as touched.

"Haha..." Senior White made another hollow laugh.

Then, seeing that Song Shuhang still wanted to go on, Venerable White tried to change the topic of conversation forcefully. "Eh? Shuhang, how come there is all this blood dripping from your body? You'll get a cold if you keep wearing those drenched clothes of yours, it's not good for your health. Come, let me help you dry them!"

"Senior White, don't try to shift the topic of conversation... wait a moment... Senior White, what are you doing?" Song Shuhang called out.

Without waiting for Song Shuhang to reject, Venerable White pushed his hand toward him, and a burst of spiritual energy covered his body.

Soon after, Song Shuhang felt the blood in veins boil as though he was about to explode. His whole body was on fire!

"Aaaaaah! Hot, hot, hot! Senior White, it's too hot! Stop quickly!" Song Shuhang started to scream. Very soon, the clothes he was wearing indeed dried up.

Not only his clothes, his whole body dried up as well. It felt as though all the water inside his body had evaporated, even his lips were dry and cracked.

After his blood-drenched clothes dried up, the blood turned into a crust that stuck to his body, looking rather disgusting.

"Senior Song, what thing is your clone eating?" Soft Feather curiously asked at this time...

Chapter 420: Do you want to sweep countless battlefields without suffering a single defeat?

"What?" Song Shuhang lowered his head and looked toward his chest... it was at that point that he saw the ghost spirit trying to slurp something as though it was slurping noodles.

However, the ghost spirit was too fast, and Song Shuhang was unable to see clearly what it ate.

At the same time, he felt a slippery feeling inside his throat due to the senses he shared with the ghost spirit. It felt as though he had swallowed fresh bean jelly; it tasted quite good.

"Hey, hey, hey. What did you just eat?!" Song Shuhang called out.

He knew that his ghost spirit had become somewhat special after the mutation. For example, it could eat curses and swallow down resentful souls.

But what did it eat just now? Did it eat a resentful ghost or something of the sort? If it really ate a ghost, that feeling from before was somewhat disgusting!

The ghost spirit transmitted its thoughts to Song Shuhang: Tasty, very tasty thing.

"..." Song Shuhang.

As expected, he felt that refreshing feeling in his mouth because the ghost spirit ate a soul? It seemed he had to quickly comprehend how to control the sensory organs he shared with the ghost spirit so that he could turn them off while the ghost spirit was eating.

"Are you hungry?" After heaving a sigh, Song Shuhang opened his size-reducing purse and took out a few soul beads, feeding them to the ghost spirit.

When the ghost spirit ate the soul bead, Song Shuhang felt as though he was eating chocolate; it was a very similar feeling.

When the nearby Venerable Spirit Butterfly saw the rabbit-shaped size-reducing purse, a gratified expression suddenly appeared on his face.

"Soft Feather, do you want some?" Song Shuhang conveniently handed some of the soul beads to Soft Feather.

"What are these?" Soft Feather took the soul beads and asked out of curiosity. At the same time, she prepared to throw them into her mouth and taste them.

"Wait, it's not for you." Song Shuhang quickly stopped her. "Those are soul beads, and it's apparently something ghost spirits eat like to eat."

Song Shuhang wasn't too sure either. After all, his ghost spirit had undergone a mutation, and it was unknown if other ghost spirits liked to eat 'soul beads' too.

Soft Feather summoned her ghost spirit and gave it the soul bead. Her ghost spirit cautiously took the bead. Then, it opened its mouth and swallowed it down.

After eating the soul bead, it returned inside Soft Feather's body, getting ready to absorb the energy inside the bead.

"It tastes like chocolate." Soft Feather smacked her lips. After all, she had already completed the synchronization with the ghost spirit. "Senior, do you have some more?"

"I have some more, but I didn't carry them with me this time. I'll send them to you via express delivery once I return home," Song Shuhang replied.

"No problem. At the time, I'll give you the mailing address and the contact details of the special courier of our Spirit Butterfly Island," Soft Feather said with a smile.

The nearby Venerable Spirit Butterfly was speechless.

If little friend Song Shuhang were to discover the address of the island, wouldn't he and Soft Feather frequently mail each other things?

After going back, it perhaps would be time to change the location of the island once more. To ensure that the Spirit Butterfly Island remained a mysterious place, Venerable Spirit Butterfly used to shift its position at intervals of hundred years.



Inside the smelted cave.

Everything related to the mister and the 'sword technique' had come to an end.

"Senior White, are we going to prepare the road for the race now?" Song Shuhang asked while putting away the paintings of the 'sword technique'.

They had already uncovered the secret within the paintings. Therefore, they didn't need them anymore. If possible, it was better to return them to the Chu Family.

Moreover, Song Shuhang had already lost all hope in regards to sword techniques. Even after trying for a while, he had been unable to derive his own sword technique from the paintings.

It seemed there was no fate between him and this 'sword technique'.

Right at this time, Venerable White said with a faint smile, "Yes. But before leaving, we should return the 'sword technique' to the rightful owner."

After saying this much, Venerable White turned his head around and looked toward a blind spot above the smelted cave. "Fellow Daoist Chu, you can come out. We don't have ill intentions towards your Chu Family, and we have no intention to steal your

'sword technique', either."

As soon as Venerable White finished speaking, the ancestor of the Chu Family, Chu Kangbo, came out from that place with an embarrassed look on his face.

Then, he arrived in front of Venerable White and the others and meticulously greeted them. "Chu Kangbo is very pleased to meet these two Seniors, this other Fellow Daoist, and these two little friends."

After properly greeting them, his gaze fell on the ancient bronze ring on Song Shuhang finger. After seeing it, he faintly sighed.

When the person Chu Chu sent over told him about everything that happened, Chu Kangbo headed out at full speed, following the trails of the mister and arriving at this smelted cave.

Just as he arrived on the scene, he saw Song Shuhang uncovering the secret of the paintings and the two seniors talking about his old friend Li Tiansu.

When he heard about Li Tiansu's death, he was shocked... someone as powerful as Fellow Daoist Li Tiansu had actually died!

"A senior of the Chu Family?" Song Shuhang missed Chu Kangbo's battle on the Grievance Settling Platform. Hence, he was unaware of Chu Kangbo's identity.

Moreover, his voice had already returned to normal. Otherwise, who knew what Chu Kangbo might think after hearing him speak with Chu Chu's voice.

Chu Kangbo nodded and said in a genteel way, "This Chu is the grandfather of the current leader of the Chu Family."

After hearing his pedantic speech, Song Shuhang felt his teeth ache.

"Senior, you came here just in time. This is the 'sword technique' of your Chu Family. Now, it can finally return to the rightful

owner," Song Shuhang said to Chu Kangbo as he handed over the four paintings.

"This Chu is very grateful for what you did, and the entire Chu Family will remember the kindness of this little friend." Chu Kangbo received the four paintings with a solemn expression on his face.

Then, he pondered for a moment and took out a small ancient book from his clothes, giving it to Song Shuhang.

It was not an exaggeration to say that these four paintings containing the 'sword technique' were the foundation of the Chu Family. The fact that Song Shuhang retrieved them and returned them was a huge favor. Therefore, Chu Kangbo needed to show some gratitude.

Otherwise, wouldn't he look impolite and petty in front of these two seniors?

Therefore, he took this ancient book out of his clothes. He obtained this book when he rushed inside the abandoned mansion of an ancient immortal together with Fellow Daoist Li Tiansu.

The book contained a saber technique, and the creator of the technique had already reached the pinnacle in certain aspects of this field.

Unfortunately, the content of the book was fragmentary, and only the first three styles of the saber technique were still intact.

"The Chu Family will always remember the kindness of this little friend. If this little friend needs help with something in the future, the Chu Family will not shrink back and go through fire and water for you. This Chu doesn't have what good gift to give you except for this book containing a saber technique. I hope you'll accept this first meeting gift," Chu Kangbo said.

A saber technique... The corner of Song Shuhang's mouth twitched, but after seeing Chu Kangbo expectant look, he had no

choice but to accept the book.

After returning the 'sword technique' to the rightful owner, he obtained a saber technique.

Was it fate?

Song Shuhang casually flipped through the book.

The name of the saber technique was rather cool; it was called <Inverted Scale Saber Technique>.

Dragons are said to have inverted scales, and when these scales are touched, the dragon gets incredibly angry. Is this a technique that uses one's anger to release powerful attacks?

After thinking this much, Song Shuhang flipped through the pages of the book with much interest... but soon after, he discovered that the effects of the technique were completely different than what the name suggested.

The saber technique had three styles, the Dragon Dance Style, the Dragon Scale Style, and the Inverted Scale Style.

All these names were very cool and a million times better than stuff like 'Basic Fist Number One'!

At least, Song Shuhang wouldn't have to worry about the enemy shouting cool names such as 'Beyond the Heavens Flying Immortal Sword', while he was stuck with lame stuff such as 'Basic Fist Number One'! If the name of the attack was too lame, his morale would drop by five points even before the start of the battle!

However, these three saber styles were a bit strange.

Their attack power was nil.

All the three styles were 'defensive' saber styles. With the Dragon Dance style, a thousand evils could not influence one's body; the Dragon Scale style could protect the body from head to toe; meanwhile, the Inverted Scale Style was the strongest defensive move!

Was the senior that created these saber styles someone with too much imagination and thus ended up on a devious path? The saber was a tyrannical weapon with a very high attack power...

But the three styles of the <Inverted Scale Saber Technique> were all defensive styles!

Do you want to sweep countless battlefields without suffering a single defeat?

Do you want to boast in front of others and claim that you haven't a lost a single time in your life? In that case, you should try the <Inverted Scale Saber Technique>!

But after bragging in front of others, you would secretly think to yourself: I've never lost... but I've never won, either!

Song Shuhang sighed with emotion and put away the <Inverted Scale Saber Technique>.

When he was putting the saber technique away, Song Shuhang suddenly thought of something... when he looked at the contents of the saber technique earlier, he felt that the text flowed so naturally and there weren't any difficult points...

And this happened even though the mnemonics of the saber technique were written like ancient Chinese texts and thus very difficult to grasp!

Ah... is it possible that I will be able to use only the saber in this life of mine? Is the nickname 'Thrice Song Tyrannical Saber' waving its hands at me?

Song Shuhang: 😞

Chu Kangbo pondered for a moment and said, "About that forbidden area that my good friend Li Tiansu discovered... this Chu can tell you its exact location if you wish."

"Oh?" Venerable White faintly smiled and asked, "Is there something you want to request in exchange?"

"This Chu has only one request." Chu Kangbo knelt on the ground and said solemnly, "This Chu's deceased friend had a seriously ill daughter. Her body would incessantly produce cold qi, and if left alone, it would cover her whole body and turn her into an ice statue.

Fellow Daoist Li Tiansu had only one wish while alive, and that wish was to find a way to completely cure his ill daughter. According to Fellow Daoist Li Tiansu's estimates, there should be a method to cure the disease inside the forbidden area. If you seniors were to find something of the sort inside the forbidden area, I beseech you to save Fellow Daoist Li Tiansu's daughter. This Chu would be eternally grateful if you could do this."

So that was it!

"I understand," Venerable White said calmly. "If we find a cure in there, we'll bring it back with us."

When Venerable White asked Li Tiansu about his name after he crashed next to them, he had already accepted the karma that would come with him.

Chapter 421: A fearsome cooperation between giants

Venerable White wasn't the only one related to him, because there was even a deeper relationship between Song Shuhang and the loose cultivator Li Tiansu. If they were to find a cure for Li Tiansu's daughter, Venerable White wouldn't mind bringing it back.

After hearing this much, Song Shuhang touched his chest. Perhaps the ghost spirit wasn't interested in those four paintings merely because the key to the forbidden area was hidden within... maybe it reacted that way because the cure to Li Tiansu's daughter's disease was within the forbidden area as well?

But what was Li Tiansu's daughter's current situation? Was she still alive?

"Senior, this Chu will thank you in Fellow Daoist Li Tiansu's stead," Chu Kangbo said resolutely. Then, he stood up and said, "This Chu has a detailed map of the forbidden area Fellow Daoist Li discovered, as well as the details up to the point the two of us explored. After we return to the Chu Family, I'll give the map and the notes I took to you two seniors."

Although they weren't able to reach the entrance of the forbidden area the first time they tried to explore it, Chu Kangbo still noted down all the dangers they encountered during the journey.

Venerable White smiled and said, "In that case, you can give me the map tomorrow when I come as a guest to your Chu Family with the other fellow daoists."

"That is also fine. I'll return first and settle the chaos inside the Chu Family. Then, I'll wait for the arrival of fellow daoists and seniors," Chu Kangbo said.

After saying this much, Chu Kangbo headed toward the Chu Family with the four paintings of the 'sword technique'. He had to bring the lost treasure back and restore the order inside the family.



After Chu Kangbo left, Soft Feather pulled Song Shuhang and her Senior Brother Liu Jianyi along and started to explore the smelted cave.

The smelted cave was that mister's secret base. Therefore, there were some treasures lying around.

In the end, Soft Feather and Song Shuhang indeed found some 'treasures'.

Countless barrels of fresh blood... scary patches of human skin with runes engraved upon them, as well as some mechanical puppet parts and a few spirit stones.

The smelted cave seemed to be a temporary dwelling of that mister and thus didn't have many precious things.

Soft Feather, Song Shuhang, and Liu Jianyi divided the small number of spirit stones and used a fire technique to destroy the skin and the fresh blood...

As soon as the trio returned to the entrance of the smelted cave, they heard Venerable White saying, "Fellow Daoist Spirit Butterfly, Song Shuhang and I have to prepare the track for the race. Therefore, we'll take our leave."

"Track for the race? What track for the race?" Soft Feather asked out of curiosity.

Venerable White smiled and explained, "I assembled the fellow daoists of the Nine Provinces Number One Group because I wanted to hold a 'hand-guided tractor competition'. Therefore, I have to prepare a very interesting track where we can race."

Venerable Spirit Butterfly was surprised. "What?"

A hand-guided tractor competition?

Immediately after, Venerable Spirit Butterfly imagined the scene where the fellow daoists of the Nine Provinces Number One Group were sticking out their butts and shaking left and right along the rumbling hand-guided tractors.

Ah, just thinking about it makes me laugh... it's going to be an amusing scene.

Soft Feather raised her hand said, "Ahaha, I know, I know! After all, Venerable White sent some pictures recently. I'm sure that this hand-guided tractor competition will be very interesting!"

"..." Song Shuhang.

When did Senior White send pictures to the group? I've accompanied him all the time, and yet, I didn't notice anything?

"Yes. I also find the idea of holding a hand-guided tractor competition very interesting." Venerable White nodded and added, "Fellow Daoist Spirit Butterfly, do you want to participate as well?"

Venerable Spirit Butterfly gently smiled and said, "I thank Fellow Daoist White for the invitation, but certain matters at the Spirit Butterfly Island require my presence. Therefore, I'll have no choice but to take a rain check on the competition."

He was the cool and handsome Venerable Spirit Butterfly; he didn't want to associate himself with hand-guided tractors or the likes!

"Father, I want to participate! I want to stay here!" Soft Feather quickly said.

The corner of Venerable Spirit Butterfly's eye faintly twitched. However, he couldn't bear to let his daughter down. After all, he already enjoyed the 'disposable meteor sword' in her stead. Such being the case, he couldn't prevent her from participating in the hand-guided tractor competition.

"Fine, but behave and don't cause trouble for the seniors of the group! Otherwise, I'll immediately come over and bring you back to the Spirit Butterfly Island!" Venerable Spirit Butterfly pampered his daughter.

"Father is the best! I love you!" Soft Feather said with a smile.

Venerable Spirit Butterfly's mood improved by 1000 points.

Now that his mood was very good, Venerable Spirit Butterfly patted his chest and said to Venerable White, "Fellow Daoist White, I remembered that the affair on the Spirit Butterfly Island is not so urgent. Therefore, what if I help you arrange the track for the race before I go back? After all, I have a certain experience in arranging roads and similar matters."

After all, Venerable Spirit Butterfly personally devised the whole layout of the Spirit Butterfly Island.

Therefore, he knew well how to modify the race track to make it more 'exciting'.

After hearing this much, Venerable White's mood also improved by 1000 points. "That's great! In that case, let's work together and create the most exciting and amusing race track ever! The first hand-guided tractor competition of the world of cultivators must leave a beautiful and everlasting memory in everyone's minds."

"Fellow Daoist White, that's precisely what I was about to say," Venerable Spirit Butterfly said with a smile.

Venerable White smiled as well.

One of the smiles was incredibly handsome, and the other extremely gentle and beautiful. It was such a picturesque scene!

Song Shuhang quietly turned around and prayed for the seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group. Two seniors of the Venerable rank were working together to create an exciting and unforgettable race track...

This fearsome collaboration between two giants wouldn't give any chance of survival to the participants!

I wish for the seniors of the group to... have fun?

Should I wish ahead of time for them to receive eternal glory after their deaths?

Song Shuhang didn't want to have anything to do with this hand-guided tractor competition!

He was still hoping to live for a few more years!



On another side.

The efficiency of True Monarch Yellow Mountain's subordinates was very high.

Brand-new hand-guided tractors were quickly delivered in front of the various fellow daoists, lined up in rows and covering the whole area in front of the Grievance Settling Platform.

Moreover, tools to modify vehicles, tools to refine weapons, special ink and brushes to engrave formations, and talisman papers were delivered as well to meet the needs of each fellow daoist.

Additionally, there was a chest with medicinal pills and a wooden box with a treasure inside. These were the gifts the fellow daoists of the group and Yellow Mountain himself wanted to give to Song Shuhang.

Inside the wooden box was the treasure True Monarch Yellow Mountain wanted to gift to Shuhang for taking care of Doudou all this time... a set of magical clothing of the Second Stage rank, the emerald-green kasaya!

Chapter 422: Song Shuhang, how come it's you again?!

In one of the branches of the Limitless Demon Sect.

One of the puppets of the mister arrived at the branch and carried out the transaction.

It handed over a high-quality Blood Sea Jade and carried off a sealed package from the branch of the Limitless Demon Sect.

Inside the package was the Blood God's Evil Saber Formation used to condense the life-bound Blood God Saber.

After taking the package and leaving the branch of the Limitless Demon Sect, the puppet hid its presence and disappeared from the line of sight of the disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect.

After reaching a far away place, the 'puppet' cast a glance upward.

"The connection with She Lan was interrupted... that arrogant guy died? From the looks of it, it wasn't too wise to steal the four paintings with the 'sword technique'. The smelted cave must have been compromised too; I can't return there for the time being," the puppet said hoarsely. "Useless trash... he wasn't even able to discover the secret hidden within the 'sword technique'."

Luckily, they managed to obtain the formation to condense the life-bound Blood God Saber. Hence, they didn't suffer an excessive loss.

After pondering for a moment, the puppet turned around and stealthily headed toward China's coastal area.



Not long after the puppet left, Demon Monarch Anzhi's clone arrived at the branch of the Limitless Demon Sect to take the Blood Sea Jade.

This piece of Blood Sea Jade could barely replace the Blood God Crystal, allowing Demon Monarch Anzhi, Young Master Hai, and Zheng Neng to have a certain confidence in condensing a Golden Core with seven dragon patterns.

Very soon, Young Master Hai's clone took the Blood Sea Jade from Anzhi's clone.

"Not bad, the quality is pretty high. Although that 'mister' is a disgusting fellow, he's a fine business partner," Young Master Hai's clone said with a smile. "Alright, I'll use the projecting technique to thank him. While I'm at it, I'll warn him about that Miss 'Chu Chu'."

There was a chance that the Chu Chu swinging the treasured saber Broken Tyrant and that 'Stressed by a Mountain of Books' that was giving him a headache were the same person. If that was really the case, that mister had to be careful. After all, several powerful seniors were helping this 'Stressed by a Mountain of Books'.



In the sky.

Venerable Spirit Butterfly operated the cloud-shaped magical treasure and sped toward the coastal area.

At this time, the two Venerables were discussing and pondering how to build an innovative race track for the 'hand-guided tractor competition'.

Venerable White decided to hold the competition in the coastal area. The first part of the race track would be on land, while the latter half on the surface of the sea.

Venerable Spirit Butterfly laughed. "Ahaha, Fellow Daoist White's imagination is really something else. Cleaving through wind and waves on the surface of the sea seems much more exciting than driving on land."

Venerable White continued, "Additionally, I was planning to bury some landmines on the land-section of the race track and conceal their presence with formations. It's not like the fellow daoists of the Nine Provinces Number One Group will be injured by such a weapon with their strength. At most, it will destroy the tires of their tractors and make the competition more exciting and difficult."

"It's a good idea. Adding some modern gadgets will make the competition even more enjoyable." Venerable Spirit Butterfly clicked his tongue in admiration and said, "But has Fellow Daoist White already prepared the landmines?"

"Not yet. But I've read about them, and the principle behind is rather easy to understand. I think I can manufacture a few of them myself," Venerable White said full of confidence.

After hearing this much, the nearby Song Shuhang got goosebumps.

My God! Venerable White's handmade landmines? Would the seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group be able to survive those things?

Perhaps Senior Medicine Master will need to prepare several more beds!

No, I have to stop Senior White from doing something so dangerous...

Just as Song Shuhang was planning to step forward and save the lives of the seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group...

...Venerable Spirit Butterfly laughed and said, "Fellow Daoist White, you don't need to trouble yourself. If we're talking about landmines, I have many of them in my stock. Not only landmines, but I also have several torpedoes that can be hidden in the sea-section to make things more exciting."

Venerable White's eyes immediately lit up. "Fellow Daoist Spirit

Butterfly, it was a very good idea to involve you in this matter."

"Ahahaha! Fellow Daoist White is overpraising me," Venerable Spirit Butterfly said with a smile. At the same time, he secretly held his thumb up in approval behind his back.

He had no other choice! After all, his beloved daughter was going to participate in the hand-guided tractor competition as well! Therefore, how could he let Venerable White use something as scary as his handmade landmines?

Therefore, if he had to go to the neighboring states to steal landmines and torpedoes, he was willing to do it! Moreover, he would choose the ones that made a lot of noise but had low destructive power.

Song Shuhang clenched his fists with excitement... it was indeed a very good idea to involve Venerable Spirit Butterfly in this matter!

Song Shuhang's favorable impression of Venerable Spirit Butterfly increased by 10,086 points.

Very soon, Venerable Spirit Butterfly's cloud reached the coastal area.

Afterward, the two Venerables started to prepare the race track enthusiastically.

Soft Feather didn't go with them. According to her, there was no point in participating in the competition if she knew beforehand where the traps were positioned.

Miss Soft Feather was a girl that lived for the thrill.

Song Shuhang gazed into the distance... the sound of the two Venerables laughing and discussing reached his position from time to time.

Venerable Spirit Butterfly said, "How about placing a trap that

makes one return to the starting point here? Fellow Daoist White can place one of his disposable flying swords here, and all the fellow daoists that enter the range of the trap will be picked up along the tractor and brought to the starting point."

"It seems good. Moreover, we can arrange other traps or boosts with similar features on the road. For example, we can place traps that will make the participants hover in place for ten seconds, something similar to a forced pause, or a few boosts that can allow them to advance of let's say 1000 meters by relying on the features of disposable flying swords." Venerable White made other examples.

"We might as well place maintenance tools, spare tires, and similar things on the edge of the road as boosts, allowing the participants whose tires exploded to keep competing."

"Such being the case, how about several boosts consisting in formations that can increase one's speed by ten times?"

"How about placing the perpetual version of the exploding lightning art in here? A large explosion would give a start to the technique, and lightning would randomly start to rain from the sky. All the participants entering the affected area would have to try their best to dodge the lightning. It's a very good method to test the reaction time and driving skills of the participants!"

"Not bad! While we're at it, we can use a technique that makes earth spikes pop out from the ground. The length shouldn't be too big, and its aim should be to destroy the hand-guided tractors of the participants." The two Venerables kept discussing and got more and more ideas.

Their imagination was running wild and seemed like an endless and unstoppable stream. The ideas they were coming up with were likewise getting scarier and scarier.



Song Shuhang lit several candles for the seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group.

"Soft Feather, remember to wear a powerful armor with strong defensive abilities while participating in the competition!" Song Shuhang turned his head around and gave a heartfelt advice to Soft Feather.

Soft Feather's strength was much lower than the seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group's. Therefore, she had to properly pay attention to her safety while racing on that dangerous race track.

"I know! Thanks for your concern, Senior Song!" Soft Feather smiled and said, "Then, I'll prepare a powerful armor for you as well."

"What? For me?" Song Shuhang was stunned. Then, he quickly waved his hand and said, "No need, no need. I won't participate in the competition!"

"Senior Song won't participate?" Soft Feather blinked her eyes and said, "That's a pity. I think that Senior Song will regret not participating in such an exciting competition."

"Ahahaha, this exciting and explosive competition is not too suitable for me. I prefer competitions that are slightly more relaxed and easy-going." Song Shuhang forced a smile... there was no way he would regret something like that!

On the contrary, what he would regret for a lifetime was participating!

"I have the feeling that Senior Song will surely participate in the competition at the appointed time! I have this premonition!" Soft Feather said.

"..." Song Shuhang.

Ugh, ugh, ugh! I shouldn't mind what she said, let's hope for the best!



Just as the two of them were chatting, Soft Feather suddenly stopped. Then, she stretched out her hand and took out a crystal from her size-reducing purse.

This crystal was something that she and Song Shuhang retrieved from the smelted cave of Mr. She Lan.

Since she found the crystal very beautiful, Soft Feather decided to take it with her.

Soft Feather said in puzzlement, "Strange, it almost feels as though this crystal is sending some sort of signal..."

At this time, the nearby Liu Jianyi stretched out his neck and shot a glance at the crystal. "Similar crystals were used by ancient cultivators to communicate amongst them. Their effects aren't bad, and they can project the illusory picture of the other person in the air. However, it would waste quite a lot of mental energy and spirit stones to use them. After the introduction of mobile phones, these gadgets were slowly abandoned. I didn't expect that there was someone still using them. Soft Feather, place a spirit stone below the crystal to open the communication channel."

Soft Feather nodded and took out a spirit stone, placing it below the crystal.

"Buzz, buzz, buzz~"

As soon as it found a source of energy, the crystal reacted.

A ray of light came out of the crystal and projected an image right in front of Song Shuhang.

The image started to slowly take shape until it transformed into the figure of an elegant man. The man had a confident smile on his face and was fiddling with the red-colored gem in his hands.

"The connection finally went through! It seems you're really busy lately, 'mister'. The reason I contacted you this time was mainly to

thank you for trading a very high-quality 'Blood Sea Jade' with... what the f*ck?"

The elegant figure stopped halfway through its cool speech and suddenly raised its head, gazing at the bald and gentle-looking youth in front of it. When the other person saw this baldy, he couldn't help but let out a 'f*ck'.

The elegant figure managed to calm itself with much difficulty. Afterward, it heaved a sigh and said, "How come you're here?"

Although he had shaved his head, he could still recognize this young man!

Song Shuhang caressed his big bald head and said, "I wasn't expecting to see you here, either... Young Master Hai."

This guy named 'Young Master Hai' was literally everywhere.

Moreover, it seemed that there was some relationship between him and this 'mister'. Was it possible that he had a hand in these matters regarding the 'sword technique', the Chu Family, and the Illusory Sword School?

First, he destroyed the 'Moon Saber Sect', and now, he destroyed the 'Illusory Sword School' as well. Doing such a thing was really in the style of this Young Master Hai, a cruel and merciless fellow with many tricks up his sleeve!

The nearby Soft Feather asked out of curiosity, "Senior Song, do you know this guy?"

"I don't really know him... but I know that he's called Young Master Hai. Recently, he made Senior Su Clan's Seven very angry, and he's now hiding from him to avoid getting chopped. I bet he's hiding inside the Limitless Demon Sect, not daring to come out," Song Shuhang said harshly. He didn't have any favorable impression of this Young Master Hai.

"Haha..." Young Master Hai made a hollow laugh and said, "Since Fellow Daoist Stressed by a Mountain of Books is there, that mister

should be already dead, right?"

"Yes." The corner of Song Shuhang's rose as he said, "We already thoroughly dismantled that mister."

"Dismantled?" Young Master Hai was having some difficulties visualizing how one could die from 'dismantling'. Did they tear his body in several parts? Anyway, it seemed that mister was more unfortunate than fortunate and met a very bad end.

It was a pity though. Although that guy was repugnant, he was a very good business partner... of course, that was as long as one wasn't swindled by his words.

Young Master Hai felt like a fox grieving for the death of the rabbit.

"Don't worry. Senior Seven will soon send you where that mister is right now. You don't need to be sad for him," Song Shuhang said.

Young Master Hai gently smiled and said, "Hehe, Fellow Daoist Stressed by a Mountain of Books, you don't need to worry about me... it's not easy to kill me by relying on Brother Seven's skills."

"Soft Feather, did you record what he just said?" Song Shuhang turned his head around and asked.

Soft Feather stretched out her hand and made an 'OK' gesture. It was unknown when she took out her phone and started to record the conversation between Young Master Hai and Song Shuhang...

"In a while, after we're done processing the video, we'll send it to Senior Seven. This guy is so full of himself and unexpectedly dares to look down on our Senior Seven. He's the type that doesn't recognize death until it is in front of him," Song Shuhang said.

"No problem~ I'm also sure that Senior Seven can kill him very easily," Soft Feather replied.

"..." Young Master Hai.

"Hehe. Is something the matter? Mr. Young Master Hai?" After

saying this much, Song Shuhang gestured to Liu Jianyi, hinting him to bring here the two Venerables that were happily discussing how to build the race track.

Perhaps they had the means to find where Young Master Hai was hiding through the connection he had with the crystal.

"Hehe, there is not much left to say, and I better leave before your guardian comes back as to avoid him locking onto my position." Young Master Hai faintly smiled, and his figure started to become transparent.

Just as he was about to disappear, he said to Song Shuhang, "Fellow Daoist Stressed by a Mountain of Books... I'll leave the Blood God Crystal in your hands for now. In a while, I'll come to get it back."

"Then, you should hurry up," Song Shuhang said. "Because I'm going to trade it soon."

"..." Young Master Hai.

At last, Young Master Hai's figure disappeared without a trace left.

Chapter 423: Senior Song's expression package

After Young Master Hai disappeared, Song Shuhang looked more peaceful.

He rubbed his temples... that Young Master Hai was a huge bother without a doubt, and truth be told, Song Shuhang did not want to have anything to do with people like him.

Dealing with such a treacherous, vicious, and merciless fellow with a high IQ would cause one to feel mentally and physically exhausted. These sinister and deceitful fellows were too far away from Song Shuhang's lifestyle.

From the looks of it, he had to quickly trade the Blood God Crystal with Senior Seven Lives Talisman and let Young Master Hai switch his target to Senior Seven Lives Talisman.

According to what Song Shuhang understood from Venerable White's words previously, Senior Seven Lives Talisman had a huge power backing him, and exterminating the powerful 'Penniless Thief Sect' was something that it could do very easily.

"Soft Feather, can you lend me your phone? I want to access my instant messaging account," Song Shuhang asked Soft Feather.

His phone was confiscated by Venerable White, who was helping him change it to a phone that could work all around the world. However, Song Shuhang speculated that Venerable White was taking precautions against him so as to avoid him notifying the other seniors in the chat group in advance. Because if he notified them about it, the 'meteor shower plan' wouldn't be perfect anymore...

"Wait for a moment, let me send the recording to Senior Su Clan's Seven first!" Soft Feather's slender finger quickly swiped on the screen and sent the recording of Young Master Hai's earlier

words to Su Clan's Seven.

As soon as Su Clan's Seven received the video, his anger would rise by 100 points and his destructive power by 300 times. The Limitless Demon Sect was probably going to lose even more branches and Branch Leaders. It was something to be happy about.

After Soft Feather sent the message, she logged out of her account and passed her phone to Song Shuhang.

"Thank you." Song Shuhang took the phone and hurriedly logged into his own account.

When Song Shuhang logged into his own account, there were 999 new unread messages from the Nine Provinces Number One Group.

Song Shuhang casually opened the group chat.

Soon after, his eyes lost the light!



All kinds of Senior White's expressions flooded the chat.

The profile pictures of the seniors in the group had also been changed to various kinds of expressions of Venerable White.

Venerable White with two ponytails, Venerable White with one ponytail, Venerable White with a bun, Venerable White with a top knot, Venerable White with ancient Chinese royal court hairstyle. He almost thought that all the seniors in the group had become Senior White's second accounts.

After that were the chat logs.

An adorable Senior White, a bashful Senior White, a cute Senior White, a praying Senior White, a sad Senior White, a Senior White that was breaking out in a cold sweat, a smiling Senior White, Venerable White's disdainful look, Senior White's blessings, Senior White's anger...



Deep breaths, deep breaths!

Just as he guessed for a long time, Soft Feather had really sent the 'Senior White's expression package' to the group... therefore, he had already mentally prepared himself to see all kinds of Senior White's emotes as soon as he opened the group chat.

However... when he actually saw all those 'dazzling' Senior White's emotes, Song Shuhang felt that the amount of mental preparation he'd done was too low, he was practically about to collapse from the first (psychological) blow!

If one did not court death, he would not die—it was such a simple logic, yet why were the seniors in the group chat just unable to understand it?

Was it possible that Senior Thrice Reckless Mad Saber and Immortal Master Copper Trigram had stealthily influenced the entire group of seniors and increased their courting death value?

As he continued scrolling down through the chat logs, Song Shuhang realized that the fellow daoists in the group had started a proper plan to discuss how to modify hand-guided tractors.

However, every now and then, there were still some seniors who thought that since they were already in dire straits, they might as well just continue down the path of self-destruction by frequently sending some Senior White's emotes in the Nine Provinces Number One Group.

For example, Fairy Lychee, who absolutely adored using the :senior_white_cute: emote, had already been hooked on them—she practically could not stop.

For another example, there was a shady fortune teller who kept using the :senior_white_look_down: emotes—that emote was mostly sent by Immortal Master Copper Trigram and Northern River's Loose Cultivator.

Last but not least, there was a senior named Thrice Reckless, who

had already been transformed into a baboon, that fancied using the :senior_white_smile: emote.

Or perhaps they assumed that Senior White's punishment had already ended with the meteor shower, and since he had already punished them, there wouldn't be a second punishment and they could send Senior White's emotes to their hearts' content?

They were too naive!

Song Shuhang decided to sit and wait until a video of the abovementioned seniors being sent to outer space as miners popped out.

Deep breaths, continue taking deep breaths.

Song Shuhang said to Soft Feather, "Soft Feather, did you make this expression package?"

"Yes! Senior Song, I did a pretty good job, right?!" Soft Feather stared at Song Shuhang with her big twinkling eyes, her expression saying 'I am awesome, quick, compliment me'.

"Very... good... indeed." Song Shuhang forced a laugh.

After struggling to suppress his emotions, Song Shuhang tapped on Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman's profile picture and sent him a message: "Senior Seven Lives Talisman, when do we meet? I need to trade the Blood God Crystal with you."

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman quickly responded, "Little friend Shuhang, don't be in such a hurry! Didn't Senior White say in the chat group today that he wanted to organize a hand-guided tractor competition? Earlier, Senior White happened to inquire if I was in the Pacific Ocean and also asked me for my coordinates. He wants to arrange the race track so that the final section ends up in the Pacific Ocean. Hence, he needs my help. Little friend Shuhang, you're definitely joining the competition, right? Let's meet at the finishing line then!"

Song Shuhang hurriedly replied, "No no no, Senior Seven Lives

Talisman, I am not joining the competition."

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman replied, "Eh? Little friend Shuhang, you're actually not joining the competition? Doesn't it clearly feel like an interesting event? But no problem, you don't have to join the competition. You can tag along with the audience, taking a flight-type treasure to come over. I heard that Senior White had invited a lot of fellow daoists to be the audience and judges of this competition."

"In that case, I will quietly join the audience and see you at the finishing line, Senior Seven Lives Talisman." Song Shuhang heaved a sigh of relief.

To assure the safety of this little cultivator surnamed Song, he definitely would not join the competition.



After ending the conversation with Senior Seven Lives Talisman, Song Shuhang logged out of his account and prepared to pass the phone back to Soft Feather.

However, when he got out of the login page, Song Shuhang suddenly saw that Soft Feather had another folder on her 'home'.

Having a folder on the home of your phone was a very ordinary thing, everyone's phone more or less had some folders. Also, folders usually contained private secrets. A good man like Song Shuhang would never secretly intrude upon other people's privacy.

But... this folder was different!

Because its title was: [Senior Song's expression package].

Song Shuhang was speechless.

Wait a minute, wait a minute!

Senior Song?

In the Nine Provinces Number One Group, apart from himself, was there any other senior with the same last name?

Perhaps there was—after all, 'Song' was a very common Chinese surname.

But the problem was... all the seniors in the Nine Provinces Number One Group had a dao name! Such as Northern River's Loose Cultivator—Song Shuhang always called him Senior Northern River.

Currently, the only person Soft Feather called 'Senior Song' in the Nine Provinces Number One Group should be little friend Song Shuhang and no one else, right?

Hence, Song Shuhang's finger lost control and got ready to tap on the folder.

No, I can't. If the Senior Song inside the folder isn't me, wouldn't I have intruded Soft Feather's privacy? It is not a gentleman's doing, I can't do that!

Song Shuhang clenched his teeth and prepared to withdraw his finger.

But at that time... perhaps because the screen reacted to his finger, although he didn't tap it with his finger, the folder still opened.

The folder was not password-protected, hence it was successfully opened by Song Shuhang.

Next, he saw several pictures.

Or should he say, some source materials?

There was Song Shuhang's desperate expression when he and Venerable White were bungee jumping.

The picture of Song Shuhang on the meteorite in outer space.

There was also an expression of Song Shuhang when he was launched into the sky by the disposable Song Shuhang 001 edition... Senior White actually implemented a recording feature on the disposable Song Shuhang 001 edition?

There was a picture of Song Shuhang's bald head reflecting the rays of the sun (taken by Doudou).

And a picture of a bald Song Shuhang wearing a black skirt. F*ck, such an embarrassing picture... when did Soft Feather take this?

Thereafter, there was also a picture of Song Shuhang and Soft Feather bungee-jumping.

The corner of Song Shuhang's mouth twitched... he then silently closed the folder.

Soft Feather must be addicted to playing with expression packages, right? After playing with Venerable White's expression package, she still had to play with Senior Song's expression package, huh?

No, I must stop Soft Feather's scary plan!

But what can I use to stop a curious Soft Feather?

* * *

"Eh? Senior Song, you saw the folder!" At this time, Soft Feather suddenly moved her head closer and laughed cheekily.

Song Shuhang suddenly felt guilty.

"But Senior Song, I haven't completed this expressions package yet; the materials I have are currently too little. During this period, let's take more interesting pictures, then I would be able to make an even much more awesome expressions package than Senior White's expression package!" Soft Feather clenched her fist. This hot-blooded young lady was full of passion.

Song Shuhang hurriedly replied, "Soft Feather, can you not make my expression package? I feel kinda embarrassed."

"Don't worry, Senior Song. I will make it perfect, it would not bring you any shame," Soft Feather said earnestly. "Also, I made this expression package for your own good, Senior Song."

"What?" Song Shuhang was dumbfounded. For my own good?

"Think about it, Senior Song. Senior White's expression package was already released... and if Senior Song's expression package isn't launched as well, Senior White might find it unfair, right? If that were the case, he might keep tormenting you, Senior Song." Soft Feather's face was very serious.

Song Shuhang: 😳

Song Shuhang: 😞

What could he say against Soft Feather's sound logic? He actually had no rebuttal... because he had already been subjected to all kinds of torture by Venerable White. Such as transforming him into a fish that got eaten up by Doudou, got eaten up by Doudou, and got eaten up by Doudou...

Facts spoke louder than words.

Chapter 424: Doudou's nemesis

Song Shuhang said, "In that case, I'll have to trouble you with my expressions package, Soft Feather."

"Just leave it to me, Senior Song!" Soft Feather patted her big chest, assuring him. "It will be beautiful!"

"Thank you, Soft Feather!"

"You're welcome, Senior Song!"

"However, Soft Feather, could you remove the picture of me in the black skirt? That one is too embarrassing."

"No problem, Senior Song. I will settle it well for you, trust me!"

"Alright, let me say this earnestly once more, I will leave my expressions package to you, Soft Feather!"

"Just leave it to me, Senior Song!"

"Thank you once again, Soft Feather."

"Please don't stand on ceremony, Senior Song!"

For some reason, Song Shuhang eyes started tearing up.



As they were speaking...

"Look, Senior Song. There's a meteor!" Soft Feather suddenly said. "Three of them even, let's wish upon them. Do you have any wishes, Senior Song?"

Song Shuhang stared at the sky and realized that the three meteors were quickly descending while following a strange trajectory.

Song Shuhang speedily made three wishes. I don't want to take part in the hand-guided tractor competition... I don't want to take part in the hand-guided tractor competition... I don't want to take part in the hand-guided tractor competition!

Eh?

Wait a minute!

Amongst the three meteors... one of them suddenly started spinning like a windmill while flying; the other one suddenly started moving in a Z-shape trajectory while flying; the last one did not undergo any change for the moment.

Why is this scene rather familiar?

Additionally, those three meteors seem to be coming in our direction?

Ah, I understand. Those aren't meteors... those are disposable meteor swords 001 edition in meteor shower mode, except that the meteor shower's descent was a little delayed.

The three meteors got closer and closer, Song Shuhang and the others could already hear miserable shrieks.

"Aaaaaaah..." The first one was a refreshing and high-pitched male voice. The person shouting made absolutely no attempts to hide his own feelings—his voice was overflowing with enthusiasm, and if he wanted to shout, he would shout to his heart's content.

"Aaaah... aaaah... aaaah..." A forcefully repressed shriek with a gentle and neutral low-pitched voice—the person shouting seemed to be trying his best not to scream. However, he was unable to hold back, and his scream became rather weird.

"..."

The last scream was a silent one, his entire voice was firmly and entirely stifled.

The three figures got nearer and nearer.

Amongst them, the last figure was a bald senior monk. His palms were placed together and his mouth tenaciously shut, not making a single sound.

When Song Shuhang saw him, his mind immediately linked him

to one of Nine Provinces Number One Group's seniors—Great Master Profound Principle.

Only Great Master Profound Principle, who was in silent meditation, would be able to force himself not to make a single sound under such circumstances.

However, Shuhang did not expect that even a Great Master would be sent over with the disposable meteor sword 001 edition. A senior monk of virtue and prestige like Great Master Profound Principle couldn't resist using Senior White's expression package either...? Even a senior monk was actively courting death—Song Shuhang had thoroughly lost hope in the Nine Provinces Number One Group's basic ability not to seek death.

The figure in the middle, who tried his best to stifle his scream but ended up making odd noises, was a long-haired man who casually tied his hair into a ponytail. He seemed to be practicing some special cultivation technique, and his skin was as white as jade. Most importantly, his face was wearing thick black-framed glasses—could cultivators even have myopia? Or was it just for show?

The last one, who was yelling heroically, was a... black man? He wasn't an African black uncle, but a man with dark skin and a buzz cut. His scream was completely unrestrained and resounding.



The reason their arrival was delayed was that the locations of the sects they were in were relatively peculiar.

For example, half of the Faraway Wandering Temple was in the real world, and the other half was in a different dimension.

When Venerable White's gift activated, they were launched into the sky with the coiling flight feature of the disposable meteor sword 001 edition. Then, they spun inside their sect or immortal cave in a different dimension for a long time.

After spinning around in circles for a while, they came to a realization...

Therefore, the three of them finally took control of the different dimension they were in with much difficulty and opened the door... this was the reason for the delay.

Coincidentally, the three of them ultimately gathered together to form the last wave of 'little meteor shower'.



The far-off Venerable White could sense the descending disposable meteor sword 001 edition in the sky. Since he was in the midst of arranging the race track, he could not let the descending meteor shower destroy the race track he was preparing.

Hence, Senior White stretched out his finger.

The three twisted meteors in the sky landed next to Song Shuhang and company.

"Awesome, awesome!" Soft Feather's eyes lit up. She felt that the disposable meteor sword was truly exciting. In a while, she was planning to ask Senior White for another gift so that she could 'pew~' into the sky as well.

Three pits formed in the ground.

Great Master Profound Principle was the first person to climb out of the pit. He stared at Song Shuhang and company and smiled, placing his palms together before bowing.

After Senior White sent to the group the 'starry sky bungee jumping' picture he took with Song Shuhang, all the seniors in the group engraved in their minds the little fellow who was brave enough to sacrifice himself. Even though he was now bald, his face was easily recognizable.

"Hello, Great Master Profound Principle." Song Shuhang also placed his palms together before bowing back to him.

Soft Feather, who was next to him, as well as Liu Jianyi, similarly bowed and said, "Hello, Great Master Profound Principle."

After Great Master Profound Principle was done greeting them, his gaze shifted to Venerable White and Venerable Spirit Butterfly who were far away. The Great Master's right eye started twitching as though he was having a spasm that could not stop.

"..." Great Master Profound Principle.

He kept having the feeling that a disaster was going to strike. He was wondering if there was still time for him to leave the place to return to his Faraway Wandering Temple...



Thereafter, the other two unknown seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group also came out of their respective pits.

The dark-skinned senior on the left smiled widely at Song Shuhang, and with the standard smile and pearly whites, he said, "You should be little friend Song Shuhang. Your reputation precedes you. Not bad, not bad."

"Senior, you're too kind." Song Shuhang felt embarrassed.

The dark-skinned senior smiled. "I am 'Sun Splitting Halberd' Guo Da of the Nine Provinces Number One Group. I came out of my secluded meditation that lasted for three years only a few days ago. Hence, little friend Shuhang most likely did not see me appear in the group before. However, I am very well-aware of your past achievements. The fellow daoists in the group also spoke very highly of you."

"The seniors have spoken too highly of me." Song Shuhang smiled shyly.

"Hello, Senior Guo Da." Soft Feather stepped up and bowed. Thereafter, she secretly sent a message via secret sound transmission to Shuhang, and explained, "Senior Song, this Senior Guo Da is very famous in the group. Both him and Senior Thrice

Reckless Mad Saber are the two distinguished people in the group."

Song Shuhang blinked his eyes... Could it be that this dark-skinned Senior Guo Da is as good at courting death as Senior Thrice Reckless?

"This Senior Guo Da does not only look black, but he likes black people as well. But what is unique is that he's the only black cultivator around here. Therefore, he likes to make fun of himself due to this matter. After I joined the Nine Provinces Number One Group, father slowly introduced some of the seniors in the group to me. I heard from him that Senior Guo Da also likes to send cute pictures of puppies in the group, and immediately after, he will send a picture of two hands rubbing the head of the dog with all their strength. Lastly, he would add the caption 'furiously rubbing the head of the dog'," Soft Feather said via the secret sound transmission.

"..." Song Shuhang.

'Sun Splitting Halberd' Guo Da next to them was likewise speechless.

This young lady's secret sound transmission skill was not bad. But he was two realms above her... hence, he could easily hear the contents of her secret sound transmission with his strength of the peak of the Fifth Stage Realm.

Even though he looked black... he did not like making fun of himself! He merely joked about it a bit!

This is a rather peculiar senior. A black cultivator that likes to make fun of himself? He seems a rather easy-going fellow, right? Song Shuhang defined Senior Guo Da in his mind.



Afterward, the glasses-wearing senior took a step forward and pushed his glasses up. He stared at Song Shuhang and smiled, "Little friend Shuhang, I am Young Master Phoenix Slayer of the

Nine Provinces Number One Group... just like Guo Da, I came out of secluded meditation not long ago. I heard that you recently took care of Doudou?"

When he spoke of Doudou, Young Master Phoenix Slayer pushed his glasses up even further. Then, the lens of his glasses flashed with a cold ray of light while emitting a 'ding' sound.

"Ah, yes. Not long ago, Doudou ran away from home again and stayed at my place for some time. But today, Senior Yellow Mountain should be bringing him back," answered Song Shuhang.

Even though Doudou always troubled him, he also helped him quite a great deal. With Doudou, his life was suddenly more lively... although Shuhang himself found it inconceivable, if Doudou were to leave suddenly, he would feel reluctant to part with him!

Young Master Phoenix Slayer continued pushing up his glasses with cold light flashing all around. "Where is Doudou now?"

"Before I left, he was still with Senior Yellow Mountain," replied Song Shuhang.

"That is to say, he is still nearby, right? Hehehe, I can already smell him." Young Master Phoenix Slayer pushed his glasses up once again... the lenses of his glasses continuously shot out cold rays.

Song Shuhang felt a huge pressure.

At this time, Soft Feather secretly sent a secret sound transmission. "Young Master Phoenix Slayer is a monster cultivator of the Fifth Stage. I don't know what his actual form is... but he has a nickname in the Nine Provinces Number One Group —'Doudou's nemesis'."

Doudou's nemesis?

The nemesis of the monster pekingese Doudou? There was actually such a creature in the world?

"Speaking of which, what is Senior White doing?" Young Master Phoenix Slayer pushed his glasses up once again, looking at the busy Venerable White and Venerable Spirit Butterfly who were far away.

Soft Feather answered, "Venerable White said he wanted to hold a special 'hand-guided tractor competition'. The seniors in the Nine Provinces Number One Group seemed very interested in participating."

"What? A hand-guided tractor competition?" The corner of Young Master Phoenix Slayer mouth twitched. "Hand-guided tractors can be classified as vehicles, right? No way, I have carsickness. Not going to happen, I need to tell Senior White that I cannot join this competition. Otherwise, I will vomit."

Song Shuhang was speechless.

Senior, are you making fun of me? You're a monster of the Fifth Stage, how can you get carsick?

Chapter 425: The spectators should also have their share

Young Master Phoenix Slayer shot a glance at Song Shuhang and pushed his glasses up. "I really suffer from car sickness, and it doesn't have anything to do with my cultivation realm. When I was young, I experienced something that traumatized me, causing me to feel a certain fear towards all types of 'vehicles'. Therefore, I'll talk to Senior White and tell him that I absolutely won't participate in the competition!"

Just as Young Master Phoenix Slayer was speaking, the far-off Venerable White stepped on the sea waves and elegantly headed toward them.

Afterward, he waved at Great Master Profound Principle and the other two, saying, "Fellow Daoists, how are you!"

"Senior White, hello!" Young Master Phoenix Slayer was the first one to reply.

Song Shuhang discovered that there wasn't any cold light flashing through Young Master Phoenix Slayer's lenses while he was talking to Venerable White.

He felt that there was something wrong with his state.

Great Master Profound Principle joined his two palms together and greeted Venerable White.

'Sun Splitting Halberd' Guo Da also greeted Senior White with a bright smile on his face.



Since he was in the middle of setting up the race track, Venerable White came straight to the point.

"I reunited all of you here because I wanted you to participate in an interesting competition that I'm about to hold. It's a 'hand-

guided tractor competition', and True Monarch Yellow Mountain has already prepared the necessary hand-guided tractors, sending them over here. All the participants can freely modify their tractor; you can modify it as you see fit, and as long as it's still a 'hand-guided tractor' after the modifications, you can participate in the competition," Venerable White said in one breath.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer took a deep breath and mustered his courage, getting ready to tell Senior White that he wouldn't participate in the competition.

But right at this time, Venerable White also added, "Those that manage to secure the first five places in the competition will have the possibility to explore some ancient ruins with me. These ancient ruins belong to the 'previous era'!"

After hearing this much, the interest of Great Master Profound Principle and Sun Splitting Halberd Guo Da was immediately piqued. If these ruins belonged to the previous era, there was a chance that they might contain information about the secret of immortality!

When the previous Wielder of the Will retired and the new one took their place, the ancient Heavenly City was destroyed, and all the talented people that had reached the Immortal Realm and could carry the Will of the Heavens went into seclusion, disappearing without traces. As a consequence, the secret of immortality became something very mysterious.

If there was an opportunity to come across the secret of immortality, most of the seniors in the group would immediately seize that opportunity.

Senior Guo Da loudly laughed and said, "Senior White, how can this competition be short of me? Where are the other fellow daoists of the Nine Provinces Number One Group?"

Great Master Profound Principle smiled and nodded, joining his palms together. He also expressed his intention to participate in

the competition.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer was in a dilemma... he was also interested in the secret of immortality, but he was somewhat scared of 'vehicles'.

Moreover, he had just mustered all his courage and was ready to tell Senior White that he wouldn't participate in the competition. Now that he was suddenly interrupted, all the courage he mustered was gone as well.

The corner of Venerable White's mouth rose, and his mood got much better. "All the fellow daoists of the Nine Provinces Number One Group are near the area the Chu Family is located at, modifying their hand-guided tractors. I'll give you the coordinates so that you can head there. Afterward, you can choose a tractor and modify it to participate in the competition."

At this time, the nearby Soft Feather raised her hand and said, "Senior White, I also want to participate! I want to go there as well!"

"No problem!" Venerable White said.

"Such being the case, can you use a disposable meteor sword 001 edition to deliver me over there~? All the seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group received a gift and got to ride the super exciting disposable meteor sword... all but me!" Soft Feather continued with her hand raised.

The nearby Great Master Profound Principle, Sun Splitting Halberd Guo Da, and Young Master Phoenix Slayer stiffened.

Oh, so the disposable flying sword we used to ride here was an improved version, the 'disposable meteor sword'! No wonder it was so scary and there was that meteor-like special effect.

But what's the deal with Venerable Spirit Butterfly's daughter asking to try the 'disposable meteor sword' on her own volition...?

"..." Venerable White.

Venerable White had a complex look on his face after looking at Soft Feather's restless expression.

At this time, Venerable Spirit Butterfly also came over and said somewhat embarrassed, "Fellow Daoist White, I wasn't able to deliver the gift you sent to Soft Feather in time. As a consequence, I was the one that ended up making use of it, hahaha... such being the case, can you give Soft Feather another gift if it's not a problem for you?"

"..." Venerable White.

Do this father-daughter pair think that the 'disposable meteor sword' is a plaything or something?

Is it possible that this series is not frightening enough?

Venerable White held his chin and pondered... perhaps it was time to quickly develop the 'disposable meteor sword 002 edition'!



In the end, Soft Feather was able to obtain a new 'disposable meteor sword 001 edition'.

"Senior Song, shall we head toward the Grievance Settling Platform together and take a look at how the seniors are faring in their modifications? I'm sure it will be very interesting!" Soft Feather waved her hand at Song Shuhang.

"No need, I prefer to stay here and take a look at Senior White and Senior Spirit Butterfly arrange the race track." Song Shuhang smiled and waved his hand.

What a joke! Soft Feather was planning to use the disposable meteor sword to head back to the Grievance Settling Platform... if he were to go together with her, wouldn't he also enjoy the beautiful feeling of turning into a meteor?

There was no way he wanted that!

"In that case, I'll leave first!" Soft Feather didn't mind. At this

time, all her attention was concentrated on the disposable meteor sword.

As soon as she finished speaking, Venerable White activated the flying sword.

"Pew~" Soft Feather coiled toward the sky. The sword qi exploded, and the flying speed became extremely quick.

Venerable Spirit Butterfly, Song Shuhang, Great Master Profound Principle, Senior Guo Da, and Young Master Phoenix Slayer all saluted Soft Feather with their eyes.

Song Shuhang wasn't sure if it was just his imagination, but he felt that Soft Feather was spinning especially fast while coiling toward the sky.

If he were to consider the coiling flight feature that carried away Su Clan's Seven a Lv. 1 Bladestorm, Soft Feather's version of the Bladestorm was at least Lv. 2, if not higher.

"Aaaaaaaah~" Soft Feather's excited scream echoed in the sky.

If one were to listen carefully, they would notice that she was just excited and not scared.

Venerable White held his chin and started to ponder, his current mood was rather complex.

"Senior White, such being the case, I'll also converge with the other members of the group!" Senior Guo Da said.

Soon after, both he and Great Master Profound Principle respectively took out their long halberd and flying sword and shot toward the sky, following after Soft Feather who had disappeared into the distance.

Since his mood seemed quite good, they were afraid that Venerable White would conveniently give them a ride on his disposable meteor sword if they were a second late, and that would

be tragic.

Once the two of them left, only Young Master Phoenix Slayer remained.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer was still mumbling under his breath and had a perplexed expression on his face.

Venerable White looked at him in puzzlement and said, "Fellow Daoist Phoenix Slayer, aren't you converging with the other fellow daoists?"

"Ah? Oh. Senior White, don't mind me. Let me gather my thoughts first," Young Master Phoenix Slayer said. However, this wasn't what he really wanted to say.

What he wanted was to tell Senior White that he had no intention of participating in the competition.

"Oh, sure. You can rest here for a while. In the meantime, Fellow Daoist Spirit Butterfly and I will keep preparing the race track," Venerable White said with a smile.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer's eyes started to tear up.

How wonderful would it be if Young Master Phoenix Slayer's non-straightforward personality and Song Shuhang straightforward personality could balance each other out?

The two Venerables kept discussing how to arrange the race track.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer was still in a dilemma and stood in his original place.

Song Shuhang stretched himself. He was a bit tired at this time. A lot of things happened today. Moreover, he had been very busy since the wee hours of the morning. Hence, he decided to look for a place to rest.

After stretching himself, Song Shuhang headed toward the

nearby rocky terrain.

After eyeing that uneven rocky terrain, Song Shuhang couldn't help but think of Guoguo's... hemorrhoids.

Thereupon, he took out his treasured saber Broken Tyrant and thought of slicing one of the rocks to make it even and suitable for resting.

Speaking of which, now that Great Master Profound Principle is here, would he spank the little monk until making him shit all over the place? Song Shuhang thought to himself.

Then, he lifted Broken Tyrant high up in the sky.

But right at this time, Venerable White's voice was transmitted from afar. "Shuhang, be careful."

"?" Song Shuhang turned his head around and looked at Senior White in puzzlement.

In the next moment, he saw something flash before his eyes.

Immediately after, he felt as though his whole body had received an electric shock.

He felt the surroundings spinning as if the world had been turned upside down. Afterward came a stabbing pain, and his whole body was paralyzed.

The treasured saber Broken Tyrant was a one-meter long saber forged from heavy metals inside a thunder pond... in the hands of a powerful cultivator, it could cut even lightning.

Moreover, its blade could absorb a certain amount of lightning and use it to injure the enemy in the next attack.

Under the protection of the saber, Shuhang did not receive severe injuries even though he was charred black and resembled an African black uncle.

Song Shuhang opened his mouth and exhaled. "Ah..."

A faint burnt smell came out of his mouth.

Only at this time did he realize that he was hit by an explosion of thunder and lightning. That white-colored flash earlier was the lightning explosion activating.

* * *

"Little friend Shuhang, are you alright?" Venerable Spirit Butterfly and Venerable White quickly came over and checked his condition.

Song Shuhang opened his mouth once more and used his true qi to check his body. "Except for my body going numb, I'm alright. Seniors, what happened earlier?"

Venerable Spirit Butterfly forced a laugh and said, "Haha... Fellow Daoist White and I were thinking of placing several mines on the surface of the sea. I'm not sure what happened, but some of the lightning was attracted toward this place and struck your body. Hahaha..."

"..." Song Shuhang.

I was only trying to look for a place to rest and was suddenly struck by lightning? Venerables are actually so scary, even watching them arrange the race track is life-threatening!

"Come, eat this medicinal pill. It will help you get over the shock." Venerable Spirit Butterfly took out a medicinal pill and squeezed it into Song Shuhang's mouth.

After eating the pill, Song Shuhang was full of energy, and his mental energy was replenished as well... moreover, the quantity of true qi in his dantian rose quite a bit.

The increase of true qi was comparable to the one he would have after practicing for a whole day!

This pill was like those precious medicines in games that could instantly replenish one's HP. However, Venerable Spirit Butterfly

was treating them like ordinary candies.



"Eh?" At this time, Venerable White moved his head closer and shot a glance toward Song Shuhang's feet. "Shuhang, move aside for a moment."

Song Shuhang was confused, but he still moved to a side.

Next, he saw Venerable White squat down and pat on the ground.

Immediately after, Senior White created a small hole where Song Shuhang was standing earlier.

Afterward, ten crystal-like plants popped out from the hole, each of them the size of an index finger. Just at a glance, it was possible to tell that they weren't ordinary plants. They looked beautiful and were full of spiritual energy.

Wait a moment... why does this scene look so familiar?

Venerable White pulled out the ten crystal-like plants and weighted them in his hands. Then, he said with a smile, "Not bad. This is the 'Aging Crystal Root'. A plant that can increase one's cultivation level. If a cultivator of the Second Stage eats one of these things, they can obtain an increase in cultivation comparable to the one they would have after training for three years. Come, spectators should also have their share."

Thereupon, Venerable White quickly divided the plants and gave two to Song Shuhang, two to Venerable Spirit Butterfly, and two to Young Master Phoenix Slayer.

As for the last four, he kept them for himself.

"Thank you, Fellow Daoist White." Venerable Spirit Butterfly received the 'Aging Crystal Root' with a smile.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer took the treasure while still a bit dumbfounded.

When Song Shuhang looked at the two Aging Crystal Roots in his

hands, his eyes teared up slightly.

He now remembered why the scene looked so familiar.

It was Venerable White's ability to 'give a share to the spectators' at work!

Senior White was a walking mass of luck, and even if he was at home doing nothing, all sorts of lucky things would happen to him. The only problem was that this luck would create mortal dangers for the people next to him.

And the mortal danger from earlier just happened to fall on me!

Song Shuhang took a deep breath through his nose.

However, he managed to obtain two natural treasures that could allow him to obtain the same boost he would obtain after training for three years! If he were to use them, he might directly break through the second dantian of the Second Stage Realm, the Dragon Tail Dantian.

As the saying goes: the key to success lies in taking risks! Getting hit by that explosion of lightning was totally worth it!

Just as he was in deep thoughts, Venerable White gave Song Shuhang another Aging Crystal Root and said, "Here, take another as a compensation. After all, I was able to discover these ten Aging Crystal Roots only because you were struck by the lightning. Don't be too sad. Wasn't it just lightning? Big men don't cry for so little."

Song Shuhang immediately retorted, "Senior White, it's that I can't breathe properly after being struck by the lightning, I'm not crying!"



Around five minutes later...

Young Master Phoenix Slayer rode his flying sword and headed toward the Chu Family, his destination the Grievance Settling Platform.

Song Shuhang was standing behind Young Master Phoenix Slayer.

Standing on a side and watching the two Venerable arrange the race track was too dangerous. For his safety, Song Shuhang decided to return to the Chu Family first.

As for Young Master Phoenix Slayer, he ultimately made up his mind.

Thereupon, he was the one in charge to bring Song Shuhang back.

On the flying sword, Young Master Phoenix Slayer suddenly asked, "Little friend Shuhang, do you know how to drive a hand-guided tractor?"

"A bit. Senior Phoenix Slayer, don't you know how to drive it? Do you want me to teach you?" Song Shuhang asked in return.

"Yes." Young Master Phoenix Slayer slightly nodded.

Chapter 426: The so-called 'nemesis'?

Next to the Grievance Settling Platform.

"Spank, spank!"

"Aaaah! Abbott, I made a mistake! Forgive me!"

"Spank, spank!"

"Aaaaah... Abbott, don't spank me again! My hemorrhoids will flare up again..."

In the end, little Guoguo could not escape from Great Master Profound Principle's clutches.

At this time, he was lying on the lap of the Abbott and getting ruthlessly spanked, screaming again and again.

On a side, True Monarch Yellow Mountain held his chin and looked at Great Master Profound Principle disciplining the small monk.

Then, he turned his head around and glanced at Doudou who was now in the shape of a small pekingese, thinking to himself, Did I pamper this stupid Doudou too much? Should I follow Great Master Profound Principle's example and use corporal punishment as well?

Next to him, Doudou was holding a big bone in his paws, carefully sniffing it... it seemed he wanted to eat it, but he was also reluctant to do so.

Since he had the 'muting collar' around his neck, Doudou had been very well-behaved and hadn't caused any trouble.

However, he was secretly plotting something... From the looks of it, stupid Yellow Mountain will also participate in the hand-guided tractor competition. Once the competition starts, I'll use a sound amplifying technique and broadcast the 'Song of the Stupid Yellow Mountain' in its entirety to cheer for him.

Even if he were muted for a whole year after the broadcast, he wouldn't have any regret in this dog life of his!

After thinking this much, Doudou held onto one of the extremities of the bone and started to lick it with his tongue.

Delicious!

It was a bone that True Monarch Yellow Mountain especially prepared for Doudou. It was the femur of a man-raised spirit beast, the 'green bull', prepared by an immortal chef. It smelled very good, and it was a delicacy to eat.

But since it wasn't easy to raise a green bull, one could have only a few of these bones in a decade.

Each time he got to taste these bones, Doudou would sniff them for a while first. Then, he would slowly lick them, and only after smelling and licking them would he start to regretfully eat them.

After all, he could eat only a handful of them each decade!



At this time, a sword light flashed through the sky.

Song Shuhang and Young Master Phoenix Slayer had arrived at the Grievance Settling Platform.

On their way here, Young Master Phoenix Slayer asked Song Shuhang about hand-guided tractors. After the conversation, he determined that little friend Shuhang shouldn't be too bad at driving them.

After knowing this much, he felt at ease.

After reaching the Grievance Settling Platform, Young Master Phoenix Slayer shot a glance at the members of the Nine Provinces Number One Group below. Very soon, his eyes locked onto Doudou who was next to True Monarch Yellow Mountain.

"Hehehe... I've found you, Doudou." Young Master Phoenix Slayer pushed up his glasses, and cold light got continuously

refracted from his lenses.

Song Shuhang felt that the light refracted this time was especially cold.

In the next moment, Young Master Phoenix Slayer leapt down from the flying sword, fiercely pouncing at Doudou.

"What is Senior Phoenix Slayer planning to do?" Song Shuhang was a bit confused... luckily, Young Master Phoenix Slayer remembered to tell his flying sword to slowly descend before pouncing down. Therefore, the flying sword brought Song Shuhang to the ground slowly.

In the meantime, Young Master Phoenix Slayer dashed forward at an incredible speed.

In the blink of an eye, he was already in front of Doudou, less than three centimeters away from his face.

"Woof?" Doudou felt his eyes blur for a moment. In the next instant, a fair face wearing thick-framed glasses appeared in front of him.

Woof! It's Phoenix Slayer! That bastard!

Doudou instinctively bounced back... What is this bastard doing here? Wasn't he in secluded meditation?

Doudou was extremely quick, but Young Master Phoenix Slayer was even quicker!

Phoenix Slayer took a step forward and his two hands moved crazily, leaving behind several afterimages. At this time, he looked like the Thousand-Armed Guanyin as he attacked Doudou.

The scene completely blinded Doudou's eyes.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer's left hand grabbed the big bone that Doudou was holding, while the left ruthlessly patted Doudou's head.

"Woof woof woof woof~" Doudou pitifully called out while he was

sent flying, stopping only after flying for more than ten meters.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer complacently lifted Doudou's bone and swung it.

"PHOENIX~ SLAYER~ WOOF!" Doudou clenched his teeth in anger. All the fur on his body stood up as he roared at Young Master Phoenix Slayer.

"Oh, Doudou. We meet again." Young Master Phoenix Slayer gracefully swung the bone. At the same time, a layer of spiritual energy started to entwine the bone.

Next, the extremity that Doudou had licked with his tongue was cut off.

While at it, the remaining spiritual energy thoroughly purified the remaining parts.

Immediately after, Young Master Phoenix Slayer grabbed the bone, biting down on it with a crack.

Then, he took several bites, just as though he was eating sugarcane. Afterward, he spat all the pieces of the bone on the ground.

Doudou almost spurted fire from his nostrils; he was furious.

"..." Song Shuhang.

Am I having hallucinations? Yeah, I must be having hallucinations. This Senior Phoenix Slayer who is wearing black-framed glasses and has an intellectual look on his face pounced from the flying sword to steal Doudou's bone?

Is it possible that his true form is also that of a dog?

And that he obtained the title of 'Doudou's nemesis' after continuously stealing Doudou's bones?

After looking at the complacent Young Master Phoenix Slayer...

Shuhang felt that it might be possible.

After all, it would be strange if a senior of the Nine Provinces Number One Group were actually normal.

* * *

"Dammit! You motherf*cker, give me back my bone!" Doudou roared and pounced at Young Master Phoenix Slayer... it was a delicacy he could have at most eight times in over a decade!

Young Master Phoenix Slayer elegantly turned around, dodging Doudou's attack.

The fight between the two felt like the rehearse of a play. Doudou was continuously pouncing at him, and Young Master Phoenix Slayer was elegantly dodging each time. The scene was very beautiful and picturesque.

"Bad, very bad! You haven't improved at all, Doudou! So many years have passed, and you're still attacking in the same way! I'm very disappointed. Can't you do something else besides pouncing at me like a mad dog? Oh, wait... I forgot that you hadn't condensed a Monster Core yet, and you can only stay in the form of a pekingese. Except for jumping on people and biting them, you can't do anything else. You can't even use sword techniques and whatnot," Young Master Phoenix Slayer said.

Then, he bit the bone once more, chewing it with several crackling sounds. It was delicious and crispy, and tasted really good!

Afterward, he spat out the pieces again.

"I'll kill you! Do you really think that I haven't improved at all in these years?! I'll open your eyes now!" Doudou bellowed as the four wind-fire wheels appeared beneath his feet.

It looked like he was about to get serious.

"Come, I'm not scared of you!" Young Master Phoenix Slayer

shouted, his provoking abilities were top-notch.

"Woof woof woof!" Doudou's figure changed into that of a wind-fire wheel. He opened his mouth wide, wishing he could gobble down Young Master Phoenix Slayer just like a bone.

But if Doudou was fast, Young Master Phoenix Slayer was even faster.

After all, he was a monster of the Fifth Stage!

Chapter 427: Woof, woof! Mr. Yellow Mountain is my loyal little dog!

Young Master Phoenix Slayer moved left and right, elegantly dodging Doudou's attacks each time.

That wasn't all, he even had the time to provoke him. "The speed of those wind-fire wheels is quite good, but do you think that I've been slacking off for these past years when I was in secluded meditation? To bully you better, I diligently cultivated the whole time."

Is it possible that Young Master Phoenix Slayer's lifetime goal is to cause trouble for Doudou? He meticulously cultivated and even went into secluded meditation just so that he could bully him?

"Woof, woof!" Doudou got angry, and his speed increased even more.

However, no matter how much Doudou accelerated, Young Master Phoenix Slayer was still slightly faster than him.

Their speed was extremely quick, and Song Shuhang could only see several afterimages of both of them.

"Dammit! Just wait until I reach the Fifth Stage and condense a Monster Core, I'll give you a good lesson then!" Doudou bellowed. "Someday in the future, I'll make you remember the fear of me pouncing on you and pinning you to the ground, bullying and taking advantage of you!"

"Tsk, even if you reach the Fifth Stage, you won't be able to defeat me!" Young Master Phoenix Slayer said self-satisfied. "As for your previous bullying, I'll slowly bully you in return. Moreover, you won't have the opportunity to surpass me, now or in the future!"

And if Doudou really happened to surpass him in strength, he would just run in the West together with True Monarch White

Crane.

He wouldn't commit the same mistake he committed when he was young. At the time, he decided to foolishly fight Doudou even if his strength was lower than his, getting continuously bullied.

"Woof, woof, woof! Do you really think that I haven't improved at all? Naive! I'll seize the opportunity to make you taste my powerful move, the Cloud Covering Palm!" Doudou bellowed and clapped his paws. Soon after, he stood up like a person, seemingly getting ready to use a special hand technique.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer narrowed his eyes and prepared himself.

But right at this time, a huge net fell from the sky, firmly wrapping Young Master Phoenix Slayer.

The big net appeared too suddenly; let alone Young Master Phoenix Slayer, even the nearby members of the Nine Provinces Number One Group that were watching the fight weren't able to notice it.

"Ahaha! Stupid Phoenix Slayer! Stupid Yellow Mountain is very proud of this big net, and even a blood demon of the Sixth Stage was unable to get out of it after it was caught!" Doudou laughed complacently.

After hearing this much, Young Master Phoenix Slayer fiercely turned his head around and glared at True Monarch Yellow Mountain. "True Monarch, are you secretly helping Doudou?!"

True Monarch Yellow Mountain shook his head and said, "No, I didn't do anything."

Yellow Mountain had two of those nets. One was in his possession, and the other was left to Doudou after he continuously pestered him about it.

Therefore, it was Doudou himself that had trapped Phoenix Slayer.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer clenched his teeth and turned his head around, looking at Doudou. "Dammit! Do you think it's befitting of a gentleman to win by relying on magical treasures?"

"Woof, this dog isn't a gentleman. I'm just a pekingese. If you refuse to accept it, come here and bite me!" Doudou said self-satisfied. "And if you want to blame someone, go blame stupid Yellow Mountain. After all, he is the one that created this magical treasure."

The nearby True Monarch Yellow Mountain was speechless.

At this time, he was wondering if he should activate Doudou's muting collar once more.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer clenched his teeth in anger.

"Stupid Phoenix Slayer, have a taste of my pounce!" Doudou laughed complacently and turned into a five meters long dog.

"Woof!" After barking, he pounced at Young Master Phoenix Slayer who was currently wrapped in the net. If he were to crash into him like that, Young Master Phoenix Slayer's ribs would surely break.

Just as he was about to get crushed by Doudou, Young Master Phoenix Slayer smiled. Then, he quietly took off his black-framed glasses.

In the next moment...

Doudou's huge body suddenly stopped in midair as though he had hit an invisible wall, coming to a stop.

Then, he slowly descended and squatted on the ground, spitting out his tongue. He was breathing in and out just like an ordinary puppy.

Afterward, he raised his head and cried out like a wolf.

After crying out, he loudly shouted, "Woof, woof! Mr. True Monarch Yellow Mountain is my loyal little dog!"

"Gah..." True Monarch Yellow Mountain almost spat out a mouthful of blood.

Just as Doudou was clearing his throat and preparing to continue, True Monarch Yellow Mountain finally made his move. "Silence!"

Doudou was immediately muted.

"Woof woof woof woof woof~" Only a series of strange cries came out from his mouth.

After shouting for a while, a confused expression appeared in Doudou's eyes.

He tried to call out a few more times, but only a series of 'woofs' came out.

In the end, he had no choice but to give up.

Afterward, he moved next to Young Master Phoenix Slayer who was wrapped in the net and used his paws to scratch at it.

The net slightly shook, and as though it recognized Doudou's aura, it started to shrink automatically. After shrinking into a small ball, it entered Doudou's dog fur.

At this time, Song Shuhang noticed that Young Master Phoenix Slayer looked listless, and even his head was hanging down. What kind of technique did he use to make Doudou so strange? Was it a 'mind-controlling' technique?

After the net disappeared, Young Master Phoenix Slayer raised his head and calmly wore his glasses.

On the other side, Doudou's blurry eyes returned to normality.

"Woof woof woof woof! (What did you do to me, stupid Phoenix Slayer!)" Doudou roared, but no one could understand what he was trying to say.

Perhaps Young Master Phoenix Slayer who might be another monster dog can understand his words?

"Ahahaha!" Young Master Phoenix Slayer laughed complacently. Then, he jumped up and gripped Doudou's neck with his legs.

The two of them were too close, and Doudou didn't have any time to dodge. His huge body was thrown to the ground by Young Master Phoenix Slayer.

"Doudou, do you admit defeat?!" Young Master Phoenix Slayer shouted.

"Woof woof woof!" Doudou furiously scratched the ground with his paws.

But Young Master Phoenix Slayer had carefully chosen the angle to grip his neck, and no matter how much Doudou tried, his claws didn't reach Young Master Phoenix Slayer.

Doudou was filled with grief and indignation!



Around three minutes later.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer got up with an invigorated expression on his face. Afterward, he took another bite off the bone, spitting out the fragments immediately after.

In the rear, Doudou's eyes were blurred, and it felt as though he had undergone a mental breakdown. Even after rolling on the ground for a while, he wasn't able to get up.

Doudou's nemesis lives up to his name.

Is it possible that Young Master Phoenix Slayer's ability is similar to 'mind control'? And thus affected both Doudou's mind and body? Song Shuhang guessed.



The farce between Doudou and Young Master Phoenix Slayer finally came to an end.

The seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group returned

to modifying their tractors.

Moreover, they weren't carrying out their modifications secretly; they were doing it in the open and helping each other out.

For example, Northern River's Loose Cultivator shouted at this time, "Great Master Profound Principle, can you bless my tractor? In exchange, I can apply a water-proof formation to yours! My water-proof formations are amongst the best in the group."

Great Master Profound Principle nodded and arrived in front of Northern River's Loose Cultivator's hand-guided tractor. Then, he joined his palms together and silently chanted some buddhist scriptures. Soon after, he patted the tractor with his hands.

"Whoosh!"

The chanting of scriptures echoed, and the halo of the Buddha shone on all things. The color of Northern River's Loose Cultivator tractor suddenly changed to gold, and it felt as though many little monks were dancing next to it.

The corners of Song Shuhang's eyes twitched... this was the blessing of a real senior monk of the Great Master rank! Literally worth a thousand pieces of gold!

If Senior Northern River's hand-guided tractor manages to remain intact after the competition, it will become an incredibly rare and valuable collectible!

Moreover, if someone's house was haunted by ghosts, they could bring over this blessed hand-guided tractor and easily protect the house from all evils. It can act both as a vehicle and ghost banisher!

"True Monarch Yellow Mountain, is it allowed to attach a propeller behind the hand-guided tractor?" Dharma King Creation asked.

"It should be fine as long as you don't change it into a plane, and

it keeps the appearance of a hand-guided tractor?" True Monarch Yellow Mountain wasn't too sure, either. "Otherwise, how about giving a call to Venerable White and asking him directly?"

"Good point." Dharma King Creation took out his phone and made the call.

* * *

"Fellow Daoist Ancient Lake Temple, is that... a guided missile? Do you want to mount that gadget on the hand-guided tractor...?" Thrice Reckless Mad Saber's voice echoed at this time.

Song Shuhang turned his head around and saw that True Monarch Ancient Lake Temple had quietly loaded a missile in the open container behind the hand-guided tractor.

"An African branch of the Ancient Lake Temple was once looted by the local warlord. Then, I took revenge for them and obtained some spoils of war in return. I didn't think that this gadget would finally come in handy," True Monarch Ancient Lake Temple said calmly.

After saying this much, he looked toward the far-off True Monarch White Crane, and the corner of his mouth rose. He had prepared this missile for that human-bird!

Earlier, he coiled toward the sky in front of numerous disciples, losing too much of his prestige!

At the time, he even thought that Fellow Daoist White Crane's gift was something good... and just by recalling True Monarch White Crane's mysterious appearance while introducing the gift, he felt aggrieved and cheated.

The far-off True Monarch White Crane seemed to have induced his gaze and thus turned its head around. After seeing that eye-catching missile, it took a deep breath through its nose.

White Crane felt that it was over for itself.

Earlier, on the spur of the moment, it decided to stand its ground and energetically support Venerable White's idea of holding a hand-guided tractor competition.

In hindsight, didn't it give its fellow daoists the perfect opportunity to take revenge on itself with this hand-guided tractor competition?

It could already imagine the various fellow daoists using all sorts of methods to 'get close' to it as soon as the competition started.

From the very beginning, it suspected that they would 'inadvertently' bump into its vehicle again and again.

But now, even a missile popped out...

What will be the next thing to pop out?

Explosive lightning? Formations unleashing thousands of swords? Or cannons capable of slaying immortals?

Therefore, True Monarch White Crane wondered if it should assume a female form... after all, even heroes would fall for beauties, and it was sure that it would turn into a beautiful woman if it were to assume a female form.

Perhaps the fellow daoists of the group would soften up a bit after seeing a beautiful female white crane and let it go?

After all, one was prone to forgive a beautiful fairy maiden!

Chapter 428: Little friend Shuhang, here is your kasaya!

The seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group continued to happily modify their hand-guided tractors.

The methods they were using to modify their tractors were getting more and more scary...

Song Shuhang dared to guarantee that these fifty or so hand-guided tractors could demolish a city if they were to run through one.

And the problem was that the seniors of the group weren't satisfied with this level of power and kept adding more and more features.

Song Shuhang muttered to himself, "I feel that it will be a rather scary competition..."

"Don't worry. The fellow daoists of the group know what they are doing. The scene will look lively at most, but there won't be any incidents." True Monarch Yellow Mountain's gentle voice echoed in Song Shuhang's ears.

"Senior Yellow Mountain, hello." Song Shuhang smiled and asked, "Senior, are you going to participate in the competition as well and fight for a place in the first five?"

True Monarch Yellow Mountain waved his hand and said, "Amongst the people gathered here, I'm one of those that don't have the time to explore the ancient ruins with Venerable White. After all, I need to prepare to advance in realm. Senior Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said that I've stayed in the Sixth Stage for far too long and that it is time to advance to the next realm and become a Venerable. However, I can be treated as one of the organizers of the competition, and I find it rather interesting too... therefore, I decided to relax a bit before advancing to the next

realm."

After saying this much, True Monarch Yellow Mountain grabbed a box behind him and handed it to Song Shuhang.

"?" Song Shuhang looked at True Monarch Yellow Mountain in puzzlement.

"This is the reward for receiving Venerable White... take it, it's a collective gift from the members of the Nine Provinces Number One Group," True Monarch Yellow Mountain said.

"Thank you, Senior." Song Shuhang took the box. He was very curious as to what the content was. "Can I open it now?"

"Sure, go ahead." True Monarch Yellow Mountain nodded.

Song Shuhang opened the box. Immediately after, he saw bottles full of medicinal pills as well as a few medicinal pastes.

True Monarch Yellow Mountain told him about the various medicinal pills.

"This is the 'Starry True Qi Refining Pill 6S edition' of the Starry Pavilion that one can use while practicing, strengthening the overall effect of the training and letting one get twice the results with half the effort. There are six bottles in total, and each bottle has thirty pills. Using one pill per day is more than enough.

These are the 'Snow Lake True Qi Powder 7th edition' and the 'Volcano Pill', they can both help one recover their true qi. The former can be taken only in liquid form, while the latter is a normal pill. These two medicines can help you recover some of your true qi in the middle of a critical fight. If used while sitting in meditation, your true qi will recover at an even faster pace. There are six bottles of each of them.

This is the 'Tiger Bone & Bear Gall Paste A8 edition', a medicinal paste than can treat external injuries. There are ten packages in total. It's something that Fellow Daoist Snow Wolf produced personally, and it's very good to treat external injuries.

Then, there is the 'Gentle Dao Pill 5h edition' which has a similar function but has to be taken orally. There are ten bottles in total, and it's something that Fellow Daoist Ancient Lake Temple produced personally. It's a medicine with gentle properties, very suitable for you."

In total, there were next to thirty bottles of medicinal pills and ten packages of medicinal pastes.

All these medicines would last Song Shuhang for at least half a year!

Song Shuhang was extremely grateful. After all, these were medicinal pills he could use immediately. "All of you seniors must have gone through a lot of trouble to gather these medicines, thank you!"

Afterward, he cautiously closed the box and stored it inside his rabbit-shaped size-reducing purse.

"Haha, you're right about the trouble part," True Monarch Yellow Mountain said with a smile. It was mostly because Song Shuhang didn't seem to lack anything although he had just advanced to the Second Stage Realm. As a consequence, the seniors of the group had to rack their brains quite a bit to find something suitable for him.

As they were speaking, True Monarch Yellow Mountain shot a glance at Song Shuhang's size-reducing purse... Shuhang even had a pseudo-space bag? This purse alone was as valuable as the total amount of wealth that loose cultivators of the Third or Fourth Stage had amassed!

As soon as Song Shuhang put the box with the medicines away, True Monarch Yellow Mountain took out another small box, giving it to him. "This is a surprise I prepared for you. It's a gift for taking care of little Doudou all this time. Therefore, I hope you won't refuse this token of gratitude."

Song Shuhang received the small box; it seemed somewhat heavy.

What was inside this box?

"There is a set of magical clothes inside the box. Since you didn't seem to lack weapons, medicinal pills, and cultivation techniques, I decided to gift you a high-quality set of magical clothes of the Second Stage rank that just happened to lie around in my treasure house. It is manufactured with the silk of the 'emerald-green silkworm', and it's waterproof, fireproof, and arms-proof. After wearing it, you can block bullets from small firearms even without activating its defensive powers. But if little friend Song Shuhang were to activate its defensive abilities, even a rain of bullets wouldn't pose a problem!" True Monarch Yellow Mountain explained after seeing Song Shuhang's confused expression.

The more Song Shuhang was hearing, the more his eyes were lighting up.

These magical clothes were simply too incredible! Several times better than bullet-proof clothing!

As that wasn't enough, they were manufactured with the precious silk of the 'emerald-green silkworm'. Although Song Shuhang didn't know what the rank of the 'emerald-green silkworm' was, this set of magical clothes was still produced with the silk of a spirit beast!

The picture of a handsome white-colored scholarly robe resurfaced in Song Shuhang's mind. The type that would make him look like an intellectual after wearing it.

Then, it was the picture of a pure white daoist robe. After wearing it, he would look like someone with high integrity and bearing.

Then, the picture of the modern windbreaker also appeared in his mind; it likewise looked very cool... a set of magical clothes

similar to the ordinary-looking clothes that Soft Feather was wearing!

True Monarch Yellow Mountain smiled and said, "Open it. I can guarantee that it's something very suitable for you."

Song Shuhang stretched out his hand and slowly opened the box.

When the box was opened, bright light spread in all directions.

The light was very bright!

However, it was at the same time gentle and didn't hurt his eyes.

Song Shuhang slightly narrowed his eyes and looked at the 'magical clothes' inside the box!

It was a green robe made of natural silk... and Song Shuhang wasn't able to make out the outline of this set of magical clothes. As far as he could see, this set of magical clothes was actually a... bed sheet?

The green-colored bed sheet had a checked pattern with several black-lined rectangles drawn upon it, just like the bricks of a wall.

Something's amiss. No matter how I look at it, there seems to be something wrong!

Song Shuhang was unable to relate these bed sheet-like magical clothes to a daoist robe or a scholarly robe.

On the other hand, this checked bed sheet made Song Shuhang remember about a very famous vestment.

Song Shuhang's mind automatically rejected the name of that very famous vestment.

It can't be, right? Senior Yellow Mountain can't have possibly decided to gift me that vestment, right? Perhaps there is something else concealed inside the bed sheet?

"What do you think? It's beautiful, isn't it?" True Monarch Yellow Mountain said with a smile.

Song Shuhang took a deep breath and asked, "Senior Yellow Mountain, do these magical clothes have a name?"

"Yes, they have a pretty good name." True Monarch Yellow Mountain slightly nodded and said, "It's an emerald-green kasaya. A very refined name, isn't it?"

"An emerald-green *****!" Song Shuhang's brain automatically censored the word after 'emerald-green'.

But even if his brain censored the word, it didn't change the fact that what he was holding was still an emerald-green *****!

Song Shuhang was dumbstruck. He held onto the box and stood in place, looking very shaken.

This gift from True Monarch Yellow Mountain had caught him off-guard!

After seeing Song Shuhang's surprised expression, True Monarch Yellow Mountain pinched his chin. It seemed the gift totally caught little friend Song Shuhang off-guard. After seeing Song Shuhang's 'pleasantly' surprised expression, True Monarch Yellow Mountain felt an even greater sense of accomplishment.

After all, it was always nice to see the pleasantly surprised expression of the other party while gifting them something.



At this time, Guoguo ran next to Song Shuhang while rubbing his butt. Now that Great Master Profound Principle was busy modifying his hand-guided tractor, he seized the opportunity to run to Song Shuhang's side.

On Guoguo's shoulder, Yu Jiaojiao was taking a nap.

When Doudou and Young Master Phoenix Slayer started their fight, Yu Jiaojiao quickly ran to Guoguo's side. The little fish didn't want to be the innocent victim of a disaster.

"Eh? A kasaya!" After seeing the emerald-green kasaya in Song

Shuhang's hands, Guoguo beamed with joy. "Senior Brother Shuhang, have you finally made up your mind and decided to become a buddhist monk? Like I said earlier, the shape of Senior Brother Shuhang's head is perfectly suitable to become a monk!"

Suitable to become a monk... become a monk... monk...

Song Shuhang stiffly turned his head around and forced a smile.

"Senior Brother Shuhang, quickly put it on and let me see. I want to have a kasaya too. But unfortunately, the disciples of the Faraway Wandering Temple can obtain a vestment manufactured by the temple only after they reach the Second Stage Realm. I really want to know how it feels to wear a kasaya!" An envious expression appeared in Guoguo's eyes.

The mini Yu Jiaojiao also woke up and turned her eyes around.

After shrinking up, Yu Jiaojiao looked like a cute and small fairy. She gently clapped her claws and said, "Fellow Daoist Shuhang, try it out."

Song Shuhang held the kasaya with his trembling hands... Do I really have to wear this emerald-green *****?

True Monarch Yellow Mountain heartily laughed and said, "Little friend Shuhang, wear it and let us have a look. The kasaya has an automatic dust-proof feature. Don't worry, it won't get dirty."

"..." Song Shuhang.

True Monarch, that's not the problem!

Song Shuhang felt his liver throb with pain... Senior Yellow Mountain, why did you gift me an emerald-green *****?!

Moreover, Senior Yellow Mountain is clearly from a daoist school, why did he have a ***** lying around in his treasure-house?!

Song Shuhang took a deep breath and raised his head, looking at True Monarch Yellow Mountain, Guoguo, and Yu Jiaojiao.

Forget it, even if it's a kasaya, it's still a token of gratitude from Senior Yellow Mountain...

At worst, I can just store it inside the size-reducing purse most of the time and wear it only before battles or while exploring secret realms and the likes!

After thinking up to this point, Song Shuhang's heart finally calmed down... after all, he wasn't going to wear this gadget all the time.

"Fine, I'll wear it and let you have a look," Song Shuhang said.

Then, he clenched his teeth and grabbed the emerald-green kasaya, starting to put it on.

In the next moment, a photoflash flashed from a distant place.

It was Soft Feather. She instantly immortalized the cool scene of Song Shuhang grabbing the kasaya and draping it over his shoulders...

Chapter 429: Great Master Profound

Principle's obsessive-compulsive disorder

"Senior Song, you look incredibly handsome!" The distant Soft Feather held her thumb up in approval.

She was very earnest in her appraisal, and she truly thought that Song Shuhang looked really elegant and cool while putting on the kasaya.

It felt as though the kasaya was perfectly suited for him.

"However, you wore it incorrectly, Senior Song! This is a kasaya, not a cloak!" After praising him, Soft Feather reminded Song Shuhang that he was wearing the kasaya wrongly.

Song Shuhang wasn't a buddhist monk, and he had never worn a kasaya before. Therefore, he decided to wear it just like he would wear a cloak, draping it over his shoulders from behind. Actually, Song Shuhang had no intention of wearing it properly.

In his mind, he had decided to rename the 'emerald-green kasaya' to 'emerald-green cloak'. He found that it looked especially cool if worn like a cloak.

After thinking this much, Song Shuhang gave the thumbs up to Soft Feather and said, "It doesn't matter. It's fine as long as it looks good!"

Soft Feather smiled and took several pictures of Song Shuhang, storing them amongst the source material of the 'Senior Song's expression package' folder.

Once Senior Song's expression package is completed, it will be the turn of 'Soft Feather's expression package'. Joys and sorrows must be shared, this is how things are supposed to be! Soft Feather thought to herself.



As soon as Song Shuhang finished his sentence, a figure stealthily appeared next to him. Immediately after, the thick and heavy hands of the figure gently patted on Song Shuhang's shoulder.

Song Shuhang got a scare and turned his head around. It was at that time that he saw Great Master Profound Principle standing behind him, benevolently smiling at him.

"Great Master?" Song Shuhang looked at Great Master Profound Principle in puzzlement.

Great Master Profound Principle gently shook his head and stretched out his hands, removing Song Shuhang's 'emerald-green kasaya'.

What is Great Master Profound Principle trying to do?

...Wait, is it possible that he took a liking to my 'emerald-green kasaya'?

That would be great! Perhaps Great Master Profound Principle will take out a beautiful daoist or scholarly robe, or even a windbreaker and exchange them for the kasaya?

However, this kasaya is still Senior Yellow Mountain's token of gratitude, it would be improper to casually trade it for something else...

Just as Song Shuhang was deep in thoughts, Great Master Profound Principle draped the emerald-green on his body once more.

Afterward, he turned around and arrived in front of Song Shuhang, fastening the kasaya to his body bit by bit.

Very soon, Song Shuhang was finally wearing the kasaya correctly.

Great Master Profound Principle took two steps backward and pinched his chin, carefully sizing up Song Shuhang. Then, he smiled and nodded, looking very satisfied.

Great Master Profound Principle joined his palms together and bowed to Song Shuhang.

Then, he disappeared as quick as lightning.

He came out of nowhere and disappeared the same way.

"..." Song Shuhang.

After Great Master Profound Principle left, Guoguo stealthily stretched his head and explained to Song Shuhang, "The abbot suffers from a compulsive-obsessive disorder, and he can't stand incorrectly worn monk's dresses and kasayas. The clothing must be perfectly aligned and none of the details neglected. He gets very angry whenever the disciples of the temple aren't wearing their clothes properly. Luckily, Senior Brother Shuhang isn't a disciple of our temple. Otherwise, the abbot would have punished you."

"..." Song Shuhang.

At this time, Song Shuhang's bald head was refracting the rays of the sun, and he was wearing a well-ordered emerald-green kasaya on his body. If the clothes below the kasaya were also changed into that of a monk and he were to hold a monk's staff in his hands, a freshly baked 'Great Master Song Shuhang' would suddenly come to life.

"Not bad, these clothes really suit you." True Monarch Yellow Mountain slightly nodded.

A fellow daoist specialized in manufacturing 'magical clothes' once told him that each set of magical clothes had a fated 'master'. As soon as that person wore the clothes, one would think 'Ah, these clothes were made solely for this cultivator!'

And this emerald-green kasaya had been waiting for Song Shuhang's arrival all along. These clothes suited him so much that the two of them looked like a single entity!



Thrice Reckless Mad Saber popped out of nowhere and asked, "Little friend Shuhang, do you want to try out the defensive powers of the kasaya?"

"How should I try them?" Song Shuhang asked.

Since he had already worn it, he might as well seize the opportunity and try out its defenses.

As soon as he finished speaking...

Thrice Reckless Mad Saber casually took out two small-caliber pistols and fired several bullets toward Song Shuhang's kasaya.

Eh? Wasn't Senior Thrice Reckless naked when the disposable meteor sword 001 edition brought him here? Where did he get those pistols?

Is it possible that he got them from some other senior while they were modifying the hand-guided tractors?

"Bang, bang, bang~" Several bullets shot out.

Thrice Reckless' movements had been too fast and sudden. When Song Shuhang thought of dodging, the bullets already reached the kasaya.

Right at this time, the emerald-green kasaya slightly swelled.

After the bullets hit it, they slightly sunk into it before getting bounced back with great force by the kasaya. The six bullets Thrice Reckless fired were all sent back and fell to the ground with jingling sounds.

In the places hit by the bullets, Song Shuhang felt as though someone had gently poked him with their fingers. It didn't hurt at all, and he didn't even feel the impact.

Outward appearance aside, the emerald-green kasaya was an excellent clothing with incredible defensive power. It was this strong even without activating the defensive formation engraved on it.

"Its defensive abilities are really something. Should we try something stronger? I know that Fellow Daoist Ancient Lake Temple is carrying around a powerful guided missile, do you want to try that?" Thrice Reckless Mad Saber was getting ready to cause trouble.

Song Shuhang fiercely shook his head, he shook it so strongly that he resembled a rattle-drum.

What nonsense was that! Even if the emerald-green kasaya could protect him from a missile or something similar, he absolutely didn't want to try it!

This was the biggest difference between him and Thrice Reckless Mad Saber. Song Shuhang was someone that firmly refused to seek death... or at least, this was the plan.



At this time, not too far from the Grievance Settling Platform.

An express delivery vehicle slowly sped toward the platform.

It was a vehicle of China's Fengshou Express Delivery. The driver was a tall and stout man wearing western clothes.

The man in western clothes had a strong build and a serious expression on his face, charming and manly at the same time.

This man was precisely Fengshou Express Delivery's Sima Jiang.

"Strange. How come the surrounding area changed so much? The previous time I came here, it was nothing like this," Sima Jiang muttered to himself.

Just as he was speaking, he noticed that both the GPS on his vehicle and phone lost signal as though they had been blocked.

But Sima Jiang didn't lose his calm. It wasn't his first time experiencing something of the sort.

He calmly took out a map and looked at it for a while. "Forget it. Since the surrounding area has changed so much, even the map is

useless. I'll just proceed forward and wait until I meet someone to ask them the direction."

After thinking this much, Sima Jiang kept driving in a straight line.

Chapter 430: Young Master Phoenix

Slayer's request

Song Shuhang was completely stunned at this time.

The reason for this bewilderment was that he wasn't able to take off his emerald-green kasaya...

Let's explain what happened... after testing the defensive power of the emerald-green kasaya together with Thrice Reckless Mad Saber, Song Shuhang decided to take it off and store it inside his size-reducing purse. If there was a need to fight for justice, he could take it out and wear it, carrying out this cool transformation.

But when he tried to take the kasaya off, he discovered that it wouldn't come off no matter how hard he tried. It felt as though it was an extension of his body.

Song Shuhang anxiously looked at True Monarch Yellow Mountain, seeking his help.

True Monarch Yellow Mountain pondered for a moment and quickly remembered the reason. Then, he told Song Shuhang that the emerald-green kasaya had a very good built-in feature, the anti-theft feature.

If the owner were to wear it (correctly), the kasaya would automatically link itself to its master.

And thanks to the anti-theft feature, the kasaya wouldn't come off unless the correct password was entered!

The unlocking method consisted in condensing a stream of true qi on one's finger and orderly pressing seven times on the checkered squares on the kasaya.

As if that wasn't enough, the method used was quite advanced... if one were to get the combination wrong for seven consecutive times, the kasaya would lock itself, not coming off for the next

seven days.

Without the password, even an expert of the Penniless Thief Sect capable of using the 'Emptying Miracle Hands' would be unable to take it off!

Song Shuhang: 😳

Afterward, True Monarch Yellow Mountain told Song Shuhang that he lost the password and that he didn't remember it anymore... after all, it was only a set of magical clothes of the Second Stage.

After hearing this much, Song Shuhang felt his liver ache... did he have no choice but to keep wearing the kasaya?

Luckily, True Monarch Yellow Mountain had the contact details of the manufacturer of the emerald-green kasaya.

Later, he would send someone to ask the manufacturer what the password to unlock the kasaya was.

The only problem was that Song Shuhang would be unable to take it off until he managed to obtain the password.

❄ ❄ ❄

In the end, Song Shuhang had no choice but to keep wearing the kasaya. Next, he silently moved to a side and started to practice with his saber.

What he was practicing was the volume of the <Inverted Scale Saber Technique>.

Although there were only three styles, the creator of this saber technique had a very wild imagination. Instead of creating a technique that would use the saber to attack, he created a way to use it to form an incredibly powerful defense.

In the future, if Song Shuhang wanted to sweep several battlefields without suffering a single defeat, the three moves of the <Inverted Scale Saber Technique> were the way to go!

Compared to his poor and nonexistent talent in regards to sword techniques, Song Shuhang had a pretty good talent when it came to saber techniques.

Even without someone guiding him, he could already roughly use three moves of the ⟨Inverted Scale Saber Technique⟩ after looking at them only twice.

Of course, the version he was using right now had a fine appearance but no real substance. Properly grasping the ⟨Inverted Scale Saber Technique⟩ wasn't that easy.

The way this saber technique worked was the opposite of ordinary saber techniques. While practicing, Song Shuhang felt that he lacked something.

"Little friend Shuhang, are you practicing a saber technique?" A neutral voice echoed in Song Shuhang's ears.

Song Shuhang turned his head around and saw that Young Master Phoenix Slayer was standing behind him, smiling at him. Then, he pushed up his glasses, and a ray of wisdom flashed through his lenses.

"Senior Phoenix Slayer." Song Shuhang put the treasured saber Broken Tyrant away and said, "I'm trying to learn a few saber moves. Just now, I was trying to grasp the general meaning behind the technique."

Young Master Phoenix Slayer slightly nodded and said, "Little friend is really talented when it comes to sabers."

After the pleasantries, Young Master Phoenix Slayer came straight to the point.

"Little friend Shuhang, I can sense that someone is secretly monitoring you. Moreover, the opposite party seems to be harboring evil intentions," Young Master Phoenix Slayer said in a low voice.

Song Shuhang was surprised.

Someone was monitoring him?

Who could be it?

Was it the Limitless Demon Sect that Young Master Hai was part of? Or was it one of those elite sea urchin warriors that had undergone the baptism of the <20 Years of Mandatory Education Manual>? Or perhaps it was the influence behind that puppet called She Lan?

"Do you want me to take care of the guys secretly monitoring you?" Young Master Phoenix Slayer pushed up his glasses, and rays of wisdom continuously flashed through his lenses. "Moreover, I can find all the ins and outs of the people monitoring you."

Song Shuhang's eyes lit up. Then, he asked, "Senior Phoenix Slayer, what do you want me to do in exchange?"

In the Nine Provinces Number One Group, people attached great importance to the equivalent exchange.

"It's very simple. Earlier, I told you that I've some reservation about 'vehicles', right? Therefore..." With a smile, Young Master Phoenix Slayer said, "How about controlling my body to participate in the 'hand-guided tractor competition' in my stead? After the end of the competition, regardless of the place or the time, I'll accompany you and ferret out these guys monitoring you, discovering which influence they belong to."

"I'm supposed to control your body?" Song Shuhang was stunned.

Soon after, he recalled the battle between Doudou and Young Master Phoenix Slayer earlier. It seemed that Young Master Phoenix Slayer possessed the ability to influence the minds of others and control their actions for a short period of time.

But could his skill work in reverse and allow others to control his body as well?

Song Shuhang asked out of curiosity, "How can I control your body?"

"Does that mean that you comply? Actually, it's very simple. Come, look into my eyes," Young Master Phoenix Slayer said.

Song Shuhang unconsciously looked in Young Master Phoenix Slayer's eyes.

When the two of them looked into each other's eyes, Young Master Phoenix Slayer quickly took off his glasses.

In the next moment, Phoenix Slayer's eyes changed into a starry sky.

Song Shuhang saw a vast world made of stars. In there, countless stars were shining brightly.

He felt that his consciousness started fluttering. It fluttered and fluttered, until it entered that vast world made of stars.



It was unknown for how long he floated about. It felt like an eternity, but at the same time, he felt as though everything was happening in the blink of an eye.

Next, he experienced a zero-gravity feeling.

Afterward, Song Shuhang finally returned to his senses.

At this time, he thought of a matter and asked, "Senior Phoenix Slayer, in which way I can control your body? Is it something like the shared senses of a ghost spirit?"

As soon as he said these words, Song Shuhang was stunned... because the voice he used to speak was that of Young Master Phoenix Slayer!

As if that wasn't enough, a bald young man with delicate features was standing right in front of him. At this time, the young man was about to fall to the ground.

Song Shuhang subconsciously stretched his hand out, trying to support the falling familiar young man.

However, there seemed to be a 'delay' between his thoughts and actions.

Approximately three seconds passed from when he thought of stretching his hand out to support the young man to when he actually stretched it out.

Thereupon, he could only helplessly watch this handsome bald-headed man wearing a kasaya slowly but steadily fall to the ground.

The shining bald head of the man bumped into the ground with a thud.

Due to the rebound, the bald head shot up and bumped into the cold earth once more right after... it looked like a rather painful experience.

Song Shuhang felt his heart ache, because the handsome baldy that fell to the ground was precisely little friend Song Shuhang!

Chapter 431: Mastering the Inverted Scale Saber Technique

When he was told that he had to control Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body, Song Shuhang thought that he would have to control it from a distance.

Little did he expect that his consciousness would directly enter his body!

As if that wasn't enough, his own body seemed to have fallen into a deep slumber due to his consciousness flying out.

It almost felt as though his soul had been shifted to a different body!

However, Song Shuhang knew that this wasn't a soul transferring technique. His soul was still within his original body, and only his consciousness had flown out and entered Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body.

What a strange ability! Song Shuhang thought to himself. The seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group were powerful experts with incredible abilities.



Anyway, since my consciousness was transferred to Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body, where did his consciousness go? Is it inside my body?

Song Shuhang shot a compassionate gaze at 'little friend Song Shuhang' from the viewpoint of an onlooker. After looking at himself lying on the ground, Song Shuhang felt particularly aggrieved.

Therefore, Song Shuhang controlled Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body once more and squatted down, trying to help 'himself' up.

When he tried to control Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body, he still felt that delay.

Only three seconds after he decided to 'help Song Shuhang up' did the body actually perform the action.

This lag was exaggerated! How could he replace Young Master Phoenix Slayer and participate in the hand-guided tractor competition under these circumstances?

In the competition, even a second could make the difference!

The others would immediately dash forward with their rumbling tractors while he would have to wait three seconds before moving! He would lose before even starting! Would I get a good beating if I were to justify it with this line: 'Trash, this young master will give you an advantage of three seconds'...?

The lag of three seconds became even scarier when he thought that there were things such as landmines, torpedoes, disposable flying swords, and so forth buried on the race track. All these things required the participants to react in the shortest time frame possible! Just thinking about the fact that he could react to the traps only after three seconds had passed made him feel that he didn't have many chances of winning.

Song Shuhang felt his scalp go numb. Will I have to use my physical body to tank the landmines just like a mine roller, and break through all the traps buried on the race track with sheer physical strength?

"If there is no way to get rid of this lag, I can participate in the competition only for show," Song Shuhang muttered to himself.

The only good thing was that this body belonged to Young Master Phoenix Slayer. Therefore, he didn't need to worry if he had an arm or leg missing after the competition.

As for the state of Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body after the end of the competition, it would depend on his luck.

With this lag of three seconds, Song Shuhang felt really powerless.

Just as his imagination was running wild, Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body finally propped up 'little friend Song Shuhang'.

Then, after three more seconds, Young Master Phoenix Slayer finally managed to look all around.

After another three seconds, Young Master Phoenix Slayer carried 'little friend Song Shuhang' toward a nearby wall, making him sit down.

After three more seconds, Young Master Phoenix Slayer got up and gazed at little friend Song Shuhang's lifeless body.

A world where one had to wait three seconds to perform each action was surely maddening. If this were a video game, Song Shuhang would be madly pressing on the movement key.

After seeing that his original body was still in a coma, Song Shuhang started to get worried.

His consciousness was transferred to Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body, but he had no idea where Young Master Phoenix Slayer's consciousness went.

What should I do with my body if I am to participate in the competition in Young Master Phoenix Slayer's stead?

Do I really have to leave it here in the open?

But it might be troublesome if I do so! Especially with people secretly monitoring me!

It seems I'll have to look for a secure place and place my body there...

Just as Song Shuhang was in deep thoughts, two disciples of the

Chu Family quickly came over from a faraway place!

At this time, there were many disciples of the Chu Family in the surroundings of the Grievance Settling Platform.

Under the instructions of the family leader, quick-witted and capable disciples were sent over. The reason they came to the Grievance Settling Platform was to take a look at what these powerful seniors were doing and give them a hand if they needed it. There was a chance the Chu Family might profit from this if their luck was good. It would be great if these seniors took a liking to one of these disciples or decided to accept them as disciples inside their sects.

The seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group didn't refuse their help and decided to give these disciples an opportunity to show off.

While modifying the hand-guided tractors, the seniors indeed needed someone capable to give them a hand, and these disciples of the Chu Family happened to come just at the right time.

Actually... when the disciples of the Chu Family discovered that the seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group were modifying these hand-guided tractors to participate in a competition, they almost spat out a mouthful of blood.

Luckily, the family leader chose only those that were capable and quick-witted. Therefore, they quickly adjusted their state of mind and devoted themselves to the work, enthusiastically helping the seniors. Let alone hand-guided tractors, if these seniors wanted to modify tricycles and participate into a tricycle competition, they would still give their all and enthusiastically help them!

As long as they could form a good relationship with them, it was all worth it. As for how they did it... it didn't really matter.

"Senior Phoenix Slayer." The two disciples of the Chu Family came over and greeted Young Master Phoenix Slayer.

The two disciples were a man and a woman and seemed to be in their twenties. They seemed rather quick-witted from the looks in their eyes.

Three seconds later, Young Master Phoenix Slayer turned his head around and faintly smiled at the two disciples, saying, "Hey."

"Senior, as requested, we came to look after Mr. Song Shuhang. Feel relieved, we'll meticulously take care of him until the end of the hand-guided tractor competition, nothing will happen to him," the two disciples said with a smile.

This duty where they had to look after someone was a good opportunity to get closer to Young Master Phoenix Slayer.

After hearing the words of these disciples of the Chu Family, Song Shuhang had an epiphany. Young Master Phoenix Slayer had already prepared everything.

Thereupon, three seconds later, Young Master Phoenix Slayer continued smiling and, with a nod, he said, "Then, I'll leave this little friend to you. Properly look after him and you shall receive a good reward later."

"Thank you, Senior Phoenix Slayer!" the two disciples said happily.

Afterward, one of them moved to the right and the other one to the left. They propped Song Shuhang up together and brought him to a nearby car.

They had driven that car here from the Chu Family, and now, it just so happened that they could use it as a place where Song Shuhang could rest.

* * *

Song Shuhang faintly sighed and looked toward the place where the hand-guided tractors were being modified.

By relying on his memory, he shot a glance toward the place

where Young Master Phoenix Slayer was modifying his hand-guided tractor earlier.

In there, three disciples of the Chu Family were carrying out the last finishing touches on Young Master Phoenix Slayer's modified hand-guided tractor. Afterward, they also sprayed the vehicle number on the tractor... the number was 44.

It was a number that gave one a bad premonition!

From the looks of it, Young Master Phoenix Slayer had already finished modifying his hand-guided tractor before allowing Song Shuhang to control his body.

The water-proof formation and whatnot must have been already taken care of, and that was a relief. At least, he wouldn't have to worry about the tractor suddenly plunging into the water as soon as they reached the section on the sea because it didn't have the correct formations engraved on it.



Since he still had a bit of time, Song Shuhang pondered for a moment and squatted down, picking up the treasured saber Broken Tyrant on the ground.

His body was propped up by the two disciples of the Chu Family earlier and taken somewhere else, but the treasured saber Broken Tyrant was left behind.

After picking up the saber, Song Shuhang decided to keep practicing the <Inverted Scale Saber Technique>.

Perhaps there was this lag between his consciousness and Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body because he wasn't accustomed to it?

If that was the case, doing some exercise and practicing the <Inverted Scale Saber Technique> for a while might allow him to synchronize his consciousness with Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body. It would be great if he could get rid of this absurd lag of three seconds before the start of the competition.

Three seconds later, 'Young Master Phoenix Slayer' started displaying the <Inverted Scale Saber Technique>.

<Dragon Dance Style>, the saber changed into a dancing dragon, and a thousand evils could not harm one's body!

<Dragon Scale Style>, the saber turned into the scales of a dragon, protecting one's body all over!

<Inverted Scale Style>, this was the move with the strongest defense!

Although the delay was still there, Song Shuhang was able to slowly display the three styles.

One time, two times, three times.

After the third time, Song Shuhang felt a miraculous glow flash through his mind.

Countless ideas gushed out of his mind and poured into his consciousness.

The miraculous glow and the sudden explosion of ideas consisted in nearly hundred different understandings of the <Inverted Scale Saber Technique>, and more than thirty different understandings of 'basic saber techniques'.

Song Shuhang felt his brain incredibly clear.

Therefore, he tried to perform the <Inverted Scale Saber Technique> once more!

Three seconds later, Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body wielded the saber once again.

Dragon Dance Style!

The saber moved forward and slashed, resembling a huge dancing dragon. Song Shuhang could even faintly hear the intermittent cry of a dragon transmit from Broken Tyrant.

When he used the Dragon Dance Style, the saber seemed to have transformed into a real dragon that was soaring in the skies. Once the move was unleashed, it could wipe out any attack aimed at Song Shuhang.

Next, he tried the second style, the Dragon Scale Style.

A huge amount of spiritual energy gushed out of Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body, pouring inside Broken Tyrant.

When the Dragon Scale Style was used, the spiritual energy changed into saber qi, and the saber qi changed into dragon scales.

When he used this style, Song Shuhang could see an indistinct huge azure dragon coiling around his body like a snake and protecting him from all attacks.

At this time, Song Shuhang felt as though God himself was helping him! Although he could only use a very rough version of the <Inverted Scale Saber Technique> earlier, he was using it like an expert right now!

Then, he used the last style, the Inverted Scale Style.

The treasured saber Broken Tyrant gently spun while in Song Shuhang's hand, turning upside down.

Soon after, the blade drew a semicircle in front of Song Shuhang from a very weird angle.

This curved slash was the so-called inverted scale of the dragon. It was protecting the sole weakness in the dragon's body and was at the same time the place with the strongest defense.

Song Shuhang found this style very difficult to understand. Why was this slash that formed a semicircle in front of his body the strongest amongst the three styles of the <Inverted Scale Saber Technique>?

When he used Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body to perform the Inverted Scale Style, Song Shuhang felt a heroic feeling well up

in his heart... he felt that no matter how powerful the attack of the enemy was, as long as they dared to attack him head-on, he could surely block their attack with the Inverted Scale Style!

Of course, Song Shuhang knew that this feeling was nothing but an illusion. If the attack of the enemy was too strong, they could reduce him to ashes even with something like a fireball.

But at this time, Song Shuhang had more or less understood why the Inverted Scale Style was stronger compared to the other two styles.

Song Shuhang's comprehension or skill level in regards to the <Inverted Scale Saber Technique> had already reached the necessary level. When he used the Inverted Scale Style earlier, his understanding in regards to the <Inverted Scale Saber Technique> finally reached the master level.

Whether it was a martial skill, a cultivation technique, or a magical technique, its level could be divided into four categories based on the skills of the user.

A person that had just started understanding a martial skill was at the beginner level.

Someone that had a good amount of knowledge about the technique was at the intermediate level.

Someone that had practiced it to perfection was at the master level.

And finally was the great master level where one had trained the technique until developing their own special style.

Unlike cultivation levels, skill categories weren't that clear.

Only the user could roughly estimate its level regarding a certain skill.

Of course... Song Shuhang didn't really know how skills were ranked. He only knew that he had perfectly mastered the <Inverted

Scale Saber Technique》after practicing four times.

'Young Master Phoenix Slayer' finally stopped.

What happened just now? Earlier, I was only capable of using a rough version of the 《Inverted Scale Saber Technique》!

How is it possible that I perfectly learned it after using it for about four times while inside Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body?

"Is my talent so incredible when it comes to saber techniques?" Song Shuhang said in puzzlement.

Wasn't this natural talent a bit too heaven-defying?

No, that's wasn't it!

The reason he was able to comprehend the 《Inverted Scale Saber Technique》 was that close to a hundred different inspirations of saber techniques and more than thirty different understandings of basic saber techniques suddenly resurfaced in his mind.

Thanks to these inspirations and understandings, he was able to quickly grasp the 《Inverted Scale Saber Technique》.

And this 'mind' wasn't that of little friend Song Shuhang, but that of Young Master Phoenix Slayer!

Both the miraculous glow and the realizations all came from Young Master Phoenix Slayer's brain.

Chapter 432: Senior, can I borrow your brain for a bit?

Was this considered 'borrowing a chicken to lay eggs'? Or to put it more accurately, 'borrowing a senior's brain to practice saber techniques'?

Song Shuhang felt that leveling up skills this way was simply too awesome.

If he could get rid of that lag, it would be even more perfect.

Thereupon... since he could control this body only for a limited amount time, Song Shuhang didn't waste time. He placed the treasured saber Broken Tyrant on the ground and started displaying all the cultivation or magical techniques in his possession.

《Basic Buddhist Fist Technique》, 《True Self Meditation Scripture》, 《Virtuous Man's Ten Thousand Mile Walk》, 《Immovable Body of the Buddha》, and the Huge Whale Chapter of the 《Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique》.

Then, it was the turn of the three small tricks based on the usage of mental energy.

As well as the Lightning Palm and the fire controlling art.

He even decided to use the Turtle Breathing Technique and the battery charging technique while he was at it.

The only technique he didn't dare to use was the Roaring Lion's Technique. After all, if he were to suddenly roar and disturb the other seniors while they were modifying their hand-guided tractors, they might get angry.

It would be tragic if the methods they had prepared for True Monarch White Crane ended up being used on him instead...

The results of the training session were amazing.

Whether it was the Basic Buddhist Fist Technique, the Virtuous Man's Ten Thousand Mile Walk, the Lightning Palm, or the fire controlling art, Song Shuhang felt that the level of these skills had gone up by a notch.

Since he had had many fortuitous and deadly encounters lately, Song Shuhang's realm had increased very quickly, reaching the Second Stage Realm in less than two months.

Therefore, the level of his skills was slightly lower than that of his peers in the same realm.

After all, ordinary cultivators took 'years' to reach the Second Stage Realm and not 'months'. Therefore, their skills were at a very high level. In particular, the skills they had used to build their foundation in the First Stage were at least at the 'master level'.

On the other hand, although he had diligently practiced every day, Song Shuhang had trained for less than two months in the end. Even the 〈Basic Buddhist Fist Technique〉 that he had practiced day and night for all this time was still at the 'intermediate level', and he was not even halfway through his way to the 'master level'.

Although he used the 〈Virtuous Man's Ten Thousand Mile Walk〉 whenever he had the chance, this technique was also only about to enter the intermediate level.

On the other hand, the magical technique 'Lightning Palm' was still at the beginner level.

But at this time... Song Shuhang could use Young Master Phoenix Slayer's brain to train them.

As a consequence, the level of his skills rose sharply.

Whether they were fist techniques, footwork, cultivation techniques, or magical techniques, after using them two, three times, he reached the master level.

This feeling was simply too amazing, and even that lag of three

seconds became somewhat cute in his eyes.

Although his realm hadn't increased, Song Shuhang was sure that his fighting capacity would increase by a whole rank after his consciousness returned to his body.

"Practicing while controlling someone else's body is truly wonderful! Later, if I don't comprehend a saber or cultivation technique properly, I might look for Senior Phoenix Slayer and have him help me..." Song Shuhang muttered to himself.

As for the wording to use while asking for his help, which one was the best...

Senior Phoenix Slayer, there is a problem. Even after practicing the XXX technique for a while, I wasn't able to understand it properly. Can you lend me your head... ugh, your mind for a while so that I can practice it to perfection?

Hmm, it had a nice ring to it.

"There is still the Flaming Saber Technique left!" Song Shuhang controlled Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body and raised the treasured saber Broken Tyrant.

Daoist Priest Scarlet Heaven taught him this saber technique in the memories of the loose cultivator Li Tiansu.

Although Scarlet Heaven said that it was a very ordinary saber technique that could be found everywhere, Song Shuhang felt that this wasn't truly the case, and he was sure of it as his understanding of the technique was getting deeper.

However, both his realm and level of the Flaming Saber Technique were insufficient to bring out the full potential and power of the technique.

If he could borrow Young Master Phoenix Slayer's brain and increase his understanding of this skill and bring out its real

power, perhaps he wouldn't lose so easily anymore.

Said and done.

Song Shuhang recalled the scene of Daoist Priest Scarlet Heaven displaying the Flaming Saber Technique and tried to visualize that saber intent capable of burning the world.

Soon after, he spun his wrist.

The Flaming Saber slashed as saber light flashed, swift and violent!

Three seconds later, Song Shuhang blinked his eyes... What? Where are the flames?

Shouldn't there be flames burning on the saber at this point?

Right now, there wasn't anything on the blade of the saber.

Moreover, Young Master Phoenix Slayer's brain didn't offer any inspiration pertaining to the Flaming Saber Technique or other understandings about basic saber techniques.

"It didn't work?" Song Shuhang furrowed his brows.

Is it possible that I used the wrong stance while performing the technique?

Therefore, he recalled once more the scene of Daoist Priest Scarlet Heaven unleashing his saber intent and spun his wrist, slashing once more.

The saber light flashed. But just like before, nothing happened.

Three seconds later, Song Shuhang stopped performing the Flaming Saber Technique and started to ponder.

From the looks of it, the Flaming Saber Technique was different from the other techniques he practiced... even with the help of Young Master Phoenix Slayer's brain, he was unable to increase the level of this particular technique.

"Later, I'll have to put in more effort while practicing the

Flaming Saber Technique," Song Shuhang thought to himself.

It was worth it on his part to put more effort and energy into this rather uncommon version of the Flaming Saber Technique.

Perhaps he might be able to burn the sun, the moon, the sky, the earth, and the oceans with one slash just like Daoist Priest Scarlet Heaven one day.

Just as he was in deep thoughts, the disciples that were helping Young Master Phoenix Slayer spray the hand-guided tractor finished their job and came toward him.

They came over to tell him that the hand-guided tractor had been thoroughly modified.

After Young Master Phoenix Slayer finished modifying his tractor, the other fellow daoists also finished their modifications one after another.

Now... they only had to wait for Venerable White to contact the 'referee' and have the 'spectators' come over. Then, the hand-guided tractor competition would be finally able to commence.



In the meantime.

As before, Fengshou Express Delivery's Sima Jiang was still driving, traveling further and further on this unfamiliar road.

"It can't be. I really lost my way." Sima Jiang stopped the car and rubbed his temples, his expression one of worry.

He had no idea what happened in this place, but the surrounding area had changed completely.

Even after driving on this road for quite a while, he still managed to lose his way and return to his original position. It felt as though he had been driving in circles for the whole time.

One could only say that his luck wasn't too good today.

When the Chu Family and the Illusory Sword School battled on the Grievance Settling Platform earlier this morning, the two factions had some of their experts come over and arrange a few low-level illusory formations in the surrounding area so as to avoid ordinary people rushing toward the Grievance Settling Platform and interrupting the matches.

Normally speaking, the members of the two factions would remove the formations after the end of the battle.

But today's battles were a bit out of the ordinary.

After their defeat, the Illusory Sword School left the Grievance Settling Platform in low spirits, and since there were many powerful seniors in the camp of the Chu Family, none of their disciples dared to stay behind and remove the illusory formations.

As for the people of the Chu Family, they quickly hurried back to their clan since something unexpected happened, forgetting to send someone to remove the formations.

As a consequence, Sima Jiang was now thoroughly lost inside the formation and kept driving in circles.

"Ah! How good it would be if a kind-hearted person were to come over so that I could ask them for directions," Sima Jiang muttered to himself.

Perhaps because he gathered some luck after delivering so many packages for the members of the Nine Provinces Number One Group...

...as soon as he finished speaking, he heard the sound of a racing car transmit from behind.

Sima Jiang happily turned his head around and looked behind.

But in the next moment, his face slightly twitched.

Because he saw a vehicle shaped after a 'dugout canoe' quickly dashing toward him while emitting the rumbling sound of a racing

car.

As if that wasn't enough, the speed of this thing was extremely quick!

What is this gadget?!



Name: Su Wenqu.

Gender: male.

Dao name: 'Saber Carrying Scholar'.

This man was the only son of True Monarch Eternal Fire, a member of the White Cloud Academy.

At the age of 48, he was already a cultivator of the Third Stage Battle King Realm.

Zhou Li's sweetheart, Teacher Ouyang Yuan, was also a member of the White Cloud Academy.

In the recent years, the members of the scholarly faction distanced themselves from the world and rarely showed their faces around. One time, Su Clan's Seven thought of looking for a scholar for a fight, but no matter how he looked around, he simply couldn't find one...

Su Wenqu was the same as most scholarly disciples, and he liked to live a simple life.

It was worth mentioning that Su Wenqu's real dao name was 'Jade Sword Scholar'.

One time, while he was fighting against the disciple of a demonic sect, his sword was broken to pieces by the heavy weapon of the opposite party. At that time, he resolutely picked up a big hacking saber from the ground and used it to execute his sword techniques. The display of strength was overbearing, and the enemy was forced to retreat in defeat again and again.

Later, when the reinforcements of the White Cloud Academy came over and saw the scene, the nickname 'Saber Carrying Scholar' passed from mouth to mouth... and unknowingly, whenever Su Wenqu was mentioned, they would think of the name 'Saber Carrying Scholar'.

On the contrary, no one remembered his real dao name, 'Jade Sword Scholar'.

Su Wenqu: 😞

At this time, Su Wenqu was driving his personal racing car, the 'lonely boat', and planning to head toward the coastal area. He had an appointment with several friends and was now looking for the place where they were going to race.

Moreover, he heard from his father True Monarch Eternal Fire that a senior was holding a very special competition on the coastal area. Apparently, this competition also consisted in vehicles racing against each other...

His father had been invited to this competition as a referee... and the place where that competition was held was also the coastal area.

Su Wenqu really liked racing and found it very interesting.

As soon as he was done racing with his friends, he would head toward that other competition to take a look.

But just as he was driving, he saw an express delivery vehicle that had stopped on the edge of the road ahead, its owner wearing a worried expression on his face.

Chapter 433: The seasoned driver ran into some difficulties

Su Wenqu was a real gentleman, and just like every gentleman, he had a gentle heart and would help others on own initiative.

Therefore, Su Wenqu slowed down in his 'lonely boat' and approached the express delivery vehicle.

When he moved closer to the vehicle, Su Wenqu furrowed his brows. He noticed that he was now inside a formation set up by a cultivator.

"An illusory formation? This explains everything. That little brother barged into the illusory formation by mistake and got lost!" Su Wenqu immediately understood what was going on. He was now clear why the man ahead seemed so worried.

But since someone arranged a formation here, he had to be careful.

If there was an illusory formation in place, the person that arranged it didn't want ordinary people to get involved in the matter. Therefore, there was a chance that cultivators might be fighting amongst themselves or that something that couldn't be shown to mortals was happening on the other side.

Such being the case... he had to quickly get this little brother out of this place! Moreover, he had to keep a certain distance so as to avoid running into something unexpected.

Just as he was pondering, Su Wenqu already arrived next to the express delivery vehicle.

"Eh? This vehicle isn't bad! This express delivery vehicle was meticulously modified!" Su Wenqu had a keen vision. He needed but a glance to determine that the vehicle ahead wasn't an ordinary one.

From the outside, the vehicle resembled an ordinary van. But the tires, the body, the glasses, and the rumbling engine had all been modified.

If this express delivery vehicle were to dash forward at full speed, it would be quite fast!

Interesting! There is still a long way to the coastal area. Such being the case, I might as well have a small race with this little brother, satisfying his desire to race.

Of course, if the other party didn't want to race, he wouldn't force him. After all, the people of the White Cloud Academy were all gentlemen.

After thinking up to this point, Su Wenqu stopped his 'lonely boat' next to the express delivery vehicle.

No matter from which angle one looked at it, the 'lonely boat' seemed to be nothing but a small wooden boat, and as a matter of fact, it was indeed a small wooden boat. Its predecessor was White Cloud Academy's signature means of transportation, the 'heavenly boat'.

Three years ago, one of the 'heavenly boats' got damaged and couldn't be repaired anymore. Therefore, Su Wenqu begged his father to give him the damaged 'heavenly boat', and after modifying it, he turned it into his personal racing vehicle, the 'lonely boat'.

After stopping his vehicle, he lowered the glass of the window, waving his hand at the little brother driving the van. "Little brother, are you perhaps in trouble? Do you need help?"

Sima Jiang had a calm expression on his face at this time. He was a seasoned man that had seen great storms. Although the shape of the other party's racing car was rather odd, perhaps it was their hobby? And Sima Jiang wasn't someone that would criticize other people's hobbies. After all, he was a professional.

Sima Jiang nodded and said, "Yes, younger brother. I indeed run into some troubles. I've lost my way, and even after roaming in this place for a while, I was unable to get out."

Su Wenqu looked like someone in his twenties. Therefore, Sima Jiang unconsciously called him 'younger brother'.

"Haha, this road is indeed somewhat strange," Su Wenqu said with a smile. Then, he looked at Sima Jiang and lifted his brows. "Little brother, your vehicle is rather cool. It seems you put a lot of effort into it, right?"

After hearing this much, Sima Jiang immediately beamed with joy. He had finally met someone with similar interests. "Hehe, thanks. Actually, I modified it so that I could easily deliver packages in all sorts of environment. I made sure that it could travel on all kinds of terrain. After modifying it for a while, it turned into its current appearance."

Afterward, Sima Jiang likewise praised the racing car of the youngster before his eyes. "Younger brother, your car is also rather amusing! This shape is unique, and its speed also seems quite fast!"

Although the model is strange, the speed of that gadget was quite something. It seems this younger brother spent quite a bit of money on it...

"Hehe... little brother, you're overpraising. Do you want to race with me?" Su Wenqu smiled as he raised his brows.

After hearing these words, Sima Jiang shook his head somewhat embarrassed. He pointed toward the huge package in the rear and said, "I'm afraid I'll have to pass. I still have that package to deliver."

"That's really unfortunate." Su Wenqu gently smiled and said, "In that case, follow me. I'll help you leave this place. However, make sure to closely follow behind me. If you fall behind, you might end up returning to your original position."

Sima Jiang said gratefully, "I see... thank you very much, younger brother."

"You're welcome. It's really nothing." Su Wenqu waved his hand and closed the glass of the window of the lonely boat.

Soon after, he pressed on the accelerator, and in a mere second, the lonely boat reached a speed higher than 100 km/h, rushing forward with a 'whizz' sound.

In the rear, Sima Jiang forced a smile... if he had to closely follow behind him while he was going at this speed... how was that any different than racing?

However, he didn't have the time to think about this trivial stuff. The most important thing was to follow that youngster and leave this damnable place.

Therefore, Sima Jiang also pressed on the accelerator. The engine of the cumbersome express delivery vehicle roared, and the whole vehicle dashed forward at high speed.

Although Su Wenqu had put some distance between him and the express delivery vehicle when the latter started moving, Sima Jiang was still able to closely follow behind the lonely boat and wasn't left too far behind.

Due to the cumbersome body of the vehicle, it was inevitable that it would start off slowly. But once it started, its performance was excellent and the speed kept increasing, making it gain great momentum.

In the front, the corner of Su Wenqu's mouth rose. As expected, it was a good vehicle. If they were to meet up again, he would really like to race with him!

The two vehicles sped forward while maintaining their respective positions. Very soon, they got past the illusory formation.



"After traveling on the road for another small section, I can finally part ways with that little brother," Su Wenqu muttered to himself.

Just as he pondering, his complexion suddenly changed.

He immediately took his foot off the accelerator and reduced his speed.

With his sharp senses, he was able to sense a bunch of powerful presences in the front-west direction.

There were more than forty Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperors... and there were also several other presences that were as strong as his father, True Monarch Eternal Fire.

Shiet, did I come to the wrong place? Su Wenqu thought to himself.

At first, he was thinking of keeping this little brother away from the illusory formation and the cultivators inside.

But he didn't think that they would end up on the wrong side of the formation, directly rushing toward the place where the cultivators were.

And judging from their powerful presences, there was a get-together of senior cultivators ahead.

This is bad, we can't keep going forward!

If we show up without being invited, those senior cultivators might get angry.

And this is while ignoring the fact that I even brought a mortal along!

If it's really a get-together of senior cultivators and they are discussing profound principles, there are bound to be strange phenomena appearing here and there.

If an ordinary person were to get too close to the discussing seniors and was influenced by them, this person might end up in a

life-threatening situation.

Since there is still some distance, I should have that little brother make a U-turn and leave this place immediately! Su Wenqu thought to himself.

Thereupon, he changed his direction and prepared to enter the illusory formation once more. This time, he was planning to get out from the other side of the formation.

But just as he was about to turn around, he saw something ahead flashing and flying toward him...

What's that thing?

Form the looks of it, it seems a hidden weapon or something similar...

But whatever that thing was, he was currently going at a very fast speed and didn't want to bump into it.

Therefore, he quickly turned the car around, elegantly dodging the incoming object!

The degree of difficulty of this beautiful dodge was of at least 9.98 points!



Su Wenqu relied on this superior reflexes as a cultivator and the features of the 'lonely boat' to dodge the incoming hidden weapon.

But the same couldn't be said for Sima Jiang who was closely following behind... he didn't have such incredible reflexes, and his vehicle wasn't that incredible either.

Therefore, that glistening hidden weapon quickly pasted on his vehicle.

Sima Jiang didn't even have the time to dodge. Before he could even react, that thing was already pasted on his windshield.

Sima Jiang got a scare.

At last, he finally saw what that shining thing was. Apparently, it was something that resembled a talisman paper...

To be more precise, it was an A4 paper full of strange runes! The only peculiar thing about this paper was that it was emitting a blinding light.

"What's that thing?" Sima Jiang muttered in puzzlement.

Just as he was in deep thoughts... the speed of his vehicle suddenly rose. In mere two seconds, its speed went off the charts!

It literally went off the charts. In the blink of an eye, it was already over 300 km/h and kept increasing.

F*ck, what's happening?

My vehicle can't be this cool— ugh, it can't be this fast!

The brakes! I have to quickly apply the brakes!

Sima Jiang immediately took his foot off the accelerator and pressed the brake pedal.

The speed of the vehicle started to slowly decrease... however, it was still extremely fast. Even if he wasn't pressing the accelerator, just by relying on the accumulated inertia, the vehicle was still going really fast.

The scariest thing was that although he had stepped on the brake, the vehicle was taking a long time to slow down... and while he was trying to slow down, the speed seemed to have started increasing again?

What's happening?

I've already taken my foot off the accelerator and stepped on the brake, and yet, why is my speed increasing instead of decreasing?

Is the brake malfunctioning? Or did I make a mistake and pressed the accelerator instead of the brake?

No, that's impossible!

Sima Jiang was a seasoned driver and wouldn't make such a stupid mistake. But what was happening at this time? Although he was applying the brakes, the vehicle was getting faster and faster.

"Stop! Dammit, stop!" Sima Jiang shouted. He tightly held the steering wheel and concentrated so as to avoid bumping into something while the speed of his vehicle was this fast.

What could he do in such a situation?

In the rear, Su Wenqu opened his eyes wide as he gazed at the madly dashing express delivery vehicle.

"That was fast!" Su Wenqu said. From the viewpoint of an average person, the speed of that vehicle had broken through all limits.

However, the vehicle seemed to be out of control at this time...

"That's bad. If this keeps going, that little brother will be in danger! Little brother, quickly step on the brake! I'm coming to help you!" Su Wenqu shouted from behind.

With the usage of true qi, he was able to clearly relay the message to Sima Jiang.

"I'm... I'm already stepping on the brake!" Sima Jiang replied. "But it doesn't seem to have any effect...!!!"

Chapter 434: The huge express delivery box

Su Wenqu really wished he had already reached the Fourth Stage and could ride a flying sword. That way, he could have easily rescued that little brother on the express delivery vehicle.

"This is bad! The place ahead is precisely where those senior cultivators are gathered!" Su Wenqu said anxiously.

If the cultivators ahead were from daoist, buddhist, or scholarly schools, they wouldn't mind if a mortal barged into their territory by mistake. At most, they would erase his memories.

But if they were cultivators from a demonic or monster school, Sima Jiang might be in danger.

Su Wenqu quickly turned around his lonely boat and followed behind Sima Jiang.



At this time, the seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group had already noticed Sima Jiang and his express delivery vehicle rushing toward the Grievance Settling Platform.

"What's happening? An ordinary person is coming over?"

"Hmm? Doesn't that vehicle seem to be out of control?"

"Moreover, the speed of the vehicle is also not quite right. It has already surpassed the limit of ordinary vehicles."

"There are traces of the usage of a magical technique on the vehicle. Did someone use a speed increasing formation on it?"

"So, who is going to stop that van? If it keeps going on like that, it might bump into the hand-guided tractors and destroy them."

At this time, True Monarch White Crane volunteered and said, "I'll go. I have a purifying technique that can remove the effects and aftereffects of other magical techniques."

True Monarch White Crane felt that its current situation wasn't too good, and the other fellow daoists were looking daggers at it from time to time.

Now that Venerable White wasn't here, True Monarch White Crane was rather clear-headed and wasn't in its 'hardcore fan mode'.

Therefore, it knew that it was the right time to act and gain a few brownie points in the eyes of the other fellow daoists.

In any case, it wasn't going to lose anything, and it was just a small effort for it.

If it could gain a few brownie points now, perhaps it would suffer less during the hand-guided tractor competition?

Thereupon, True Monarch White Crane soared into the sky, gracefully landing on the roof of the van.

Soon, it found what made the vehicle go out of control. "Found it. This A4 paper seems to be the cause of this sudden outburst of speed..."

True Monarch White Crane was currently invisible. Therefore, Sima Jiang couldn't see it.

"It seems I won't need to use any purifying technique. As long as I tear this paper off, the speed of the car should drop," True Monarch White Crane said.

But using an A4 paper to create a functioning 'speed increasing formation' was something very impressive. Just what kind of frightening knowledge had the person who created this formation in the field of runes reached?

Just as it was in deep thoughts, True Monarch White Crane stretched its hand out, preparing to tear off the A4 paper.

But as soon as it touched the paper, its hand stiffened.

"Eh? This aura... there is no mistake! This is Senior White's

aura!" True Monarch White Crane immediately entered its incurable hardcore fan mode.

"However, there is not much of Senior White's aura. It seems that someone has carried out some modification using the A4 talisman paper that Senior White prepared as a base. But it's still an A4 talisman paper that Senior White manufactured personally. It's a priceless treasure!" True Monarch White Crane said excitedly.

I must treasure this A4 talisman paper and place it inside my top secret holdings. In the future, if I manage to convince Senior White to marry me, these things will become the proof of my love.

Just like that, True Monarch White Crane got lost in its fantasies with no way to free itself.



As a consequence... the express delivery vehicle kept accelerating and accelerating, without any sign of stopping.

If it kept going on like this, it would really bump into the hand-guided tractors on the other side.

"What is True Monarch White Crane doing?"

"In what kind of strange state did it fell into?"

"You can't rely on that crane in critical times. Forget it, who is going to stop the van?"

Just as they were discussing, a form suddenly drilled out of the group of fellow daoists.

"Eh? Fellow Daoist Phoenix Slayer?" Northern River's Loose Cultivator said in puzzlement. Since when did Young Master Phoenix Slayer become so active? He was completely different from his usual self!



Young Master Phoenix Slayer, or Song Shuhang if you prefer, was also a little depressed at this time.

By relying on Young Master Phoenix Slayer's keen senses, he noticed the express delivery vehicle while it was still very far away, and that the driver was Little Jiang, someone he knew.

As soon as he saw Little Jiang, he subconsciously thought of moving forward to stop the vehicle, saving him. After all, he was an acquaintance.

But in the next moment, Song Shuhang remembered that he was currently inside Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body and that there was a lag of three seconds between his each and every action.

If he were to lend a hand, he might end up causing a disaster instead.

Since Sima Jiang's life was at stake, Song Shuhang didn't dare to be careless. Therefore, he decided to request the nearby seniors to save Sima Jiang!

But just as he was thinking this... Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body dashed forward and went to the rescue.

The thought about rescuing Sima Jiang finally kicked in, and now that three seconds had passed, his body faithfully executed it.

But when he was halfway there, Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body suddenly stopped.

Because that thought from earlier, when Song Shuhang decided not to carelessly take action as to avoid endangering Sima Jiang, finally took effect.

As a consequence, the situation changed. Young Master Phoenix Slayer shot out of the group of cultivators and coolly stopped on the trajectory of the express delivery vehicle.

The express delivery vehicle madly dashed toward him. At this time, Young Master Phoenix Slayer was also invisible. Therefore, Sima Jiang had no way of seeing him.

Song Shuhang exclaimed, "Dammit!"

It seemed he had to plan things ahead in order to reduce the influence of the lag of three seconds.

The speed of the vehicle was getting faster and faster, and it was about to bump into Young Master Phoenix Slayer.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body automatically reacted, instinctively protecting itself. He raised both his hands and his sapphire finger ring emitted a blinding light.

In the next moment, four blue-colored shields appeared in front of his body; they all looked very sturdy.

Eh? Wait, this is bad! If I use a shield to forcefully stop the vehicle, Sima Jiang might die due to the impact! This thought resurfaced in Song Shuhang's mind.

When he thought this, the four shields suddenly changed.

The originally sturdy ice-blue shields started to ripple, changing into what resembled liquid.

"Bang..."

The express delivery vehicle bumped into the four liquid shields. The impact was so powerful that the first two layers of liquid defense were broken through. But the third and fourth layers were very elastic and thus completely enwrapped the express delivery vehicle.

Moreover, the shields had rebounding properties and made the express delivery bounce back, overturning it.

Just in this fashion, the vehicle overturned like a tortoise and was now unable to move.

In the end, they managed to safely stop it.

Song Shuhang temporarily heaved a sigh of relief.



Perhaps because Sima Jiang accidentally pressed a button when

the vehicle overturned, the rear compartment of the van suddenly opened. Soon after, a box that was two meters in length and half a meter in width dropped out of the vehicle!

Chapter 435: I have comprehended the starter pistol formula!

When he saw the express delivery box, the corner of Song Shuhang's eyes twitched.

This size and this shape... it almost felt as though Soft Feather and Su Clan's Sixteen would suddenly pop out of it!

"Not good. I'm pressed beneath the vehicle," at this time, a voice echoed in Song Shuhang's ears.

Three seconds later, Young Master Phoenix Slayer lowered his head.

It was at that time that he saw True Monarch White Crane pressed beneath the roof of the overturned vehicle. From this scene, it really resembled one of those tragic traffic accidents.

...But True Monarch White Crane's delighted expression somewhat destroyed the feeling of a tragic traffic accident.

At this time, True Monarch White Crane was carefully holding an A4 paper in its hands.

Above the paper was an altered version of a runic formation—the speed increasing formation—and a powerful wind-type impetus formation.

True Monarch White Crane carefully put the A4 paper away. It didn't matter which fellow daoist of the group lost the A4 paper, now that it had fallen in its hands, it belonged to itself! After all, it was a treasure related to Senior White!

After losing the speed increasing properties of the A4 paper, the express delivery vehicle, which was still trying to accelerate, finally calmed down.



Song Shuhang glanced at the insides of the vehicle. The airbag had popped out, and Sima Jiang was unconscious.

Even if the shields Young Master Phoenix Slayer materialized changed into liquid form, they weren't able to completely offset the powerful impact created by the vehicle. Part of the impact ended up affecting the express delivery vehicle and Sima Jiang.

Song Shuhang sighed and controlled Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body. Then, he got inside the van from the rear and carried the unconscious Sima Jiang out.

When he came out of the vehicle, he saw the express delivery box fallen to the ground.

Song Shuhang inspected the box and quickly found the sheet with the information pertaining to the express delivery.

The name of the sender wasn't on the information sheet, and in the addressee field were written the following words: 'Only to be opened by my dear friend Chu Kangbo'. Additionally, there was the address of a village in the outskirts of the Chu Family.

This periphery village had been built so that the Chu Family could receive express delivery from ordinary people, as well as to allow their clansmen to stay in contact with the people of the mortal world.

"Chu Kangbo? Isn't this the name of the ancestor of the Chu Family?" Song Shuhang muttered.

If one were to look at this huge box without taking into account the words 'my dear friend', they would probably think that someone was sending over a coffin as a threat!

Since it's a package for the ancestor of the Chu Family, it's better to let the people of the Chu Family take care of it, Song Shuhang thought to himself.

Thereupon, he stretched out one hand and grabbed the express delivery box while placing Sima Jiang on his free shoulder,

heading toward the place his body was.



"Fellow Daoist Phoenix Slayer, take this van off me! I can't muster my strength while in this position!" True Monarch White Crane's voice echoed from the rear.

"..." Song Shuhang.

Right at this time, another voice echoed from behind.

"Senior, wait a moment!" It was Su Wenqu. At this time, his lonely boat finally managed to catch up.

From afar, he saw that this 'Young Master Phoenix Slayer' was carrying the express delivery box in one hand and that little brother on his other shoulder. Therefore, he got worried for Sima Jiang and called out.

Song Shuhang controlled Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body and moved toward the edge of the vehicle. Then, he used his foot to gently overturn the express delivery vehicle once more, freeing True Monarch White Crane who was pressed below.

Soon after, he turned his head around and saw Su Wenqu leaping down from his lonely boat.

What an elegant and cool scholar!

Su Wenqu was wearing a scholar's cap on his head, a scholarly robe on his body, and had a jade sword hanging around his waist... this was precisely how Song Shuhang wanted to look in the future!

After seeing his clothes, Song Shuhang's favorable impression of Su Wenqu immediately increased by ten points.

"I'm White Cloud Academy's 'Jade Sword Scholar' Su Wenqu. Nice to meet you, Seniors." Su Wenqu courteously greeted them. It felt as though a scholar from ancient times had traveled through time and appeared right before their eyes.

The nearby True Monarch White Crane who was currently

patting the dust off its clothes interjected after hearing these words, "White Cloud Academy's Su Wenqu? Oh, I remember you. You're True Monarch Eternal Fire's only son, right? But wasn't your dao name 'Saber Carrying Scholar'?"

The corner of Su Wenqu's mouth twitched as he said, "Senior, that's just a nickname other fellow daoists gave me as a joke. My real dao name is Jade Sword Scholar."

"So that's how it was. However, I feel that your nickname is way cooler than your dao name," True Monarch White Crane said while nodding.

The corner of Su Wenqu's mouth twitched again.

After hearing Su Wenqu's 'criminal name', Saber Carrying Scholar, Song Shuhang's favorable impression of him increased by another ten points.

Since his mood was quite good, he asked, "Fellow Daoist Su, is something the matter?"

"Cough, Senior. It's like this... the little brother you're carrying on your shoulder is someone I brought here by mistake. We were careless and barged into the place you seniors were having a get-together. All the blame lies with me. Therefore, I hope you won't blame that little brother for what happened," Su Wenqu said cautiously.

Song Shuhang was dumbfounded, and three seconds later, he smiled and said, "Fellow Daoist Su, you misunderstood. We don't want to do anything bad to Little Jiang. Moreover, I've met Little Jiang several times in the past. After seeing that he was unconscious, I decided to bring him to a safe place and check his physical condition."

"This little brother is actually an acquaintance of yours?" After hearing this much, Su Wenqu heaved a sigh of relief.

He was relieved that his mistake hadn't brought a disaster upon

that little brother.



After discovering that Sima Jiang wasn't in trouble, Su Wenqu's attention shifted to that lineup of hand-guided tractors as well as to those seniors that were still carrying out their modifications.

Su Wenqu really liked to modify cars and race with others.

Therefore, he found something like modifying hand-guided tractors quite interesting.

At the same time, when he gazed at that lineup of hand-guided tractors, he recalled the content of his father's call... 'Soon, the world of cultivators will have a competition with very special vehicles'.

Is it possible that the vehicles they were talking about were precisely hand-guided tractors?



Very soon, Su Wenqu found out that his guess was correct. His father, True Monarch Eternal Fire, made a long trip and descended to an empty area next to the Grievance Settling Platform.

His father wasn't alone, there were many other senior cultivators with him.

For example, the man that wanted to rule all the seas, True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon!

For example, the world-famous Venerable Tornado who reached the Seventh Stage Realm fifty years ago!

For example, the all-mysterious Daoist Priest Southern Lake! According to the rumors, he had a close relationship with the ancient Heavenly City.

And for example, the man who had merged lightning-type techniques with his swordsmanship, creating his own unique style, Sword Monarch Blue Sky... and so on, and so on.

All those that came over were illustrious people in the world of cultivators.

All these seniors either came here to act as referees or to spectate the hand-guided tractor competition.

Some others received Venerable White's invitation and came here to participate directly—True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon was one of them.



At the same time, there were several illustrious seniors amongst the people modifying the hand-guided tractors too. Let's introduce these seniors that had come here from afar as guests.

For example, that senior that was currently playing with a pekingese was the renowned True Monarch Yellow Mountain.

For example, that daoist priest that was silently mounting all kinds of frightening weapons on his hand-guided tractor was the talented True Monarch Ancient Lake Temple.

For example, that baboon was the famous Thrice Reckless Mad Saber! It was a surprise discovering that Senior Thrice Reckless was an enlightened baboon. After going back, it could boast about its deeds to his fellow baboons.

For example, that muscular, stout man with silky hair flying upward was the talented Dharma King Creation from the Warring Buddha Sect.

Eh? Wait a moment, there seems to be something wrong with this description!

Dharma King Creation and silky hair flying upward were in the same sentence?

At this time, Song Shuhang was staring at Dharma King Creation's new silky hair!

Song Shuhang remembered very clearly that when the seniors of

the Nine Provinces Number One Group were fighting the 'blood demon', Dharma King Creation turned into a bald Super Saiyan after he used the <Warring Buddha's True Body>.

After the transformation, Dharma King Creation lost all his hair. But now, his head was once again full of shining pitch-black hair?

When did Senior Creation's hair grow up?

Was it the work of a magical technique?

A magical technique that can allow the user to regrow their hair? After thinking up to his point, Song Shuhang's eyes immediately lit up.

After the end of the hand-guided tractor competition, he had to beg Senior Creation to teach him this fabulous magical technique.



Time flew, and the sun started to set.

But on a certain coastal area of China, in a sparsely inhabited land, there were more than a thousand very diverse people.

These were all cultivators that had heard about the first hand-guided tractor competition ever and had thus decided to come here to take a look.

The main reason why so many people gathered here in such a short amount of time was that illustrious senior cultivators were invited here as referees or adjudicators.

These seniors were people with a certain prestige in their sects. Therefore, a lot of their disciples passed on the news. As a consequence, friends, senior or junior brothers, senior or junior sisters, and so on gathered together, becoming the crowd of spectators.

Moreover, the disciples of the Chu Family that were helping the seniors modifying their hand-guided tractors earlier also came over and became part of the crowd.

Song Shuhang's body, the unconscious Sima Jiang, as well as that huge express delivery box were also somewhere here in the coastal area.

Right at this time, Venerable Spirit Butterfly and Venerable White appeared in the airspace of the competition area. The duo was very satisfied with the race track they had created. They were sure that the fellow daoists of the Nine Provinces Number One Group would have a beautiful and everlasting memory of this event.

"Fellow Daoist Tornado, when the competition starts, we'll have to trouble you with firing off the starting pistol," Venerable White said to Venerable Tornado.

"It'll be my honor." Venerable Tornado nodded. Back in those days, when he had yet to advance to the Seventh Stage Realm, Venerable Tornado was known as 'True Monarch Ultimate Flaunting Tempest', abbreviated to True Monarch Flaunting Tempest.

Venerable Tornado had many friends and was a benevolent person. However... he really liked to show off! Therefore, he was surely going to love doing something like firing off the starting pistol and be the center of the attention.

Moreover, Venerable Tornado decided to take a different approach from the usual 'On your marks... Ready... Go!' to start the competition.

The formula he wanted to use today was: 'On your marks... Ready... 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6... Go!'.



Song Shuhang arrived next to his hand-guided tractor full of confidence.

This lag of three seconds wasn't enough to stop him!

The referee was surely going to fire the starting pistol within two

seconds after saying 'On your marks... Ready'.

In other words, he could order the tractor to move forward while the referee was shouting 'Ready'!

And three seconds later, he would finally shoot forward!

Chapter 436: Hello Fellow Daoists watching from home, I'm Su Clan's Seven

In the sky, white clouds appeared and gathered.

These clouds were a trendy flight-type magical treasure in the world of cultivators. Since ancient times, clouds had always been a very practical disguise.

People in ancient times sometimes saw immortals riding clouds... most of them were actually careless cultivators who forgot to use some sort of invisibility spell when they were flying, causing them to be accidentally seen by ordinary people.

Of course, because of some reasons, there were also cultivators who intentionally showed themselves to ordinary people to complete certain tasks.

At this moment, the audience—consisting of cultivators, including the disciples of the Chu Family—climbed onto the cloud-shaped flying magical treasures. They were planning to watch the hand-guided tractor competition from there.

There were also some seniors who were acting as referees. They would use their own flying swords or personal flying-type magical treasures to follow the participants closely.



In the sky, Venerable White was hosting the opening of the competition. "Participants, attention please. The first hand-guided tractor competition of the world of cultivators is about to begin!"

"That's the legendary Senior White!"

"The handsome Senior White is just like in the rumors... anyone who glances at him would be unable to take their eyes off him. If you want me to marry him immediately, there wouldn't be a problem at all!" a female cultivator said bashfully with both hands

on her face.

"Should we pay respects to him? I heard that Senior White's blessings are rather effective."

"Hey, when did you start carrying an incense burner with you wherever you go?"

"It's a must. We are cultivators, so regardless of what matters we have to attend to, we need to make ample preparations beforehand. After I heard that this hand-guided tractor competition was hosted by Venerable White, I secretly brought this incense burner along."

Su Wenqu shot a glance at the nearby fellow daoists and was at a loss for words.

For some reason, he felt that these fellow daoists had really gone all out...



After Venerable White's voice resounded, the fairy maidens, daoist priests, great masters, and scholars of the Nine Provinces Number One Group, as well as a few of Venerable White's friends such as True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon, got off their hand-guided tractors.

Every fairy maiden, daoist priest, great master, scholar, and monster held onto a hand crank.

Thereafter, these elegant and graceful fairy maidens, daoist priests, and virtuous monks went to the front of their tractors... then, they proficiently pressed the lever down, inserting the crank inside.

And after that... they used their strength to rotate it.

On the clouds in the sky, there were already several fellow daoists whose faces went red from stifling their laughter. Forgive them for laughing even at the smallest things, but when they saw a

group of seniors bending forward with their butts sticking out and holding onto the crank tightly while using all their might to turn it, the visual impact was just too strong.

In reality, it was clearly a very ordinary scene of people operating the tractor, but because of the identity of the people cranking the tractors, the entire scene became very amusing.

"How embarrassing, why can't the hand-cranking function to start the hand-guided tractor be changed?" said Northern River's Loose Cultivator who started the tractor after much difficulty.

"I agree with Northern River."

"I agree with Northern River + 1."

"I agree with Northern River + 2."

"All of you are too naive, because Senior White mentioned before—cranking the tractor is where the fun lies and it's the essence of a hand-guided tractor itself!" said True Monarch White Crane.

Just as the seniors were talking amongst themselves, Venerable White descended from the sky.

Thereafter, he took out a hand-guided tractor from his spatial equipment and proficiently cranked the tractor, starting it.

Dharma King Creation asked, "Senior White, you're also joining the competition?"

"No, I won't be joining," replied Venerable White.

The main reason Venerable White organized the hand-guided tractor competition was that he himself really liked to play with this special 'vehicle'.

It was a pity that as the organizer of the competition and creator of the race track, it would be unfair if he joined the competition.

Hence, he could only take part in the competition using a different status to get a kick out of it.

"I will follow you lot in the capacity of a referee. At the same time, I want to prevent any life-threatening situations from happening during the competition," said Venerable White.

All the fellow daoists nodded their heads.

"Also, I hope that everyone will put their best efforts into the competition, exhibiting all of your power!" As he was speaking, Venerable White pointed to the sky—an eight-trigram formation was quietly rotating there.

In the middle of the formation, there was an enormous mirror. It was recording everything that was going on below, storing it within the eight-trigram formation.

"That's the Daily Cultivator's information collecting formation, right?" Northern River's Loose Cultivator's face went stiff.

Venerable White nodded. "Yes, this is the first hand-guided tractor competition of the world of cultivators. Hence, I contacted the Daily Cultivator and got them to help us record and broadcast the whole competition live. Therefore, you guys must give your all."

"..." Dharma King Creation.

Thrice Reckless Mad Saber said, "In other words... both the scenes of us standing in line and frantically cranking the tractors were fully recorded... and broadcasted live to the entire world of cultivators?"

Fairy Dongfang's face stiffened.

Northern River's Loose Cultivator asked, "Am I still in time to withdraw from the competition?"

Thrice Reckless Mad Saber went silent.

A moment later, Thrice Reckless Mad Saber faced the 'information collecting formation', and shouted loudly, "Hello fellow daoists watching from home, I'm Spirit River Su Clan's

Seven, my vehicle number is 38. Everyone, please remember me and support me!"

Song Shuhang spurted out.

So did Northern River's Loose Cultivator.

As well as True Monarch Yellow Mountain.

And the rest of the fellow daoists of the group.

Cave Lord Snow Wolf silently took out a business card from his clothes and gave it to Thrice Reckless Mad Saber. "Brother Thrice Reckless, this is the business card of Medicine Master's disciple, Riverly Purple Mist. I think you'll need it after the competition is over."

Thrice Reckless Mad Saber took the business card and took a look. Thereafter, he burst out laughing. "Don't you worry, nothing will happen to me. I won't need it."

The corners of Cave Lord Snow Wolf's mouth twitched. Brother Thrice Reckless, where is all your self-confidence coming from? Can I also have a bit of whatever you're smoking?

In the sky, the main referee, Venerable Spirit Butterfly, looked at his lovely daughter Soft Feather and said in a grave tone, "In that case, let the competition officially begin!"

The fellow daoists of the Nine Provinces Number One Group as well as some of Venerable White's friends he invited got onto their tractors.

Song Shuhang similarly controlled Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body and climbed onto the hand-guided tractor number 44.

Next, all he had to do was to wait for the referee in charge of firing the starter pistol, Venerable Tornado, to call out: 'On your

marks... Ready!'. At that time, he would immediately set off with the hand-guided tractor!

Deep breaths.

He was Song Shuhang after all, how could he lose because of a mere 'three-second delay'?

"On your marks!" Venerable Tornado raised his starting pistol up high. At this moment, all the participants and the spectators were focusing on him!

This beautiful feeling of being in the limelight, both awesome and showy. Venerable Tornado loved it.

"Ready!" Venerable Tornado shouted.

All the fellow daoists grabbed onto the hand-guided tractor with both hands, trying their best to gather their mental energy.

"Now is the time!" At this moment, Song Shuhang ordered Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body to move the tractor forward! Three seconds later, hand-guided tractor number 44 would set out.

Now, he only had to wait for Venerable Tornado to fire the gun!

0.3 seconds later...

Venerable Tornado continued to raise the starting pistol up high, yet he did not switch the safety off. His mouth slightly opened and said a really odd number, "1..."

What?

Song Shuhang was completely dumbfounded. Why is it a number?

At this time, shouldn't he be firing the gun?

"2!" Venerable Tornado continued not to harbor the intention of firing the gun.

Fire the gun, fire the gun, or else three seconds will be up and I would rush forward!

"3!" Venerable Tornado continued.

It's already three, three should be enough, right?

Because he was a cultivator, the speed at which Venerable Tornado read the numbers was slightly faster—despite counting to three, it took him only two seconds. Coupled with the fact that there was some delay earlier, in total he took 2.3 seconds.

There's still time for him to fire the gun now. I have a three-second delay. If he fires the gun now, I can start the race the moment the gun is fired!

However, Venerable Tornado did not fire the gun—his mouth opened slightly to say, "4!"

Song Shuhang took a deep breath through his nose. If he were to count, wouldn't '1, 2, 3' suffice? Why did he have to say '4'?

If it wasn't '1, 2, 3', then how many numbers does Venerable Tornado have to count before firing the gun? He can't possibly want to count to 10, right?

This was practically out of the standard procedure.

Not good, three seconds are almost up.

Quick, fire the gun! Referee, fire the gun! There is no time left!

But what caused Song Shuhang to feel despair was that Venerable Tornado still did not fire the gun. He uttered a sound that made Song Shuhang's liver hurt. "5..."

Song Shuhang's eyes immediately teared up.

The three seconds were up.

Because of the earlier prompt, Young Master Phoenix Slayer's hands grabbed onto the steering wheel of the hand-guided tractor tightly and began a series of actions to activate it.

"Rumble, rumble, rumble~" The hand-guided tractor made rumbling sounds.

Quick, stop! The competition hasn't started, there's still time to stop now!

But what was regrettable was that even if he wanted to stop, the command would only have an effect on Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body three seconds later.

Hence, under the focused attention of the audience, under the lenses of 'information collecting formation', under the astonished gaze of the fellow participants next to him as well as the referee Venerable Tornado...

"Rumble, rumble, rumble..."

Young Master Phoenix Slayer's hand-guided tractor frantically charged forward, the speed was extremely high! From the looks of it, Young Master Phoenix Slayer had set up a formation on the vehicle that increased its speed at least ten times!

Thrice Reckless Mad Saber said, "Eh? Referee Venerable Tornado had already fired the gun?"

Northern River's Loose Cultivator replied, "I don't think so. You didn't see that Senior Venerable Tornado was also stupefied?"

Thrice Reckless Mad Saber replied, "Then why did Young Master Phoenix Slayer charge forward so suddenly?"

Dharma King Creation added, "He probably went crazy. You know his race, sometimes, they get very nervous."

"However, we're gonna just let him charge out just like that?" asked Thrice Reckless Mad Saber.

Just as the fellow Daoists were talking amongst themselves, Venerable White stood up and aimed his hand at Young Master Phoenix Slayer's hand-guided tractor...

Chapter 437: Choose, either place amongst the first ten or go for a one month trip into space

Just as True Monarch Yellow Mountain and the other fellow daoists were wondering as to which method would Venerable White use to punish Young Master Phoenix Slayer for jumping the gun, Venerable White blinked his eyes in puzzlement. "Eh?"

After a short moment, Venerable White muttered to himself, "Oh... I see. So that's how it was!"

The nearby participants were all baffled.

Next, Venerable White made his move. He stretched his hand out and made a grabbing motion toward Young Master Phoenix Slayer.

Under Venerable White's will, the spiritual energy of the world converged together and formed a big hand that grabbed Young Master Phoenix Slayer's hand-guided tractor.

The tractor was unable to resist the big hand and was quickly pulled to Venerable White's side.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer seemed to have been scared out of his wits too and didn't react... but three seconds later, he called out in alarm, "Aaaaaah~"

Northern River's Loose Cultivator said in puzzlement, "Weird, Young Master Phoenix Slayer is acting strangely today..."

"Fellow Daoist Northern River, you also feel this way? It almost feels as though Young Master Phoenix Slayer has become a different person," Thrice Reckless Mad Saber said.

True Monarch Yellow Mountain slightly raised his brows. There was indeed something strange going on. Young Master Phoenix Slayer's reaction time seemed strangely slow.



Just as the fellow daoists were discussing, Venerable White pulled both the tractor and Young Master Phoenix Slayer to his side.

He didn't put the hand-guided tractor down. Instead, he left it hovering midair.

Just as the fellow daoists were confused and were wondering what was happening, Venerable White glanced at Young Master Phoenix Slayer who was on the hand-guided tractor and faintly smiled, saying, "Little friend Shuhang!"

The surrounding members of the group were confused. It was obviously Young Master Phoenix Slayer, why was Senior White calling him 'little friend Shuhang'?

Song Shuhang's consciousness panicked.

F*ck, did Senior White discover that I was cheating and helping Young Master Phoenix Slayer in secret?

This damned Young Master Phoenix Slayer. At first, Song Shuhang thought that his secret technique was incredible. But he didn't expect that other than having this lag of three seconds, it would take Venerable White only a glance to discern the truth.

Wait, it's not the time to complain about Young Master Phoenix Slayer!

If the nearby seniors were to discover that he and Young Master Phoenix Slayer were cheating and he was participating in the competition in his stead, the consequences might be unimaginable.

What should I do now?

At this time, he couldn't absolutely say something like: 'Eh? Senior White, how did you know that it was me!'.

Moreover, there was an agreement between him and Young Master Phoenix Slayer. He would replace Young Master Phoenix

Slayer and participate in the hand-guided tractor competition in his stead, while Young Master Phoenix Slayer would help him get rid of those guys that were secretly monitoring him. It was a fair exchange between the two.

Although they agreed on this matter in a hurry... an agreement was still an agreement.

It was improper to casually go back on one's word.

Such being the case, should I try to play dumb?

It was the best idea Song Shuhang could come up with within these few seconds.

Therefore, after maintaining his shocked expression for three seconds, Young Master Phoenix Slayer made a hollow laugh and said, "Hahaha, Senior White, what are you saying? I'm clearly Phoenix Slayer!"

"..." The corner of Venerable White's mouth rose as he said, "Shuhang, it seems you aren't planning to confess."

It seemed that playing dumb wasn't going to work!

The nearby seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group had pensive looks on their faces, especially True Monarch Yellow Mountain. Then, as though he had thought of something, the corner of his mouth likewise rose, turning into an evil smile.

Song Shuhang knew that his plan failed and that feigning ignorance was useless.

At this time, he had no other choice... he could only tell the truth and hope to receive a lighter punishment.

Senior Phoenix Slayer, I did my best! Song Shuhang thought to himself.

Due to the lag, three seconds would pass between the thought of confessing and the actual action.

But right at this time, Venerable White gently smiled and said, "In that case, I'll treat you as though you were Young Master Phoenix Slayer!"

Next, he placed the hand-guided tractor number 44 on the ground.

Eh? Did Venerable White compromise? Song Shuhang was extremely confused at this time.

"There are two options now." Venerable White stretched out his finger and said to 'Young Master Phoenix Slayer', "First, you'll give your all in the competition and place amongst the... let's make it first ten! If you manage to place amongst the first ten, no matter if you're little friend Song Shuhang or Young Master Phoenix Slayer, I'll overlook this matter!"

First ten? Although there are only fifty or so seniors participating in the competition, I have this damnable lag of three seconds holding me back! Let alone the first ten, I'm not even sure if I can place in the last ten!

As though he had read the look in Young Master Phoenix Slayer's eyes, Venerable White continued and stretched out his other finger. "If you fail to place amongst the first ten, I'll prepare a month's worth of fasting pills and send you into space, making you stay there for a month! This is the second option."

Song Shuhang's consciousness trembled... what a fearsome possibility. One month in space...

Even if he liked the vast space, being sent there alone for a whole month with a disposable flying sword would make him go crazy.

However... it was fine!

Song Shuhang wasn't afraid of this space trip.

After all, the one that would be sent to space would be Young Master Phoenix Slayer.

Of course, he would still try his best to place amongst the first ten. But if he were to fail, no one could blame him.

"Therefore, try your best in the competition," Venerable White said.

Three seconds later, Young Master Phoenix Slayer patted his chest and guaranteed, "Senior White, that's a given. I'll surely try my best."

"Hmm, good." Venerable White nodded satisfied. "Such being the case, let's make a fresh start. Fellow Daoist Tornado, we'll rely on you again to commence the competition. But this time, don't bother with that 1, 2, 3, 4 after saying 'Ready'!"

Venerable Tornado made a hollow laugh and said, "Hahaha... no problem."

Venerable White smiled and returned to his own hand-guided tractor.

Then, as though he had remembered something, he turned his head around and said to 'Young Master Phoenix Slayer', "Right, I didn't explain it clearly earlier. If you fail to place amongst the first ten, the one I'll send to space is 'little friend Song Shuhang'. That 'you' was pointing precisely at you, Shuhang, and not to Young Master Phoenix Slayer."

"Crack!"

Little friend Song Shuhang's consciousness immediately petrified.

He thought that the one that would be sent into space would be Young Master Phoenix Slayer... he didn't think that he himself would be the victim!

No! I absolutely don't want to go into space for one month! No way!

Three seconds later, flames of war started to burn in Young

Master Phoenix Slayer's eyes... he would surely place amongst the first ten in this hand-guided tractor competition!

He had to fight with all his might! No, that wasn't enough! He had to burst forth all his latent capacity. No matter what method he had to use, he had to place within the first ten!

Venerable Tornado raised the pistol toward the sky once more and said loudly, "On your marks... Ready..."

All the people that were planning to participate in the competition prepared themselves.

They were all waiting for Venerable Tornado to fire the starting pistol.

But Venerable Tornado slightly opened his mouth and said, "One..."

He was worthy of the name of Venerable 'Flaunting' Tornado. He was someone that really liked to show off. He was one of those people that would die if they couldn't show off a bit! Anyway, this was the first hand-guided tractor competition of the world of cultivators. Therefore, he had to make sure to let everyone know who was the best at showing off!

If he couldn't say 1, 2, 3, 4 in Chinese... he could simply say it in English!

One, Two, Three, Four, Five, Six... also sounded very cool.

"Bang~"

In the next moment, Venerable Tornado felt something drilling beneath his feet. Then, his body turned into a small tornado and coiled toward the sky.

"Aaaaaah~" Venerable Tornado called out pitifully. Although he was also a Venerable, Venerable White's surprise attack caught him off guard. Therefore, he was also sent into the sky.

Given his strength, he could have stopped coiling toward the sky when he was halfway...

However, he didn't!

Because while he was coiling toward the sky, the eyes of all the spectators were fixed on him—their attention was completely centralized on his body!

This was simply perfect; it actually allowed him to steal the show!

Venerable White forcefully took over Venerable Tornado's duty as the referee and said, "The competition can start!"

In the next moment, the hand-guided tractors of the participants rushed forward at full speed!

"Rumble, rumble, rumble~"

Next to sixty hand-guided tractors started out at the same time while emitting black smoke and sprinting forward at a speed that could put to shame all the racing cars of the world!

At this time, the one in the lead was... the hand-guided tractor number 44. In other words, Young Master Phoenix Slayer!

Song Shuhang had used once again the 'starting pistol formula'.

After all, Venerable White urged Venerable Tornado not to use 1, 2, 3, and so on anymore.

Therefore, as soon as Venerable Tornado said 'Ready', Song Shuhang gave the command to start off the tractor to Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body.

But what Song Shuhang hadn't expected was that Venerable Tornado would start using 'One, Two, Three' instead of 1, 2, 3!

I'm done for. I'm about to jump the gun once more, Song Shuhang thought to himself.

But life was beautiful precisely because it was unpredictable and ever-changing.

Venerable Tornado suddenly shot up toward the sky!

Venerable White took his place and gave the order to start the competition.

The luckiest thing was that as soon as Venerable White shouted 'the competition can start', the order that Song Shuhang gave three seconds earlier was finally executed.

Thereupon, Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body executed a series of quick actions, and the hand-guided tractor number 44 instantly dashed forward, taking the lead.

"Dammit! He unexpectedly stole my position... the first position is mine! I'll take the first place and offer it as a present to my beloved Senior White!" True Monarch White Crane bellowed.

Thereupon, it stretched out its hand and patted on the edge of the seat.

In the next moment, something that resembled a rocket popped out from the rear of the hand-guided tractor number 40.

"Rumble, rumble, rumble..." True Monarch White Crane's hand-guided tractor immediately accelerated and quickly closed the distance between itself and Song Shuhang.



"Hehe, that puny white crane unexpectedly started to act up. Time to give it a lesson." The corner of True Monarch Ancient Lake Temple's mouth rose, revealing a cold smile.

He stretched out his hand and poked on the steering wheel of the tractor, making a red button appear.

In the next moment, he pressed the button.

That modified 'Scud missile' in the open container behind the tractor locked the hand-guided tractor number 40 that belonged to

True Monarch White Crane.

"Rumble, rumble, rumble..."

The missile soared into the sky, heading toward True Monarch White Crane.

The first hand-guided tractor competition of the world of cultivators had already reached the climax two seconds after its start!

Chapter 438: Intense fighting!

The Scud missile soared into the sky, and its volume increased by several times while midair. Afterward, it shot toward the hand-guided tractor number 40 which belonged to True Monarch White Crane.

Ahead, just as it was about to catch up with the first place—Young Master Phoenix Slayer, True Monarch White Crane had a sudden premonition and turned its head around, looking behind.

Immediately after, it saw a huge Scud missile heading toward itself.

"Hehe, Fellow Daoist Ancient Lake Temple is really impatient. Did you really think that I didn't take precautions when I saw you mount that huge missile on your vehicle?" True Monarch White Crane said complacently.

Soon after, it gently stretched out its hand and threw an iron plate directly above its head.

"Boom!"

In midair, mist suddenly rose and the small iron plate turned into another hand-guided tractor number 40. On the driver seat was a dummy True Monarch White Crane, operating the tractor and looking very lifelike!

It was a decoy that had taken the shape of the hand-guided tractor number 40. No matter if we were talking about the aura, size, or other properties that could be detected only through modern equipment such as electromagnetic waves and temperature, they were all the same as the real True Monarch White Crane.

In the air, that Scud missile was disoriented by the decoy, ending up blasting against it.

The remaining power of the explosion spread in the surrounding

area and affected the upcoming hand-guided tractors in the rear. This allowed True Monarch White Crane and 'Young Master Phoenix Slayer' to increase the distance between them and the group in the rear.



Hello to all the people watching from home the live broadcast of the first hand-guided tractor competition of the world of cultivators! I'm everyone's good friend, the host of the Daily Cultivator on the site, Jiang Shan!

This session of the hand-guided tractor competition is held by the illustrious Venerable White, and Venerable Spirit Butterfly and Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman helped to arrange the race track! According to our information, the race track is both exciting and dangerous. It will be absolutely an unforgettable memory!

The competition has finally started! It's worthy of being the first hand-guided tractor competition ever, it reached the climax as soon as it started! As everyone can see, that man spinning in the sky is the referee in charge of starting the competition, Venerable Tornado. It seems that Venerable Tornado used his own body instead of the firing pistol to start this competition. His professionalism is worthy of note. The person in charge of starting the soon-to-come 'flying sword competition' should use him as an example!

Jiang Shan immediately lost 100 points in the eyes of the cultivator in charge of starting the flying sword competition.

The competition has started, and as you can see, the hand-guided tractor number 44 has taken the lead! The contestant driving the tractor is the handsome Young Master Phoenix Slayer! Young Master Phoenix Slayer is an intellectual and outstanding person, and he's loved by all female cultivators!

Behind Young Master Phoenix Slayer is the contestant number 40, True Monarch White Crane. At this time, it is closely following

behind Young Master Phoenix Slayer, trying to overtake him! Due to its race, True Monarch White Crane has many male and female admirers in the world of cultivators. The racing battle between these two good-looking and extremely popular contestants is exciting to the point of making one's blood boil!

Eh? What's that? A Scud missile! In the rear, the contestant number 6, True Monarch Ancient Lake Temple, shot a missile toward True Monarch White Crane! Although the competition has been going on only for a few seconds, the contestants are already brimming with fighting intent!

Marvelous... True Monarch White Crane used a decoy to block the incoming Scud missile! Currently, there is only the distance of half a tractor between it and Young Master Phoenix Slayer! True Monarch White Crane might overtake Young Master Phoenix Slayer as soon as I'm done with my speech!

Oh? Wait a minute, what's that?

"Boom, boom, boom..."

Powerful explosions echoed. It seemed that True Monarch White Crane's hand-guided tractor passed over something, and in the next instant, without any delay, that something suddenly exploded...

True Monarch White Crane's vehicle was protected by a powerful defensive formation. Therefore, the explosion didn't damage his tractor.

However, the explosion pushed the hand-guided tractor upward, sending it flying into the sky for a small amount of time.

True Monarch White Crane managed to stabilize its hand-guided tractor with much difficulty thanks to its powerful constitution.

Oh, a landmine! To be precise, a modified landmine that doesn't have any delay while detonating. If a hand-guided tractor passes over it, it will immediately explode, and the power of the explosion

will turn into a strong shock wave! True Monarch White Crane just won the lottery! This is just the beginning of the race track, and we've already met something as exciting as a landmine. This really makes one curious as to what kind of interesting things will be ahead!

True Monarch White Crane wasted a lot of time to stabilize its vehicle.

"Whizz, whizz, whizz~"

As a consequence, several hand-guided tractors brushed past True Monarch White Crane.

That is truly regrettable! Although it was only half the length of a vehicle away from overtaking Young Master Phoenix Slayer, True Monarch White Crane carelessly bumped into a landmine and went from the 2nd position to the 49th, almost ending up last! Scholar Brewing Wine, who is currently 50th, is also about to catch up to it!

"Dammit, my name is Drunken Moon! Drunken Moon!" The so-called 'Scholar Brewing Wine' stuck out his head and roared toward the 'eight-trigram information collecting formation' in the sky.

Unfortunately, his voice didn't make it that far and wasn't able to reach the formation.

Scholar Drunken Wine waved his hand toward the camera. He seems rather excited! It is possible that Scholar Drunken Star is preparing a big move?

"Bastard! He actually got my dao name wrong twice within one sentence. It was on purpose, right? Fatty Jiang Shan, I'll not let you off!" Scholar Drunken XXX clenched his teeth in anger.

However, he was indeed going to use a big move.

The reason he stayed in the rear and didn't rush forward at high speed was that he was looking for the right opportunity to catch up

with two guys... one was the baboon version Thrice Reckless Mad Saber, and the other was True Monarch White Crane!

One embraced him while naked and they traveled together for a long time, this made him lose a lot of face. The other was the criminal that sent the gift. Actually, there was also Venerable White. But if he wanted to deal with Venerable White, he needed favorable timing, geographical, and human conditions. Therefore, it was not the time for it. Without the proper conditions, Scholar Drunken Moon didn't even dare to think about dealing with Venerable White. Otherwise, who knew what kind of unfortunate things might suddenly happen to him.

We got sidetracked... the most important thing was that True Monarch White Crane was finally before his eyes!

Scholar Drunken XXX coldly smiled and patted on his hand-guided tractor. Immediately after, a huge drill popped out from the front of his tractor.

The drill started to revolve crazily, and countless chains of runes fused with it, emitting the radiance that specifically belonged to magical treasures. No one doubted that a hand-guided tractor would turn into a sieve if hit by this drill.

"White Crane, get a taste of my Mad Lightning Dragon Drill!!!" Scholar Drunken XXX bellowed and accelerated his hand-guided tractor number 13, dashing toward True Monarch White Crane.

"Eh? Why is Scholar Tyrannical King trying to deal with me?" True Monarch White Crane called out.

"Scholar Tyrannical King? Hehehe... it's all useless, die! If you manage to survive my Mad Lightning Dragon Drill, we can be good friends again!" Scholar Drunken Moon roared.

"No, absolutely not! I must become the winner of this hand-guided tractor competition!" True Monarch White Crane's eyes started to tear up. Then, it controlled its hand-guided tractor and

activated those two rockets in the open container in the rear at full power.

"After giving you a taste of the Mad Lightning Dragon Drill, I'll also steal your first place!" Scholar Drunken Moon roared.

"Go to hell! My hand-guided tractor would be completely destroyed if it were to bump into your electric drill!" True Monarch White Crane shouted. "Moreover, the one that embraced you while naked and flew off with you was Thrice Reckless. Why are you trying to deal with me!?"

"Hehehe... Thrice Reckless, Thrice Reckless... enough chit-chat. I'll thoroughly drill both of you!" Scholar Drunken Moon howled!

Just in this fashion, the hand-guided tractors number 40 and 13 started to play hide-and-seek; the scene was very lively.

Although we couldn't hear what Scholar Cold Moon and True Monarch White Crane were talking about due to the distance, it seems that Scholar Cold Star wants to use his drill to drill through True Monarch White Crane. But True Monarch White Crane refused to accept its fate! It almost feels as though they are playing hide-and-seek, and their speed is extremely high. Although the two are currently in the last positions, there is still hope for them to catch up with the fellow daoists in the front if they keep going all out. Let's hope that both will obtain a good ranking. Now, let's shift the camera to the front once again.

Eh? A sword light suddenly flashed in the front. Which fellow daoist won the lottery this time? Let's pull the camera a bit closer... oh, now we can see clearly. It's a pretty girl... let me see, this is the contestant number 22, Spirit Butterfly Island's Soft Feather. She's Venerable Spirit Butterfly's beloved daughter, and she doesn't have a boyfriend. Single male cultivators might try their best to woo—eh?

For some reason, as soon as he said the word 'woo', the live broadcaster of the Daily Cultivator, Jiang Shan, felt cold air blow

on his neck.

Cough, cough... Anyway, it seems that Miss Soft Feather activated a trap, and was sent back to the starting point together with her tractor! However, the competition has just started, and she still has an opportunity to come on top! Let's give her our best wishes!

In the sky, Soft Feather had a depressed expression on her face. She carelessly activated a trap and couldn't even react when she started coiling and shot up into the sky with her tractor, returning to the starting point!

Although the coiling flight feature was very fun, she was competing at this time! She was delighted as she overtook Senior Creation and Senior Fallout, but right after, she was suddenly sent flying!

She was very unwilling to accept her fate!

"Dammit, I'll surely make a comeback!" Soft Feather shouted. Even if she was returning to the starting point, she would try to fight for the first places!

After wishing good luck to Miss Soft Feather, let's shift the camera toward the first positions. There is currently a fierce battle going on for the first place! Contestant number 44, Young Master Phoenix Slayer, was lucky and is still in the first place with a small advantage over the others. However, there is someone in the rear that is already trying to overtake him... it's the contestant number 5, True Monarch Yellow Mountain!

As soon as Jiang Shan mentioned the dao name 'True Monarch Yellow Mountain'... amongst the spectators on the clouds, the eyes of a dog brightly lit up. "Woof, now is the time!"

Chapter 439: Soft Feather with tears streaming down her face

On the live broadcast, the host kept gasping with admiration. True Monarch Yellow Mountain isn't an established senior for nothing. Earlier, he didn't carelessly increase the speed of his hand-guided tractor. He modified his tractor by perfectly merging cultivation and scientific elements. From the start up until now, his speed has always been stable, and this stable and steady pace allowed him to overtake several other fellow daoists.

Song Shuhang shot a glance at True Monarch Yellow Mountain who almost caught up to him and forced a smile, saying, "Senior Yellow Mountain, didn't you say that you were going to participate only for fun?"

Since he was participating for fun, he should be happy by just participating! Why was he putting in so much effort and even fighting for the first place?!

Song Shuhang absolutely had to place within the first ten! If True Monarch Yellow Mountain were to suddenly get serious and fight for the first ten places as well, it would be very troublesome for him!

"Hehe... what can I say. I didn't expect that your modifying skills would be so bad. I casually modified my hand-guided tractor, and I'm merely participating for fun, and yet, I was able to surpass so many of you guys." True Monarch Yellow Mountain laughed out loud.

At this time, Song Shuhang felt the aura of a big and sinister school bully spread from True Monarch Yellow Mountain's body.

It was particularly annoying, and it made others feel like punching him in the face.

"Anyway, good luck, little friend Shuhang. Keep going and you

might still place amongst the first ten. In the meantime, I'll take my leave." True Monarch Yellow Mountain laughed and grabbed the steering wheel of the tractor tightly. Next, he steadily and firmly surpassed Song Shuhang's hand-guided tractor number 44 by half the length of a vehicle while continuously shaking along with his own tractor.

True Monarch Yellow Mountain is worthy of his name. What a steady and flawless performance. Now, let's congratulate the contestant number 5, True Monarch Yellow Mountain, for temporarily taking the lead in the hand-guided tractor competition... eh? It seems someone is shouting. The sound is very large... wait, it seems to be a song? Is one of the spectators cheering for the contestants? In that case, let's try to catch the sound with the speakers.

Soon after, a crisp and melodious voice was transmitted from the 'eight-trigram information collecting formation' to the whole world of cultivators.

"The fragrance of blooming flower baskets~ Hear this song of mine~ Come to the great Yellow Mountain~ It's a beautiful place with beautiful sceneries~ There are crops everywhere~ with a stupid Yellow Mountain all over the place~"

Doudou's 'Song of the Stupid Yellow Mountain' shook the entire world!

The host, Jiang Shan, was dumbstruck.

"Pfff..." On the cloud-shaped magical treasures, the majority of the spectators almost burst out in laughter.

Those that weren't able to understand what was going on had a confused expression on their face... for example the disciples of the Chu Family. They couldn't understand why the seniors around were holding their laughter back.



True Monarch Yellow Mountain's expression darkened.

He had been careless and forgot to mute Doudou earlier, giving him an opportunity to create trouble.

Maybe he should really prepare some dog meat hotpot this evening...

Next, True Monarch Yellow Mountain activated a sealing technique and roared, "Muting technique!"

On the clouds, the collar of a lovely pekingese shone slightly. Soon after, the lovely pekingese was unable to use human language again and could only bark.

However, a ray of wisdom flashed through the dog eyes of the pekingese... Stupid Yellow Mountain, you're too naive!

The same skill won't work twice on me!

Doudou calmly moved away, revealing a huge loudspeaker and a music player hidden beneath his body.

Then, he stretched out his claw and pressed on the music player.

"The fragrance of blooming flower baskets~ Hear this song of mine~"

The world-shaking 'Song of the Stupid Yellow Mountain' played once more.

The song was light-hearted and with a simple tune. It had terse lyrics and was very good to read aloud.

Moreover, all these cultivators, unless they practiced some special technique, had good memory. They could keep this light-hearted song in mind after hearing it only once and hum it immediately after. If they were to hear it a second time, they could even sing it in its entirety.

As if that wasn't enough, the 'Song of the Stupid Yellow Mountain' was rather catchy.

After hearing it once, the people on the scene unconsciously got carried away by the tune, and some of them even started to hum some of the lines.



Cut... quickly cut off this part! The anxious voice of the host, Jiang Shan, was transmitted from the live broadcast... however, it was too late.

From the looks of it, all the cultivators of the world would know about the 'Song of the Stupid Yellow Mountain' by tomorrow.

"Doudou!!!" True Monarch Yellow Mountain bellowed and couldn't endure it anymore.

He patted on his tractor with his hand. In the next moment, the hand-guided tractor number 5 rose into the sky while emitting tons of black smoke. He was planning to catch up to Doudou and butcher him.

"Woof woof!" Doudou barked at True Monarch Yellow Mountain with a complacent look on his face. He didn't bother running away, because he knew that he couldn't run away from True Monarch Yellow Mountain.

Even the wind-fire wheels that he could use to quickly escape was something that True Monarch Yellow Mountain manufactured for him. Therefore, he really had no chance of escaping and bravely waited for True Monarch Yellow Mountain to come and catch him.

At this time, Doudou felt that the sentence Soft Feather said back then was very correct...'We are not children anymore. Of course we need to be responsible for every action we make.'

Doudou felt that he had discovered an important truth and was thus fearless. Even if True Monarch Yellow Mountain were to mute him for a whole year, he wouldn't have any regret in this dog life of his.

True Monarch Yellow Mountain crushed the music player to

smithereens and grabbed Doudou, throwing him on the edge of the hand-guided tractor.

"Woof woof!" Doudou raised his head and barked at True Monarch Yellow Mountain... If you want to torture or beat me, go ahead. I don't fear death!

The corner of True Monarch Yellow Mountain's mouth twitched. Then, he operated his hand-guided tractor and rumbled away from the place where the competition was held, disappearing at the horizon.

Along the way, True Monarch Yellow Mountain stayed silent and didn't utter a word.

After a long time, he gently said, "Doudou."

His tone was very gentle and kind.

However, Doudou suddenly trembled.

"Without me even noticing, you've grown so big. When I first brought you home, you were of the size of a palm at most," True Monarch Yellow Mountain said while filled with emotion. "Time surely flies!"

"?" Doudou.

"All children are bound to grow up." True Monarch Yellow Mountain lowered his head and glanced at Doudou. "They will leave their parents and search for a companion to pass their life with, creating their own family."

Doudou was baffled. Has stupid Yellow Mountain gone mad?

True Monarch Yellow Mountain faintly smiled and said in a gentle tone, "Therefore, I think that it's time for you to find a husband as well, Doudou."

"..." Doudou.

Wait, wait, wait a moment!

Stupid Yellow Mountain, aren't you making a mistake?

Doudou anxiously barked, "Woof woof woof woof woof!"

Doudou was a male pekingese monster dog! Why did Yellow Mountain want him to find a 'husband'?

Is it possible that I'm a female pekingese and stupid Yellow Mountain raised me as though I was a male up until now?

After thinking this much, Doudou raised his hind leg and shot a look at the place where his 'little Doudou' was supposed to be.

This doesn't seem to be the case! I'm really a male pekingese!

Therefore, Doudou was dumbstruck.

True Monarch Yellow Mountain smiled and stretched out his hand, gently patting Doudou's head.

"Rumble, rumble, rumble..." The tractor emitted black smoke and carried the dumbfounded Doudou away, disappearing without traces.



Well... hello, everyone. Something unexpected happened during the competition. Five seconds ago, True Monarch Yellow Mountain, who managed to overtake Young Master Phoenix Slayer and take the first place, left the competition due to personal matters, getting disqualified. Therefore, the lucky Young Master Phoenix Slayer is still in the first place. He still has a small advantage over the fellow daoists behind.

"..." Song Shuhang.

Should I thank Doudou this time?

If Doudou hadn't disregarded his safety and sought death so blatantly, taking True Monarch Yellow Mountain away in the process, Song Shuhang wouldn't have been able to stay in the lead.

"Doudou, I'll pray for you," Song Shuhang said gratefully.

Then, he operated his hand-guided tractor and increased his speed, rushing forward faster and faster. He wouldn't waste this opportunity that Doudou had given him at the cost of his life!



Just as Song Shuhang was sighing with emotion... a sword light brushed past him with a whizz, overtaking him and flying ahead of him!

"What's that thing?" Song Shuhang opened his eyes wide.

Eh? That thing just now was a sword light! So fast! That speed was simply shocking. Which fellow daoist won the lottery this time? Let's pull the camera a bit closer. Let's take a look... eh? It's unexpectedly her?

Inside the sword light was wrapped a girl with long legs and pitch-black hair, sitting on the hand-guided tractor number 22.

It's Spirit Butterfly Island's Soft Feather! Earlier, she returned to the starting point after she activated a trap. However, she didn't give up and kept driving, and not long after... she activated another trap. Her hand-guided tractor number 22 soared into the sky once more, but this time, it didn't return to the starting point. Instead, it quickly dashed forward, leaving behind all the other contestants and directly overtaking Young Master Phoenix Slayer's hand-guided tractor number 44! Sometimes, misfortune can also be a blessing in disguise. Congratulations to Miss Soft Feather for taking the lead in this session of the hand-guided tractor competition!

Soft Feather had no idea what was going on at this time. She blinked a few times and wondered, Am I first?

This feeling of being first was quite good! She really liked being first!

Soft Feather grabbed the steering wheel of the hand-guided tractor and joyfully laughed. She had to seize the opportunity and

speed forward, putting as much distance as possible between her and the other contestants in the rear and heading toward the finishing line!

Her objective was to get first place in the first session of the hand-guided tractor competition!

"Let's go!" Soft Feather said cheerfully.

The hand-guided tractor number 22 quickly sprinted forward.

Next... she felt the vehicle faintly shake, and a zero gravity feeling followed immediately after.

The corner of her mouth twitched.

She was too familiar with this feeling, because it was her second time experiencing it within a short amount of time.

Then, amidst Soft Feather's screams, her hand-guided tractor soared into the sky due to the coiling flight feature... and after reaching a certain height, Soft Feather and her hand-guided tractor number 22 flew toward the starting point once more!

Soft Feather: 🤔

At this time, she had tears streaming down her face.

Chapter 440: Thrice Reckless Mad Saber's fear

Soft Feather is really lucky, she flew right in front of me in an instant, 'Young Master Phoenix Slayer edition' Song Shuhang thought to himself.

In the next moment, he saw Soft Feather getting shrouded by the sword light again before seeing her fly behind him, back to the starting point amidst screams.

Song Shuhang was speechless.

Was Soft Feather's luck good or bad?

In short, I've got to be very careful. I have a lag of three seconds, so I need to keep my eyes open. If I see something strange, I have to prepare in advance to... aaaaaah!

Song Shuhang was thinking about trying to detect danger in advance so that he could give directions to his body three seconds earlier. However, little did he expect that a trap would suddenly activate in front of him.

What brought him despair was that the trap could actually move around—it was running to and fro on a designated area of the race track. It was running randomly, left, right, above, and below without a fixed pattern—there was no way to predict its movements.

Let alone the three seconds delay, Song Shuhang wouldn't be able to avoid this trap even if his body were to listen to him right away!

The hand-guided tractor number 44 had fallen right into the trap—it was too late to do anything.

Afterward, Song Shuhang felt himself spiraling up into the sky.

The hand-guided tractor and his body were frantically spinning—he was very giddy and uncomfortable at this time.

After this, am I going to fly right back to the starting point? Song Shuhang's face was filled with tears.

However... after coiling to a certain height, it did not seem like Song Shuhang was going to be sent straight to the starting point. The spiraling movement accelerated, making Song Shuhang's have an even worse dizzy spell.

His head was very dizzy... and felt like vomiting.

This was a trap that forced a time-out—once you fell into it, you'd be spinning in the air for ten seconds.

In a competition subject to rapid changes, ten seconds were a lot.

"Whoosh..."

The seniors surpassed Song Shuhang one by one. In the blink of an eye, Song Shuhang dropped from the first place to the 47th.

Some seniors even warmly waved at Song Shuhang before overtaking him.

For example, the baboon-version Senior Thrice Reckless said, "Shuhang, keep spinning, you have already become quite a view on the race track."

Then, Senior Thrice Reckless happily overtook Song Shuhang.

Song Shuhang inhaled deeply through his nose... he felt that the first ten places of the hand-guided competition were bidding him farewell, while the 'one month trip into space' was warmly welcoming him.

No, I don't want to go into space for one month or anything of the sort!

My miserable summer vacation has already unfolded on a magnificent scale, including: the mysterious island, getting hugged to death, battling on the Grievance Settling Platform, getting plotted against by that mister, and now the hand-guided tractor competition... I am already very satisfied. Please, let me spend the

remaining one month in peace!

I want to go to a resort island to bask in the sun while drinking some delicious beverages and enjoying my life on the beach!

I don't want to go into space!

It's one month's worth of time, and I am only a little cultivator of the Second Stage, not a senior of the group. I can still use the fasting pills to settle hunger and thirst, but how am I to use the toilet?

In the environment without gravity, pee will float randomly in all directions, right? What if it flies towards my face?

* * *

"Little friend Shuhang, if you have the time, come to our Warring Buddha Sect and be a guest," Dharma King Creation said as he brushed past Song Shuhang with a head full of elegant, silky hair.

Dharma King Creation was another senior that was participating just for fun. At the moment, it was a crucial period for him to break through his current realm and get promoted to the Sixth Stage True Monarch. Therefore, although he was interested in Senior White's ruins from the 'previous era', he didn't really have the time to explore it.

Also... things like ruins weren't a one-time thing. If he had no opportunity to explore them this time, he would have another the next time. The only thing was that his gains might not be as good as those of his fellow daoists who entered first.

When he brushed past Song Shuhang, Dharma King Creation's phone started ringing.

Dharma King Creation swiped across his phone and saw that it was Su Clan's Seven.

"Eh? Fellow Daoist Seven?" Dharma King Creation smiled and picked up the phone, saying, "Fellow Daoist Seven, what's up?"

Speaking of which, I am currently taking part in a hand-guided tractor competition. It's very interesting. I think it's your loss for not participating."

"I know." On the other end of the line, Su Clan's Seven's tone was rather dark. "I am watching the live broadcast."

"Hahaha, are you regretting not joining?" Dharma King Creation asked again. "You sound off. Did something happen?"

"I'm very off, just like a volcano that is about to erupt." Su Clan's Seven clenched his teeth and said, "The third elder of the Su Clan suddenly called me and cursed at me."

"Why?" asked Dharma King Creation.

"He scolded me for being stupid and dressing up as a baboon while taking part in the hand-guided tractor competition. I supposedly even called out in the live broadcast, saying that I was Spirit River Su Clan's Seven and that I had the hand-guided tractor number 38 and whatnot. Our Spirit River Su Clan is utterly embarrassed. Right now, I want to know just one damn thing: who is that baboon?" Su Clan's Seven was about to go mad.

Dharma King Creation snickered. "Hehe, who else do you think it is?"

"I knew it, it was him... that cheap bastard, Thrice Reckless!" Su Clan's Seven gritted his teeth.

"Hahahaha." Dharma King Creation laughed out loud.

The sound of teeth grinding could be heard from Su Clan's Seven's side. He said hatefully, "Fellow Daoist... can you help me teach Thrice Reckless a lesson?"

"No, I'm a merciful monk," said Dharma King Creation... he really admired Thrice Reckless, especially whenever he courted disaster with all his might. Dharma King Creation had always been rather cheerful in those moments.

"The <Clear Weather After Snowfall>!" Su Clan's Seven said as he clenched his teeth. "I can let you enjoy the authentic <Clear Weather After Snowfall> for three months, you can even make a copy of it."

"The authentic <Clear Weather After Snowfall>? Why is it in the hands of the Su Clan? Is there someone there who enjoys calligraphy? Don't waste it and directly sell it to me," Dharma King Creation exclaimed—even though he practiced extremely brute and fierce battle techniques such as the 'Warring Buddha's True Body', Dharma King Creation was a famous calligrapher, considered a genius by China's Calligraphy Association.

"Get lost!" Su Clan's Seven said hatefully. "At most, I can lend it to you for five months to enjoy it, just help me get back at Thrice Reckless."

"Deal!" Dharma King Creation happily agreed. With Thrice Reckless' ways of courting death, he should have died a long time ago. So, let me subdue monsters and eliminate demons, purifying heaven and earth!

"I am watching the live broadcast. If you do it well, I can lend it to you for an additional month." Su Clan's Seven tried to entice him.

"No problem, leave it to me." Dharma King Creation patted his chest reassuringly.



After ending the call with Su Clan's Seven, Dharma King Creation swiped on his phone and made another phone call.

Very soon, the call was connected and Thrice Reckless Mad Saber's laughter was heard. "Fellow Daoist Creation, what's up? Wahahaha, don't tell me you want me to help you?"

At this moment, Thrice Reckless Mad Saber was at the front of the hand-guided tractor competition—he was vying for the first

position, contending with True Monarch Fallout, Cave Lord Snow Wolf, Northern River's Loose Cultivator and True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon.

"Hehehe, actually, I suddenly remembered about an important piece of information and wanted to tell you about it." Dharma King Creation laughed.

"If you have something to say, then tell me quickly. We are still in the midst of a competition," said Thrice Reckless Mad Saber.

"Not long ago, Xuan Nu Sect's Senior Skylark came to the Warring Buddha Sect as a guest. Thereafter, when we were chatting, we suddenly talked about you, Fellow Daoist Thrice Reckless. She said that the way you court death is rather interesting. Hence, next month, she would go to your immortal cave and stay there as a guest for a period of time." Dharma King Creation laughed and continued, "Even though I am a monk, I envy you. Senior Skylark is so beautiful and pretty, and she wants to be a guest at your place once again... for all you know, you and her might end up together."

Thrice Reckless Mad Saber's entire body started shaking.

At this moment, Thrice Reckless suddenly recalled that several years ago, he was horrifyingly tormented for a year and four months by a 'big senior' whose eyes were as beautiful and dazzling as the moon in the night sky.

Indeed, that beautiful big senior was Xuan Nu Sect's Skylark. She was at the peak of the Seventh Stage Spirit Venerable realm with only a thin line separating her from the Eighth Stage Profound Stage Realm. This was a person that was truly a big senior, and she came from the same era as the other big senior of the group, Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue.

"No...no...!" Thrice Reckless Mad Saber subconsciously screamed.

Pitiful Thrice Reckless' mind was in chaos. Since his mind was in

chaos, he was unable to concentrate fully on the competition. He couldn't even control his vehicle, and in a moment of carelessness, his tractor brushed against Northern River's Loose Cultivator's tractor number 19.

"Thrice Reckless, what are you doing?" Northern River's Loose Cultivator's angry voice was heard.

"Bang!" Thrice Reckless' vehicle collided with Northern River's Loose Cultivator's tractor and both started swaying from side to side.

Just as they were swaying, they got overtaken by contestant number 4 True Monarch Fallout, contestant number 15 Cave Lord Snow Wolf, and contestant number 56 True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon.

"Thrice Reckless, you're courting death!" Northern River's Loose Cultivator said angrily. He patted his hand-guided tractor, and in the next moment, four sharp rams suddenly appeared on top of its four wheels.

Things like drills and rams were quite popular among the seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group.

In the next moment, Northern River's Loose Cultivator controlled his tractor and used all his power to collide into Thrice Reckless Mad Saber's hand-guided tractor.

Thrice Reckless Mad Saber shouted, "Don't do that, Old Northern River, listen to my explanation... it was not on purpose!"

"There is no need for explanations, take my 'Victory Rams!'" shouted Northern River's Loose Cultivator

"Dooooooooon't~"

"Bang, bang, bang..."

The sharp rams collided with Thrice Reckless Mad Saber's tractor and pressed against Thrice Reckless' defensive formation. Sparks

flew.

"Hehehehehe." Dharma King Creation was very satisfied as he put his phone away. He casually operated his hand-guided tractor and charged ahead at a fast speed.

It's about time to deal Brother Thrice Reckless a deadly strike!

Chapter 441: A kamikaze driver is hiding amongst us

Behind Dharma King Creation, 'Young Master Phoenix edition' Song Shuhang secretly wiped the sweat from his face. When the coiling flight feature finally came to an end, he landed directly behind Dharma King Creation.

Thanks to Young Master Phoenix Slayer's keen hearing, he was able to hear the content of Dharma King Creation's phone call. It wasn't that Song Shuhang was trying to eavesdrop, he simply couldn't control Young Master Phoenix Slayer's hearing and ended up hearing what they were talking about even without trying it.

However, he hadn't expected that Dharma King Creation would be so sinister!

At the first glance, he seemed to be a tank-type muscular monk that could aggro monsters and transform into a Super Saiyan, but little that he expect that he would turn out to be so evil.

With just a call, he threw Thrice Reckless Mad Saber into confusion and even involved the innocent Northern River's Loose Cultivator who was just passing by.

The saying 'you can't judge a book by its cover' was really fitting for this senior, right?



Inside the eight-trigram information collecting formation, the host Jiang Shan kept commenting, Hello everyone. This hand-guided tractor competition is truly fast-changing! Miss Soft Feather, who seemed to have turned her misfortune into a blessing, activated another trap that made her return to the starting point! But it doesn't matter. After all, the competition has just started, and Miss Soft Feather might still have an opportunity to win! Let's cheer for her and wish her good luck once more!

Since Miss Soft Feather activated another trap, Young Master Phoenix Slayer returned to the leading position once again... oh? Wait a moment, it seems that Young Master Phoenix Slayer's luck has finally run out. He also ran into a trap, the type that makes you hover in place for a while. His luck was still better compared to that of Miss Soft Feather though. At least, he didn't return to the starting point... however, ten seconds of hovering in place are enough to allow the other contestants to overtake him! Several hand-guided tractors surpassed him already; he went from the first position to one of the last ones!

We have currently several people fighting for the first place. They are True Monarch Fallout, Cave Lord Snow Wolf, Northern River's Loose Cultivator, True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon, and that baboon fellow daoist. Wait, something unexpected happened. The baboon fellow daoist and Northern River's Loose Cultivator clashed against each other! Sparks flew amongst the two, and both lost their place in the lineup fighting for the first place!

Now, let's take a look at what's happening in the rear. True Monarch White Crane and Scholar Drunken Earth are still playing hide-and-seek. Unknowingly, the two of them have already reached the 10th and 13th place! The rear of Fellow Daoist White Crane's hand-guided tractor has been severely damaged, and the open container behind is already broken. However, Scholar Drunken Well doesn't plan to let it off. Although we don't know what happened between the two, let's cheer for them. Whether it is True Monarch White Crane or Scholar Blinding Light, let's wish them good results!

Oh, there was another change on the battlefield. In the rear, one of the fellow daoists suddenly accelerated and dashed forward. The golden-colored hand-guided tractor number 27 belongs to Dharma King Creation! Earlier, he kept a low profile and smoothly advanced while staying in the rear. But now, he suddenly accelerated. Is he planning to catch up with the group in the front

fighting for the first positions? This competition is getting more and more interesting. Let's wait and see what happens!

Just as Jiang Shan was commenting what was happening, the intermittent sound of buddhist scriptures being read started to spread from Dharma King Creation's hand-guided tractor.

His golden-colored hand-guided tractor was full of religious writings, and now, the writings finally activated, changing into a myriad of little monks that filled the sky. These illusory little monks increased all the stats of the tractor. They increased its speed, decreased its weight, lubricated its components, and so on...

In the blink of an eye, Dharma King Creation surpassed something like forty fellow daoists and caught up with Thrice Reckless Mad Saber and Northern River's Loose Cultivator.

Dharma King Creation laughed loudly and said, "Fellow Daoist Thrice Reckless!"

Thrice Reckless Mad Saber, who was in the middle of fighting Northern River's Loose Cultivator, angrily replied, "What do you want now!"

If not for Dharma King Creation's sudden and unexpected call, his tractor wouldn't have gone out of control, bumping into Northern River's Loose Cultivator and making the latter mad!

"Fellow Daoist Thrice Reckless, I want the <Clear Weather After Snowfall>!" Dharma King Creation said with a laugh.

After hearing this much, Thrice Reckless Mad Saber was puzzled. "Dharma King Creation, what relation does it have with me whether or not you want the <Clear Weather After Snowfall>?"

"Of course it is related with you! As long as I manage to overthrow you, someone will lend me the <Clear Weather After Snowfall> so that I can appreciate it! Wahahaha!" Dharma King laughed out loud and continued, "Enough chit-chat. Thrice Reckless, take my Invincible Heaven Shaking Buddhist Fist!"

Thrice Reckless Mad Saber's eyes immediately teared up. What buddhist monk, this Dharma King Creation was plotting against him since the beginning!

"F*ck, f*ck, f*ck! Dharma King, we've been friends for so many years, and our friendship should be more valuable than the <Clear Weather After Snowfall>, right?" Thrice Reckless Mad Saber said impatiently.

He was already trying his best to block the attacks of the angry Northern River... and now, Dharma King Creation charged toward him from behind, further aggravating the situation?

"The answer should be quite clear... of course it isn't! Thrice Reckless, die!" Dharma King Creation laughed madly. Then, the golden statue of a Buddha suddenly stood up from the open container attached to the rear of the tractor.

That statue wasn't like those you would find in ordinary temples. This statue was holding a long staff in its hands, and its entire body was glittering. The bald head of this statue was somewhat similar to that of Dharma King Creation when he was using the <Warring Buddha's True Body>.

After the statue of the Buddha stood up, it raised its fist, which was almost as big as the open container in the rear, and sent it toward Thrice Reckless Mad Saber's hand-guided tractor.

Thrice Reckless Mad Saber issued a blood-curdling scream, "Nooooooooo...!!!"

"Boom..." The huge fist smashed to pieces the defensive formation protecting Thrice Reckless Mad Saber's hand-guided tractor. His tractor immediately turned into a defenseless lamb, exposing its unprotected body to Northern River's Loose Cultivator's sharp and pointed rams.

"Thrice Reckless, eat my attack!" The drills on Northern River's Loose Cultivator's hand-guided tractor pierced through Thrice

Reckless Mad Saber's tractor.

"Riiiiip~" After being hit by the drills, Thrice Reckless's hand-guided tractor was divided in two.

Northern River's Loose Cultivator finally appeased his anger and left the scene on his rumbling tractor.

Thrice Reckless Mad Saber angrily stamped his foot and roared, "Aaaaah! Dharma King Creation, it's not over between the two of us!"

"Wahahaha! I've already managed to successfully obtain the <Clear Weather After Snowfall>. Who cares about you anyway?" Dharma King Creation said complacently. Then, he also brushed past Thrice Reckless Mad Saber with his rumbling tractor.

Myriad of changes happened in the blink of an eye! I am not sure how many times I've said it already! Contestant number 27 Dharma King Creation suddenly popped out from the rear and dealt a deadly blow to contestant number 38 Thrice Reckless Mad Saber with Northern River's Loose Cultivator's assistance. Fellow Daoist Baboon was left behind with a wrecked hand-guided tractor, and unless he's lucky enough to find some of those 'vehicle maintenance tools' arranged on the edges of the race track, he will be disqualified from the competition.

Now, the ones currently in the lead are number 56 True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon, number 15 Cave Lord Snow Wolf, and number 4 True Monarch Fallout. Immediately behind are Dharma King Creation and Northern River's Loose Cultivator who just defeated Thrice Reckless Mad Saber with a joint attack.

Miss Soft Feather, who returned to the starting point earlier, set out once more. However, this time she wasn't lucky enough to find one of those boosting traps. She's currently placed last. Nevertheless, she didn't give up and is currently dashing forward!

Oh! It seems that one of the contestants couldn't bear it anymore

and decided to use a method to quickly increase their speed! The contestant is Fairy Dongfang who is currently placed 37th. What a coincidence, the number of her hand-guided tractor is also 37. But now, she finally decided to rush forward at high speed. It seems she doesn't want to stay in the 37th position anymore!



Fairy Dongfang Six felt that it was time to show her strength to the others... since the start of the competition up until now, her hand-guided tractor had been accumulating energy, and now, it was the time to release it!

Fairy Dongfang had decided to modify her hand-guided tractor precisely like this. After traveling for a certain distance, her tractor would accumulate some energy, and once it was fully charged, she could release all this energy at once!

Thereupon, Fairy Dongfang didn't hesitate to pull back the ring on the edge of her seat.

As soon as she pulled the ring back, powerful spiritual energy shrouded the hand-guided tractor number 37. Afterward, the terrifying amount of spiritual energy completely transformed into motive power that pushed the tractor forward.

Quite fast! Fairy Dongfang thought to herself.

She didn't expect that the energy her hand-guided tractor accumulated would be so scary when fully released... it was so scary that she was having trouble controlling it.

In the blink of an eye, she surpassed three fellow daoists and kept rushing forward at insane speed.

"Aaaaaah! You guys in the front, get out of the way!" Fairy Dongfang screamed. This terrifying speed had surpassed her expectations.



Amongst the spectators on the cloud-shaped magical treasures, Fairy Dongfang's pursuer, Liu Long from the Tian Mountain Range Sect, held his chin and thought about a troublesome matter.

Let's suppose that a kamikaze driver sneaked into the hand-guided tractor competition, and the vehicle of this kamikaze driver now entered a frenzied state... what would happen next...?

Daoist Priest Liu Long deeply pondered!

Perhaps it was an innate talent? Generally speaking, cultivators should have had extremely keen senses and good reaction capabilities, and yet, Fairy Dongfang was unexpectedly a kamikaze driver.

She was a kamikaze driver even though her body was nimble and flexible due to her dancing.

As long as something unexpected happened while she was driving—like a car suddenly passing in front of her—Fairy Dongfang would immediately panic.

Giver her cultivation, she could have thought of at least twenty methods to deal with her current predicament within a mere second. But whenever she was inside a vehicle, she would panic for no reason.

Sometimes, people were born with certain characteristics, and there wasn't anything they could do about that. It almost felt as though they were made that way.

Fairy Dongfang was innately very good at singing and dancing... and was an innate 'kamikaze driver' as well.

Now that her speed suddenly increased, Fairy Dongfang saw that there were several fellow daoists ahead blocking her way. This made her panic.

While dashing forward, her hand-guided tractor started to move

in a strange pattern and not in a straight line. Then, her hand-guided tractor number 37 made a sudden 90-degree turn and dashed toward a fellow daoist in the right front position.

The vehicle of this fellow daoist didn't have a number on it.

Very strange... whose tractor was that and why wasn't there a number on it?

Chapter 442: Super Phoenix Slayer System, activate!

After a careful look, the person turned out to be Venerable White!

No wonder there wasn't a number on his hand-guided tractor. After all, Venerable White wasn't participating as a contestant, but as a referee.

I'm done for! Bumping into someone else is already bad enough. But now, I'm going to bump into Venerable White of all people! I'm dead! Fairy Dongfang felt that tears would soon flow out of her eyes.

Luckily, Venerable White timely discovered that there was something wrong with Fairy Dongfang.

Just as her hand-guided tractor was about to bump into his, Venerable White braked and elegantly dodged the incoming Fairy Dongfang.

"Don't panic, calm down." Venerable White used his gentle voice to comfort her.

"Senior, I'm trying my best to calm down," Fairy Dongfang said. She also wished she could calm down. But if willpower alone was enough to solve everything, there wouldn't be so many accidents in the world.

Sometimes, even if kamikaze drivers were madly pressing onto the accelerator, what they wanted to do in reality was to press on the brake.

Just in this fashion, Fairy Dongfang's hand-guided tractor kept rushing forward with a strange pattern.

Right at this time, Fairy Dongfang shouted, "Senior White, give me your blessings!"

As she shouted, her voice started to get more and more distant.

"..." Venerable White.

Alright, it shouldn't be a problem if I merely wish her good luck.

"I wish you good luck, Fairy Dongfang," Venerable White replied.

"Thanks~" Fairy Dongfang's voice echoed from afar.

However, her situation didn't improve even after Senior White's blessing. Her hand-guided tractor was still on a rampage as before.

The other contestants could only bitterly smile and try their best to dodge her; the whole scene was in an uproar.

* * *

With Fairy Dongfang carelessly operating her vehicle and madly dashing about on the dangerous race track, it was very easy for her to chance upon certain things... the traps that covered the entire place.

Thereupon, it didn't pass a long time before she bumped into one.

The trap emitted a blinding light...

The happy voice of the host echoed. The hand-guided tractor number 37 belonging to Fairy Dongfang seems to have lost control due to its excessive speed! Oh, this is a disaster! The other contestants had to decrease their speed sharply to dodge Fairy Dongfang. Wait, careful... ouch, Fairy Dongfang carelessly activated a trap! Now, what kind of trap did she activate? Will it be an explosive landmine? Or something that will make her return to the starting point? Or one of those lucky traps that would allow her to get far ahead on the race track?

Maybe it's one of those traps that make one return to the starting point? All the fellow daoists hoped this was the case. At this time, the most suitable trap for Fairy Dongfang was the one that would send her to the starting point!

Otherwise, a trap like the one Soft Feather activated earlier wasn't bad, either. It would directly deliver Fairy Dongfang toward the front. That way, someone else would suffer in their stead!

It was better to leave a kamikaze driver like Fairy Dongfang to those fellow daoists in the front with better driving skills. Weaklings like them wouldn't be able to bear all this suffering!

However, Fairy Dongfang didn't coil toward the sky after she activated the trap. On the other hand, many glittering runes appeared on the body of her vehicle.

In the end, the runes changed into an illusory spirit butterfly!

The delicate spirit butterfly gently flapped its wings... in the next moment, Fairy Dongfang made a terrifying discovery; the speed of her hand-guided tractor had increased again.

Moreover, it wasn't an increase of two or three times... the speed increased by at least thirty times!

The already incredibly fast hand-guided tractor had now received another boost that increased its speed by thirty times. Fairy Dongfang was so scared that the thought of leaving the vehicle and running away flashed through her mind.

However, she felt that it was improper to leave the sinking ship. After all, who knew what kind of disaster would this vehicle cause now that it was out of control? She was a girl with a great sense of responsibility.

I can do it! As long as I manage to calm down, I can do it! Fairy Dongfang thought to herself.

Moreover, she felt that this might be the right opportunity to stop being a suicidal driver.

Thereupon, she concentrated and tried to operate her hand-guided tractor number 37, dashing about madly on the race track.

"No! Fairy Dongfang, quickly turn to the right!"

"Bang..." The sound of the violent impact resulting from tailgating echoed.

"Fairy Dongfang, try to calm down! Nothing bad will happen, just try to steadily make an L-shaped turn and get past us... ah!"

"Bang, bang..." The sound of two vehicles overturning echoed.

"Careful! Fairy Dongfang, don't suddenly slam on the brakes! Otherwise, the tractor will backflip!"

"Boom, boom, boom..." Fairy Dongfang's hand-guided tractor backflipped and finally squashed the tractor of another fellow daoist in the backlines.

The race track became a place of chaos and suffering.

This wasn't even a competition anymore... it was simply a massacre!

Fellow daoists watching from home, perhaps you will be surprised or scared by this scene. But I ask you not to panic. Although it feels as though the hand-guided tractor number 37 is brutally murdering its companions, this isn't the aim of the competition. The hand-guided tractor competition is supposed to be a 'peaceful' and 'lovely' competition.

Fairy Dongfang's face was completely red due to the shame she was feeling at this moment.

Although she knocked over and squashed the tractors of several other daoists, they were all protected by powerful defensive formations. Therefore, they could simply lift up them up once she was gone and keep racing.

But earlier, she indeed felt as though an evil wolf had suddenly pounced inside a flock of sheep... and she herself was the wolf.

Luckily, the 'speed increasing spirit butterfly' attached to her vehicle started to weaken. Her speed that had increased by thirty times had almost returned to normality.

Moreover, Fairy Dongfang had started to gradually understand how to handle her speedy 'vehicle'. She felt that her driving skills had greatly improved at this time.

"I just have to go in a straight line. I don't need to do anything else," Fairy Dongfang muttered to herself.

Since Fairy Dongfang dashed about madly on the race track and created a lot of confusion, Song Shuhang controlled Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body and slowly but steadily surpassed over ten seniors, getting to the 21st place.

Soon after, he saw from afar the madly dashing about Fairy Dongfang, and in an even further place, a figure walking on the edge of the road while carrying along a wrecked tractor.

That figure was... Thrice Reckless Mad Saber!

Thrice Reckless was dragging his damaged hand-guided tractor along and bringing it to the edge of the race track.

On the edge of the road was a big maintenance box, and there was a chance that it could allow Thrice Reckless Mad Saber to fix his hand-guided tractor.

But right at this time...

"Aaaaah~ Fellow Daoist Thrice Reckless, quickly get out of the way!" A piercing cry echoed from afar.

Thrice Reckless Mad Saber turned his head around to take a look. In the next moment, he was dumbfounded.

He saw Fairy Dongfang operating her hand-guided tractor number 37 and rushing toward him like a wild horse.

"Nooooo~" Thrice Reckless Mad Saber agonizing voice came directly from his soul. He was so aggrieved that even his tone was one of desperation.

"Moveeeee~" Fairy Dongfang screamed.

In the next second, her hand-guided tractor squashed Thrice Reckless Mad Saber's already damaged tractor.

"Rumble, rumble, rumble..." Fairy Dongfang's hand-guided tractor disappeared in the distance, leaving behind a trail of black smoke.

The corner of Thrice Reckless Mad Saber's mouth twitched as he withdrew his defensive barrier.

Then, he turned his head around and looked at this hand-guided tractor. The marks of two tires were now left on it.

At the critical time, Thrice Reckless wasn't able to protect the tractor timely. It was already a miracle that he was able to protect himself.

After looking at his vehicle, Thrice Reckless was heartbroken. "Why do bad things always happen to me?!"

At this time, Song Shuhang smoothly surpassed Thrice Reckless Mad Saber.

"Senior Thrice Reckless, good luck. You have already become quite a view on the race track." Then, he controlled Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body and waved his hand at Thrice Reckless Mad Saber with a smile on his face.

He had prepared this sentence three seconds earlier so that he could smoothly say it while passing next to Thrice Reckless Mad Saber.

Song Shuhang felt that his ability to plan things ahead of time was becoming better and better.

As the saying goes: 'what goes around, comes around'. Earlier, Thrice Reckless Mad Saber taunted Song Shuhang, saying that he had become quite a view on the race track. In the next moment, he was the one that became the view on the race track.

After surpassing Thrice Reckless Mad Saber, Song Shuhang was now placed 20th in this hand-guided tractor competition.

Venerable White told him that he had to place amongst the first ten. Therefore, there were still ten opponents to surpass.

"This is so stressing!" Song Shuhang muttered to himself.

Moreover, he didn't even know what kind of modifications Young Master Phoenix Slayer carried out to the hand-guided tractor. Although its speed wasn't bad, Song Shuhang felt as though it lacked something.

Other contestants had added explosive and spectacular abilities to their tractors. For example, True Monarch White Crane had two rockets attached to the rear of its tractor; Dharma King Creation could use buddhist scriptures to strengthen and speed up his hand-guided tractor; Scholar Drunken Man had a huge drill mounted on his... they all had their special characteristics.

Was it possible that this hand-guided tractor that Young Master Phoenix Slayer modified didn't have any special ability to suddenly increase its speed?

No, it must have one. How can a vehicle without the ability to sprint forward even be called a vehicle?

Song Shuhang was in deep thoughts.

If the tractor has a 'sprinting ability'... perhaps it might have something to do with that button!

Song Shuhang was a meticulous person. Therefore, he carefully examined Young Master Phoenix Slayer's hand-guided before the start of the competition, trying his best to keep in mind what kind of modifications he carried out.

Now that he thought about it, there was a covered up green-colored button on the edge of the seat.

Should I give it a try? Song Shuhang thought to himself.

If he kept going on at this current speed without any sprinting ability, he wouldn't be able to enter the first ten unless all the seniors ahead encountered some problems.

And the probability that all of them would run into difficulties was rather low.

It that case, he might as well try to fight till the end... speaking of which, that muddle-headed Young Master Phoenix Slayer casually shifted his consciousness to his body and didn't even bother explaining how he modified his tractor!

After thinking this much, Song Shuhang gave a command to his body. Three seconds later, Young Master Phoenix Slayer's hand moved toward the right of the seat and uncovered that green-colored button, pressing it.

Super Phoenix Slayer Battle Armor System, activate!

The system is being initialized...

Identity of the driver confirmed as 'Master Phoenix Slayer'.

System ready.

Hello, Master Phoenix Slayer. The Super Phoenix Slayer Battle Armor System is at your disposal. Do you wish to carry out the transformation?

"What? A transformation?" For some reason, this technologically advanced device gave Song Shuhang an ominous feeling...

Chapter 443: Lady Onion entering into action

"Can the transformation increase the speed of the tractor?" Song Shuhang asked unconsciously.

Yes.

This artificial intelligence can even reply to my questions? Is it a sentient treasure? Song Shuhang thought to himself. Anyway, what was the point of hesitating if it could increase his speed?

After all, he wanted to enter the first ten!

Three seconds later.

"Carry out of the transformation!" Song Shuhang issued the command through Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body.

Command accepted. Requesting Master Phoenix Slayer to sit properly. The transformation has started.

In the next moment, a dazzling red fire light exploded from the hand-guided tractor number 44. The light burst forth from each joint of the tractor.

This feeling... was rather familiar.

Optimus Prime, transformation!

Megatron, as above!

Optimus Primal, as above +1!

Beast King GoLion, fusion! Oh, wait. This one was from a different series.

Anyway, the concept should be pretty clear... the hand-guided tractor number 44 was carrying out a similar transformation. Its joints started to twist and turn into new shapes after the burst of light, transforming just like those 'Transformers' in movies.

Deep down in his heart, Song Shuhang was a bit excited... all after, all men dreamt of piloting a huge robot once.

Although this dream lately changed into becoming an overpowered character that could tear Gundams apart with bare hands... piloting a huge robot was still something that would fire men up.

"Clang, clang, clang..."

Around two seconds later...

The hand-guided tractor number 44 completed its transformation while still dashing forward.

The transformation is complete, super speed form activated—Rolling War Wheel Form!

"What?" Song Shuhang felt cold air blowing on his forehead.

What the hell is this Rolling War Wheel? Wasn't it going to transform into a huge robot?

Song Shuhang unconsciously thought of using his ghost spirit and relying on its bird's-eye view to take a look at the new shape of the hand-guided tractor number 44.

But as soon as he issued the command, he remembered that he was now in Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body. The ghost spirit wasn't here with him and couldn't provide him the bird's-eye view.

But in the next moment, a flat screen appeared in front of him.

Above the screen was displayed the current situation of the hand-guided tractor number 44.

Is it a... huge rolling barrel? To be precise, a barrel-shaped wheel?!

This huge wheel form most suits Master Phoenix Slayer's idea of transformation. There is no need to worry about landmines, thorns in the earth, or other traps on the road. They can be simply rolled past! The speed will be guaranteed to be fast, and at the

same time, it's possible to roll over the other contestants.

The Rolling War Wheel Form is about to enter action! Requesting Master Phoenix Slayer to take the car sickness pill...

Song Shuhang was speechless.

There were so many comments that he wanted to make at this time...

However, before he had the opportunity, he felt everything spinning as though there was an earthquake going on.

The huge barrel-shaped Rolling War Wheel dashed forward at an unimaginable speed.

Since it had the shape of a barrel, Song Shuhang who was inside also started to roll together with it. It was even more brutal than Venerable White's coiling flight feature.

Just in this fashion... the wheel of time moved forward, mercilessly destroying everything that blocked its path.



"F*ck, what the hell is this gadget?" Dharma King Creation, who was in front of Young Master Phoenix Slayer, called out in alarm.

If one were to look at the scene right now, he looked like a mantis standing in front of a rolling wheel... if he stayed there, the huge rolling wheel would squash him.

"Ah? Where did that thing come from? Is that Young Master Phoenix Slayer?" Northern River's Loose Cultivator quickly recognized to whom that wheel belonged. "Only that muddle-headed stupid monster would come up with such a weird transformation. Dharma King, transform and block him!"

"There is not enough time... aaaaah..."

Just as Dharma King Creation and Northern River's Loose Cultivator called out, the wheel of time rolled over their heads.

The two of them were the first seniors that got rolled over, and they wouldn't be the last ones...

After all, there were still eighteen seniors blocking the path of Young Master Phoenix Slayer's modified Rolling War Wheel.

In the next moment... the hand-guided tractor competition fell into further confusion.

The announcer of the Daily Cultivator, Jiang Shan, enthusiastically said, Fellow Daoists watching from home, the intensity of this first hand-guided tractor completely surpassed our expectations. The hand-guided tractor competition is way more exciting than the 'flying sword competition' that is getting more and more boring from year to year. As everyone can see, the battle amongst the first ten contestants is rather fierce, and one of the fellow daoists in the rear seems to have revealed his trump card! This fellow daoist is the same Young Master Phoenix Slayer who was previously placed first. Although he activated a trap earlier and almost ended up last, he clearly wishes to place amongst the first six! At this time, he used his trump card and made his tractor undergo a transformation... however, the transformation is a bit unsightly...! It's just a huge... wheel!

Anyway, although the hand-guided tractor assumed the form of an ordinary wheel, its speed is truly terrifying. It was able to surpass twelve fellow daoists in the blink of an eye. At this time, Young Master Phoenix Slayer has already entered the first ten, and his rank is rapidly increasing! Just how many fellow daoists will be rolled over and crushed by the cruel and merciless wheel of time?

Oh... Fellow Daoists, wait a moment. I just received important news. After the referees on the scene and the main referee discussed amongst themselves, they came to the conclusion that the contestant number 44, Young Master Phoenix Slayer, broke the rules of the competition with this 'wheel'-shaped tractor. After all, this is a hand-guided tractor competition, and using something that doesn't resemble a hand-guided tractor is strictly forbidden.

Let's hold a three-second silence for Young Master Phoenix Slayer. He is the first fellow daoist to break the rules of the competition. Let's wait and see how the referees decide to punish him.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer edition Song Shuhang was speechless.

He already knew that there was something wrong with this 'transformation'. That's why he had that bad feeling earlier.



The hand-guided tractor competition was very intense.

And in the darkness, the forces of evil were also secretly moving.

From example, the sea urchin warriors and their 'king' were preparing devious plans in the depths of the sea...

That person disguising as that mister's servant earlier now had the Blood God's Evil Saber Formation in their hands and planned to find a good location to use it and condense the life-bound Blood God Saber.

There was also Limitless Demon Sect's Young Master Hai. Although he was in secluded meditation, he managed to obtain the Blood Sea Jade which he could use to replace the Blood God Crystal, giving Demon Monarch Anzhi, Zheng Neng, and himself a very good chance to advance to the Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor Realm and condense a Golden Core with seven or more dragon patterns. However, he was still unwilling to give up the Blood God Crystal in the hands of 'Stressed by a Mountain of Books'. He couldn't be at ease unless he retrieved it. Moreover, it had been a huge blow to his reputation as a flawless planner. If he couldn't retrieve it now, it might even up becoming his Inner Demon in the future.

Finally... there was also Lady Onion who had now lost her upper part. After getting out of the mysterious island, she kept a low profile, acting weak in front of Song Shuhang to catch him off

guard.

Now, she felt that her opportunity had finally come!

Although he had been hiding inside Song Shuhang's pocket the whole time, she had also paid attention to the developments outside.

She knew that Song Shuhang's consciousness had been shifted to the body of a senior and that he currently in an unconscious state. Moreover, after having his consciousness shifted to the body of that senior, Song Shuhang was now participating in the hand-guided tractor competition. From the loud cheers she could hear, it seemed that the competition had reached the climax.

At this time, there were only two ordinary disciples of the Chu Family next to her.

That frightening Venerable White, monster pekingese, and small monk weren't around.

She couldn't find a better opportunity to escape!

"Today, this green onion shall regain her freedom," Lady Onion muttered to herself.

Then, she took a deep breath.

Soon after, two small hands appeared above her missing upper part, and two small feet appeared below the enlightenment stone she had taken root onto.

"There is still my upper part that was cut off earlier," Lady Onion muttered to herself.

She didn't remember anything about what happened on the mysterious island.

But whenever she tried to recall those events, a certain word kept resurfacing in Lady Onion's mind... pervert! After pondering for a moment, she wondered whether there was a pervert on the mysterious island...?

She didn't even remember why her tender shoot was cut off... perhaps it was the reason she forgot everything?

Therefore, she wanted to recover her upper part.

That tender shoot was still part of her body. Perhaps she could find the reason she lost her memories after thoroughly researching it.

After thinking this much, Lady Onion started to rummage through Song Shuhang's pocket, grabbing that rabbit-shaped size-reducing purse.

"This is a real treasure, a pseudo-space purse!" As soon as she saw the purse, Lady Onion started to drool. However, she didn't dare to take it away.

She was afraid that the small purse might have a 'mark' on it. If that were the case, wouldn't her plan to escape immediately fail?

"Now then, is there a mark on my body too?" Lady Onion suddenly thought of another scary possibility... if there was a mark on her body, wouldn't Song Shuhang find her very quickly?

But she quickly shook his head. "It doesn't matter. This opportunity is hard to come by. Even if there is a mark on my body, I still want to try to run away. Perhaps I'll be caught soon after I run away, but if I don't run away now, I might not have another opportunity again!"

After thinking this much, she stretched out her small hand and started to look through the size-reducing purse, finally taking out that small green onion shoot wrapped in a paper.

"Found it. This is my green onion shoot!" Lady Onion said happily.

She held it with great care and merged it with the enlightenment stone. Since she had temporarily lost the ability to assume the human form, hiding things had become quite difficult.

Afterward, she carefully observed what was going on next to Song Shuhang's body and crawled out of his pocket...

Chapter 444: Frozen little Shuhang

The logic and timing of Lady Onion's plan were impeccable. There wasn't any expert paying attention to this place, so she only had to be slightly careful and avoid the disciples of the Chu Family. Since the two disciples were watching the live broadcast of the hand-guided tractor competition, the pressure on her was decreased even more and the probability of pulling off a successful escape increased greatly.

Most importantly, Song Shuhang did not leave 'marks' of any sort on her body.

Lady Onion carefully jumped out of Song Shuhang's pocket, and when the two disciples were not paying attention, she took the chance to stealthily roll out of the opened car window.

The moment her body touched the ground, she was extremely excited, shouting in her heart, Hahahaha, I got my freedom back!

Now, she had to quickly run away... there were too many cultivators gathered around, so it was very unsafe. After all, she was still growing on top of the enlightenment stone, which was almost a cultivation-related cheat in the eyes of cultivators.

If she was not careful, she could enter a wolf's cave after leaving a tiger's den.

Lady Onion carefully rolled under the car. The two eyes that grew on the little green onion were observing the situation in all directions, searching for an escape route.

There are too many cultivators straight ahead; it won't work. The left side won't work, either. The competition arena is at the back, so that direction's even worse... Eh? There are indeed fewer people on the right, and there are a lot of places where I can take a cover too. In that case, I'll break through from the right side!

After observing the route carefully, Lady Onion cautiously looked

at the sky, toward the many cultivators standing on the clouds. Hopefully, nobody would pay any attention to that side.

Just as her vision shifted to the sky, she ended up making eye contact with a pair of extremely limpid and pure eyes.

They were extremely clear, similar to the eyes of a newborn baby; they did not contain even a hint of wickedness.

However, Lady Onion's whole body went numb, and she started shivering.

Above the car was hovering a palm-sized figure of Song Shuhang.

The palm-sized Song Shuhang was bald and wearing a green kasaya.

At this moment, the little Shuhang was curiously staring at Lady Onion.

Why?! Lady Onion raged in her heart. Why is there a little Song Shuhang on top of the car? And from the way he looks, he was clearly staring at my every movement from the start!

So, just what thing is this small Shuhang? Is it possible that Shuhang grasped the terrifying ability to create clones?!

Suddenly, Lady Onion had an epiphany and thought of something. The ghost spirit!

Song Shuhang and the ghost spirit seemed to have fully completed their synchronization not long ago. Afterward, the ghost spirit underwent a strange mutation.

This palm-sized little Song Shuhang should be that ghost spirit.

However, without the master's command, ghost spirit usually would stay within the master's body and not leave on its own, right?

Why did the ghost spirit appear on top of the car? Could it be that... it was Song Shuhang's order!?

Could it be that Song Shuhang had guessed from the start that she would take the opportunity to escape, and hence he ordered the ghost spirit to keep an eye on her?

Dammit, scheming bastard!

Just as Lady Onion was filled with thoughts, Song Shuhang's ghost spirit floated down to the ground from the top of the car and arrived in front of Lady Onion.

The ghost spirit indeed came out because of Song Shuhang's 'order'... but it had nothing to do with Lady Onion.

Earlier, when Song Shuhang completed the transformation of the tractor with Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body, he suddenly thought of using his ghost spirit and rely on its 'bird's-eye view' to take a look at the shape of the tractor.

After the ghost spirit received the order, it came out of Song Shuhang's body and floated above the roof of the car.

Actually... if the ghost spirit did not get out of Song Shuhang's body after receiving the order, it would have seized Lady Onion the moment she got out of Shuhang's pocket.

The ghost spirit and Song Shuhang's thoughts were interlinked. Therefore, he naturally would not let Lady Onion escape.



At this moment, the ghost spirit stood in front of Lady Onion, and both its eyes swiveled.

Ultimately, they looked toward the 'green onion shoot' in Lady Onion's hands. The palm-sized ghost spirit reached out its hand without hesitation and grabbed it.

"W-what are you doing?!" Lady Onion said as she lowered her voice. This was her green onion shoot!

"Hehe." The ghost spirit did not speak and only let out a satisfied laugh. Thereafter, it took the green onion shoot from her hands by

force.

The ghost spirit was synchronized with Song Shuhang, and its cultivation level similarly rose to the Second Stage True Master Realm. Seizing something from a First Stage cultivator like Lady Onion was extremely easy.

After taking the green onion shoot, the ghost spirit held it up and scrutinized it for a long time.

Thereafter, under the shocked gaze of Lady Onion, the ghost spirit swallowed the entire green onion shoot.

"Burp~" After eating the green onion shoot, the ghost spirit belched in satisfaction.

"You ate it... you actually ate my head. That was my head, you demon!" Lady Onion clenched her teeth in anger; she wanted to pounce towards the ghost spirit and fight it.

However, before Lady Onion could even let out a sound, the ghost spirit bent its finger and lightly flicked Lady Onion's body.

"Dong~"

It was a mere light flick, and a stream of weak true qi got channeled into Lady Onion's body.

Lady Onion closed both eyes and passed out just like that. Both her hands and legs withdrew, and her body returned to be a small onion shoot on top of the enlightenment stone.

"Burp~" The ghost spirit belched once again before lifting Lady Onion and the enlightenment stone, quietly returning to the car and putting the stone back into Song Shuhang's pocket.

The entire process was very natural and smooth—it did not attract anybody's attention. The ghost spirit's skill when it came to moving stealthily was at least a 7/10.

Even if it were Song Shuhang himself taking control of the situation, he wouldn't do it as smoothly.

This ability originated from the depths of its memories... which came from those fragmented memories the loose cultivator Li Tiansu left behind before disappearing.

Although Li Tiansu had already passed away, the fragments of his memories transformed into some of the ghost spirit's abilities. That also meant that it helped the ghost spirit increase a lot of its basic skills.

After tossing Lady Onion back into Song Shuhang's pocket, the ghost spirit did not actually return to Song Shuhang's Heart Aperture.

It floated within the car and curiously stared at Song Shuhang's body which was not too far away, Sima Jiang who was still passed out, as well as the large box next to Sima Jiang.

Ghost spirits boasted a decent intellect, especially Song Shuhang's ghost spirit whose intellect became higher than other mid-rank ghost spirits after undergoing a mutation.

After going through the changes, the ghost spirit was like reborn. At this time, it was like an infant and still had a lot of things to learn.



The ghost spirit and Song Shuhang's thoughts were connected. Hence, he knew that the large box was an express delivery box which belonged to the delivery guy—Little Jiang.

Express deliveries were private property, opening other people's parcels as one pleased was a rude behavior. Under normal circumstances, the ghost spirit would act according to its master's personality and would not open it.

But at this moment, the ghost spirit sensed a strangely familiar feeling from the express delivery.

How should one describe such a feeling?

It was like a bloodline resonance!

The ghost spirit felt that the item within the box resonated with it. It seemed as though it was beckoning and shouting at it.

Hence, involuntarily, the ghost spirit reached out its hand towards that express delivery box.

The cumbersome box could not block the ghost spirit in its soul form. Its body easily went through the outer layer of the box and entered the box.

Soon after, the ghost spirit discovered that there was a huge chunk of ice inside the box!

On the edge of the ice chunk were hundreds of layers of seals, firmly sealing the ice chunk and preventing the cold air inside from leaking. With that, when Sima Jiang and others transported it around, they would not feel the chills.

It's just a block of ice? Why did it resonate with my bloodline? the ghost spirit thought to itself.

After thinking about it, the ghost spirit carefully reached its hand out, trying to touch the block of ice.

The strange thing was that the hundreds of layers of seals did not block the ghost spirit. Its hand passed through them and touched the ice.

In the next moment, a bone-chilling coldness was sent from the ice to the ghost spirit's hand.

The ghost spirit was shocked and instinctively tried to pull its hand back.

But... it was too late.

In an instant, the ice crawled up the ghost spirit's body starting from its hand, sealing it within.

Ultimately, it combined with the ice coffin and turned into a new block of ice.

This was capable of sealing even a soul. This ice block was clearly not an ordinary one.



On the race track of the hand-guided tractor competition.

The host of the Daily Cultivator, Jiang Shan, said with passion, The group of referees has come up with the punishment for contestant number 44, Young Master Phoenix Slayer! Since it's Young Master Phoenix Slayer's first offense, the referees are only punishing him by subjecting him to the 'spinning in place' trap once again, and he is also ordered to remove the wheel-like transformation of the hand-guided tractor! Cough, this punishment is very light. If it were up to me... he should be sent right back to the starting point!!

Alright, we can see that Young Master Phoenix Slayer has already deactivated the cool transformation of his hand-guided tractor... Oh, now he has started flying again, becoming quite the view on the race track once more... let us enjoy the view of the spinning hand-guided tractor number 44—this isn't the first time it's spinning, and I feel that it won't be the last, either!

Song Shuhang once again got shot up into the sky.

He felt that this hand-guided tractor competition was all about spinning, spinning, non-stop spinning, being subjected to different ways of spinning... to the point that he felt nauseous.

Then, he heard the announcer's loud voice.

Upon hearing the voice, little friend Song Shuhang clenched his teeth. 'I remember now, this is the announcer Jiang Shan, right? I'll make sure to remember this name, aaaaah! It's bad, I'm vomiting~'

The fellow daoists he overtook with much difficulty started surpassing him one by one.

"Try to spin harder, little friend Shuhang."

"You stole the show, little friend Shuhang. Senior Tornado must really envy you!"

"Wahaha, little friend Shuhang became the view on the race track once again." Thrice Reckless Mad Saber, who got his tractor fixed at some unknown point in time, brushed past Song Shuhang while laughing.

"Achoo~ Achoo~" Song Shuhang who was in the midst of spinning suddenly let out a few sneezes. He wasn't sure why, but he suddenly felt a bone-chilling coldness up his spine.

So cold, it's as though I got thrown into the ice of the South Pole.

Chapter 445: The new Wielder of the Will has some issues

In the instant Song Shuhang sneezed and closed his eyes, several scenes flashed before his eyes.

There was the picture of a huge pond of blood with several spare arms and legs scattered on the edge, as well as human skin being air-dried... he could even faintly hear pitiful screams in the background.

There was the picture of a mysterious island with singing birds and beautiful flowers all around, as well as an incredibly large condor flying in the sky. Mixing with the picture of the island was Nine Lanterns' face... he felt as though someone was explaining something to him, and he clearly heard the words 'ancient Heavenly City' from the mouth of the opposite party.

There was the picture of a huge chunk of ice and another picture where everything before his eyes was frozen... he could even faintly hear the sound of a young girl crying.

All these scenes flashed before his eyes in the instant he sneezed.

"What the hell was that?" Song Shuhang rubbed his nose.

He tried to move his body around, but that chill that came from the depths of his soul was still there.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer is already at the Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor Realm, and something like heat and cold can't possibly affect him. Is it possible that it's not Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body that is feeling this cold but my own body?

Did something happen to my body?

Song Shuhang was somewhat worried.

Hopefully, nothing happened. If there were something amiss, those two disciples of the Chu Family in charge of watching over

my body would have noticed already.



Ten seconds later, Song Shuhang's hand-guided tractor number 44 stopped spinning and finally returned to the ground.

After that sudden and powerful attack of cold, Song Shuhang started to operate his tractor once more, using all his strength to catch up to the others... now, his chances of placing amongst the first ten were even lower.

The method Young Master Phoenix Slayer came up with to increase the speed of the tractor was actually against the rules.

In other words, Song Shuhang lost the trump card that could allow him to win the competition.

The other contestants could use various methods to increase their speed; on the other hand, he had none. This was the same as twisting your foot right at the start of a running competition...

Moreover, he even had that fearsome three seconds delay...

His situation was truly dire!

At this pace, the last place of this hand-guided tractor competition is waiting for me~!

"No, I can't give up yet. I have to think about that frightening and lonely one-month trip into space. I won't be able to go online, read books, watch movies, or enjoy other forms of entertainment... only the stars will keep me company. I don't want any of it!" Song Shuhang muttered to himself. "Achoo~ I have to think of other ways that can let me win... after all, there is always a way out. I must enter the first ten!"

Song Shuhang racked his brain and tried to think of something.

Just as he was in deep thoughts, a sword light suddenly brushed past him...

"Hehehehe~" Soft Feather's melodious laughter echoed from the

sword light.

At the same time, the voice of the announcer, Jiang Shan, echoed. Fellow Daoists watching from home, miracles always befall those that believe in them. After being sent to the starting point once more, Miss Soft Feather once again bumped into one of those 'lucky' traps placed on the race track. With the help of the Goddess of Luck, she was able to advance by leaps and bounds together with her hand-guided tractor. Now, she's again overtaking the other contestants, and her position is continuously raising... 40th... 32nd... 24th... 4th! The boosting effect of the lucky trap finally came to an end! Congratulations to Miss Soft Feather for returning to the frontlines of the hand-guided tractor competition, placing amongst the first four. Let's wish her good luck!

Song Shuhang was speechless.

Since the start of the competition up until now, none of the almost sixty contestants stepped onto those 'lucky traps' or the ones that made you return to the starting point. However, Soft Feather managed to bump into each of them twice.

Was she really lucky? Or was she actually unlucky?

However, her luck was currently better than her misfortune. After all, she managed to place within the first four in one go, entering the first places of the competition.

"Right, the lucky traps!" Song Shuhang called out.

Since he didn't have the means to increase his speed, he could only pray to chance upon one of those lucky traps and have the sword light escort him toward the positions ahead!

Just as he was in deep thoughts, Song Shuhang's eyes suddenly lit up... speak of the devil and he shall appear! At this time, he saw something that resembled a 'lucky trap'.

A small butterfly-shaped formation was glistening inside an

unremarkable patch of grass. If he wasn't mistaken, this was a special speed increasing formation manufactured by Venerable Spirit Butterfly.

"Let's go!" Song Shuhang gritted his teeth and changed the direction of the hand-guided tractor number 44, heading toward that patch of grass...

100 meters... 80 meters... 60 meters... 30 meters...

As long as he could obtain that speed increasing formation and increase his speed by several times, he would be able to rush toward the first positions!

"I'm coming! It's mine!"

Song Shuhang's hand-guided tractor number 44 quickly approached the speed increasing formation.

But right at this time, a panic-stricken scream echoed from ahead. "Aaaaaah~ Fellow Daoist Phoenix Slayer, move out of the way!"

Song Shuhang controlled Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body and raised his head with much difficulty, looking in the direction the sound came from.

After looking in that direction, Song Shuhang almost got a heart attack!

He saw Fairy Dongfang operate her deformed and wrecked hand-guided tractor and rush toward his position!

What kind of joke is this! Fairy Dongfang, aren't you driving in the wrong direction?!

Song Shuhang was unable to understand what Fairy Dongfang was doing. Was it possible that she didn't know that she was going in the wrong direction?

Driving in the wrong direction was enough to get a 200 RMB fine and 3 points off your driving license!

Song Shuhang instinctively thought of moving away his vehicle... but that damnable three seconds delay was still there.

Only two seconds had passed when Fairy Dongfang's deformed hand-guided tractor number 37 bumped into Song Shuhang.

What made Song Shuhang's liver hurt even more was that the two of them collided just next to the speed increasing formation.

And what was even worse was that Fairy Dongfang's hand-guided tractor was slightly faster and was able to get to the formation first.

"Aaaaaah~ My speed is increasing again, nooooo~" Fairy Dongfang cried out.

Fairy maiden, if you don't want that speed increase formation, you can give it to me! Song Shuhang had tears streaming down his face.



In the next moment, Fairy Dongfang's vehicle suddenly emitted a lot of smoke as though it was on steroids and pushed against Song Shuhang's hand-guided tractor, overturning it.

Moreover, while her tractor was pushing against Shuhang's, it cruelly dragged it for more than twenty meters before leaving it behind.

Fairy Dongfang's tractor rumbled away as its speed increased by nearly sixty times, speeding toward the starting point.

Song Shuhang was left behind with his vehicle overturned. He wanted to cry but had no tears.

Luckily... there shouldn't be too many spectators hanging around the starting point at this time...

Otherwise, Fairy Dongfang's hand-guided tractor number 37 would start a massacre in the audience seating section next to the starting point!

What a tragic traffic accident! Fairy Dongfang drove in the wrong direction and bumped into Young Master Phoenix Slayer's tractor, overturning it in the process. The scene was extremely tragic! It seems that Young Master Phoenix Slayer's luck has finally run out, and he has thoroughly lost the first position he was occupying at the beginning of the competition! The host, Jiang Shan, seized the opportunity to rub salt into the wound.

All handsome and popular guys should be overturned! Fairy Dongfang did well, and it would be even more perfect if she were to make a U-turn and roll over this Young Master Phoenix Slayer once more!



In the meantime.

The East China Sea, in the direction of the Philippine Sea. Hovering in the air was a big and beautiful island.

There was a magnificent city on this island with the city walls overlaid like a pyramid.

Above the gate of the huge city walls was a figure wearing white clothes that was currently looking at a book silently.

That book was made of golden energy and there was the blueprint of a construction on it. From the looks of it, it seemed to be the structural frame of a palace.

Then, the figure in white clothes raised its head and looked in China's direction.

This figure wearing white clothes was Nine Lanterns, and after looking in China's direction, she bent her fingers and started to make some calculations.

After a while, she laughed and said, "He ate it. He finally ate Lady Onion's tender shoot. Now, let's see if Song Shuhang can unearth the small memories I've sealed inside the green onion shoot. If he can really get a hold of those memories, we can further strengthen

our collaboration with him."

"This approach is very dangerous. After all, there is information related to the ancient Heavenly City amongst those memories. If the Wielder of the Will were to discover it, little friend Song would be in great danger." At this time, the voice of the powerful senior hugging the white rabbit echoed as she suddenly appeared next to Nine Lanterns.

"Don't worry. I've made preparations already. Song Shuhang won't be in danger... even if the new Wielder of the Will were to sense something, I'll pay the price and protect Song Shuhang at all costs. I even prepared the sacrificial altar—it can be used at any time. At worst, I'll give up hundreds of years of my lifespan." Nine Lanterns stretched herself.

Next, she also added, "Senior, haven't you hidden some sort of trick inside the 'size-reducing purse' as well?"

The powerful senior shook her head and said, "I haven't done anything of the sort."

She didn't need to do anything to the purse.

The fact that the 'size-reducing purse' she personally manufactured didn't self-destruct after Song Shuhang brought it out the mysterious island proved that the information they obtained was correct.

The new Wielder of the Will had some issues!

It wasn't unscrupulous and omniscient as during those ancient times... moreover, a lot of its 'authority' had disappeared just like a few fellow daoists guessed.

It couldn't monitor each and every action of the living things of the universe like in ancient times.

However, they couldn't be careless.

Although the Wielder of the Will had several issues, it was still

the embodiment of the Will of the Heavens, and its strength was immeasurably deep.

If they wanted to rebuild the Heavenly City, there was tough work ahead and a long way to go.

Chapter 446: Toward the sea

The powerful senior of the mysterious island had tried to probe the situation of the Wielder of the Will on the outside several times already—even before Song Shuhang's arrival. She made the guests that had come to the island carry out a large number of local objects.

Currently, none of those local products underwent any change.

This time, she could affirm that the new Wielder of the Will really had some issues.



On the race track of the hand-guided tractor competition.

On this race track full of traps, one did not need only speed, but luck as well.

Song Shuhang lifted with much difficulty the hand-guided tractor Fairy Dongfang overturned earlier...

In regards to speed, Song Shuhang seemed to be in a hopeless situation. In regards to luck, he was having a bad day today and that wasn't good, either.

As a punishment, he had to taste the 'spin in place' trap once more. Next, Fairy Dongfang drove the wrong way and knocked his tractor over... as a consequence, Song Shuhang was once again dead last.

After climbing on the tractor, Song Shuhang hesitated a moment before pressing the button again to start the 'Super Phoenix Slayer Battle Armor System'.

After a series of mechanical sounds, the Super Phoenix Slayer Battle Armor System activated once more.

Since he knew that turning into a huge wheel was against the rules, Song Shuhang didn't want to seek death by assuming that

shape again. Moreover, other than being uncool, it would make one's head spin as well. So he didn't like it at all.

The reason he activated the Super Phoenix Slayer Battle Armor System was to see if it had other features aside from the 'transformation' thing.

After all, Young Master Phoenix Slayer should have carried out other modifications to the hand-guided tractor and it should have other abilities aside from transforming itself, right?

Hello, the Super Phoenix Slayer Battle Armor System is at your disposal. Do you wish to carry out the transformation? The system immediately asked after activating.

"No, don't carry out any transformation!" Song Shuhang had already prepared himself and immediately rejected the suggestion of the system.

His ability to 'plan things three seconds ahead' sharply improved during this hand-guided tractor competition.

After a short pause, Song Shuhang controlled Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body and asked, "Do you have any other feature aside from the transformation?"

Yes!

Aside from the basic ability to carry out a transformation, I have the ability to scan the condition of the vehicle as well as an autopilot feature.

Song Shuhang had already experienced the ability to scan the condition of the vehicle earlier when the hand-guided tractor number 44 turned into a huge wheel. The outward appearance of the tractor was scanned and transmitted to the screen.

"What is the purpose of this autopilot feature?" Song Shuhang asked. That 'Rolling War Wheel Form' earlier caused him enough problems. Therefore, he was worried that this 'autopilot feature' might have some dangers hidden as well and didn't dare to activate

it immediately.

The autopilot feature is the same as an ordinary race track autopilot. It will add some simple supplementary features during the drive. It allows the tractor to automatically evade dangers if the driver were to encounter any during the race.

It seemed a rather normal feature.

"In that case, activate the autopilot feature," Song Shuhang said.

Very quickly, the screen slightly lit up and the map of the race track appeared on it.

The autopilot was now active.

Reminder, there is a sharp turn ahead, proceed with caution.

Song Shuhang raised his eyes and shot a look ahead. Then, he noticed that there was a V-shaped curve far ahead.

The seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group and the other participating seniors elegantly made the turn.

Even though he was mentally prepared, he was still mesmerized by the scene of fifty or so seniors drifting about their hand-guided tractors and elegantly making that sharp curve.



However, not all the seniors were elegantly drifting and easily making the turn. Not too far in front of Song Shuhang, there was a hand-guided tractor that was traveling at a relatively slow speed.

Just like True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon, this contestant was a friend of Venerable White and had traveled thousands of miles to participate in the hand-guided tractor competition.

Song Shuhang remembered that the dao name of this senior was 'Sword Monarch Blue Sky', and according to what the seniors of the group told him earlier, he had merged lightning-type techniques with his swordsmanship, creating his own unique style.

Since the start of the competition, Sword Monarch Blue Sky had been hanging around the last places. It wasn't that he wasn't trying... the problem was that this talented swordsman wasn't nearly as good at modifying hand-guided tractors.

"It's bad! The angle of that curve is too much!" Sword Monarch Blue Sky suddenly called out.

Sword Monarch Blue Sky tightly grabbed the hand-guided tractor, and in the next moment, the tractor started to send out strange sounds as though it was falling apart.

"Clang, clang, clang..."

Then, Song Shuhang saw two huge tires flew toward him.

Sword Monarch Blue Sky's hand-guided tractor completely fell apart! It was just too exaggerated. While slowly moving, it suddenly changed into countless parts.

The two tires hit Young Master Phoenix Slayer's hand-guided tractor's cover without fail.

"So unlucky~" Song Shuhang sighed.

Sword Monarch Blue Sky left the competition.

But Song Shuhang still needed to put some effort into this competition. He focused and controlled his hand-guided tractor, carefully making this sharp curve.

He didn't handsomely drift about like the seniors, but just steadily making this turn was more than enough for the current Song Shuhang.



The voice of the host echoed without delay. As we can see, the hand-guided tractor of the contestant number 21, Sword Monarch Blue Sky, completely fell apart without any hope of repairing it... after True Monarch Yellow Mountain who casually left the competition halfway, Sword Monarch Blue Sky is the second

contestant to be disqualified.



"Boom~"

"White Crane, be obedient and die! Ahahaha!" Scholar Drunken XXX's mad laughter echoed.

"No! Scholar Drunken Driver, stooooop! Please, leave me alone! Right, I can even help you deal with Fellow Daoist Thrice Reckless!" True Monarch White Crane pleaded for mercy and tried to shift his attention onto someone else.

Scholar Drunken XXX and True Monarch White Crane had been fighting since the beginning of the competition.

While playing hide-and-seek, the duo had actually managed to surpass a lot of contestants.

But as the distance between the two was pulled closer and Scholar Drunken XXX bumped with his drill into True Monarch White Crane's hand-guided tractor, their speed incessantly reduced.

"Scholar Drunken Driver? Hehehe... and you still want to cooperate? Enough chit-chat! Let's talk about cooperation after you manage to survive this move of mine! Like I said earlier, as long as you manage to survive my Mad Lightning Dragon Drill, we can be friends again! Now die!" Scholar Drunken XXX was furious.

"Boom, boom, boom~"

The huge drill brutally bumped into the rear of True Monarch White Crane's hand-guided tractor, starting to rip it apart.

But just as True Monarch White Crane's hand-guided tractor was about to be destroyed, Scholar Drunken XXX's Mad Lightning Dragon Drill suddenly got stuck.

"Eh?" Scholar Drunken XXX was confused. Why would the drill suddenly stop?

"Hahaha, it stopped!" True Monarch White Crane heaved a sigh of relief and said, "Such being the case, I survived, right? Scholar, how about discussing our cooperation?"

But right at this time, a loud scream was transmitted from ahead. "Scholar Drunken Something, get out of the way!"

Scholar Drunken Moon raised his head and saw that True Monarch Ancient Lake Temple had made a U-turn and was now driving in the opposite direction. Additionally, several mini-Scud missiles had suddenly appeared in the open container attached to the back of his tractor.

Just like guided missiles, the Scud missiles soared into the sky, locking onto True Monarch White Crane's hand-guided tractor.

"Noooo~" True Monarch White Crane screamed once more. Due to that powerful drill attack from Scholar Brewing Wine earlier, its hand-guided tractor had lost all defenses. If this barrage of Scud missiles were to hit the tractor, it would have to leave the competition!

It just wanted to win the competition to curry favor with Venerable White! Why was everyone trying to destroy its dream!

But screaming was useless and wasn't going to change the outcome.

True Monarch White Crane's hand-guided tractor exploded, and the powerful explosion filled the whole race track.

Amidst the flames of the explosion, True Monarch White Crane flapped its wings with a face full tears, leaving the site of the explosion.

True Monarch Ancient Lake Temple made another U-turn and left.

Scholar Drunken XXX likewise rumbled away.

Soon after they left... the unlucky Song Shuhang had no choice

but to brace himself and shuttle back and forth inside the dissipating explosion.

"So unlucky!" Although there was a defensive formation protecting him, it wasn't pleasant to shuttle back and forth inside an explosion.

Moreover, the explosion of this hand-guided tractor that True Monarch White Crane personally modified was especially strong.



Another contestant was eliminated! This time, the one that was forced out was one of the idols of the audience, True Monarch White Crane! It's truly regrettable. I bet everyone still wanted to look at White Crane dash about on the race track. Anyway, we're currently approaching the second half of the race track. Very soon, the contestants will enter the fierce oceanic race track! However, three of them have been eliminated already, this competition is really fierce! I'm looking forward to seeing the second, third, and so on sessions of the hand-guided tractor competition! Jiang Shan roared.



At this time, the people in the frontline—True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon, True Monarch Fallout, Cave Lord Snow Wolf, and the lucky Soft Feather—had already arrived at the second portion of the race track.

What welcomed them was the boundless sea!

"Ladies and gentlemen, I'll take my leave first! After all, the sea is my domain!" True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon laughed. His hand-guided tractor emitted black smoke and dashed toward the sea.

True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon didn't even need a waterproof formation. After all, he was a flood dragon, and controlling waves and water was the innate ability of his race!

The sea was his home field.

He was the absolute ruler in this area. After entering the sea, he could display all sorts of techniques.

In the next moment, True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon's hand-guided tractor finally reached the sea, starting to dash about madly on its surface as though he was driving on flat land. His speed was even faster compared to when he was on land earlier.

"Hahaha, Fellow Daoist Tyrant Flood Dragon, you're too impatient." True Monarch Fallout activated the water-proof formation on his hand-guided tractor and quickly followed in his wake.

Cave Lord Snow Wolf wasn't willing to show any weakness. Since he was an ice-type monster cultivator, the sea was somewhat advantageous to him.

"Waves, surge!" In the forefront, True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon smiled and started to control the water to create waves...

Chapter 447: The hand-guided tractor got flooded, anxiously waiting for a reply!

Creating waves was the innate ability of flood dragons. Moreover, it wouldn't waste too much of their spiritual energy.

In the sea, True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon could create waves with just a thought, and something akin to a mini-tsunami with a huge range with just a sentence.

"What an insidious fellow!" True Monarch Fallout ridiculed.

"Fellow Daoist Fallout, mind your words. This is called strategy. I'm just using the favorable terrain to my advantage!" True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon laughed.

Perhaps these waves would influence the fellow daoists behind only for an instant...

But that instant was enough to determine who was going to win and who was going to come in second!

He wanted to win this session of the hand-guided tractor competition!

Just as True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon was laughing complacently, a pleasing scream echoed in his ears.

Soon after, a familiar-looking figure wrapped in a sword light quickly dashed forward, overtaking True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon in the blink of an eye.

Which fellow daoist bumped into the lucky trap?

Very soon, True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon noticed that the hand-guided tractor number 22 belonging to Spirit Butterfly Island's Soft Feather was wrapped inside the sword light.

Is it that girl again?

It's already her third time activating one of those lucky traps...

moreover, she was the only one to activate them from the start of the competition up until now, right?

True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon was dumbfounded.

It wasn't only True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon, True Monarch Fallout and Cave Lord Snow Wolf in the rear were also dumbfounded.

Soon after, the three of them raised their heads at the same time and pierced the clouds with their sight, staring directly at the main referee who was standing above the clouds, Venerable Spirit Butterfly.

Everyone knew that Venerable Spirit really doted on his beloved daughter... was it possible that he secretly helped her?

After all, she alone activated three 'lucky traps'... and it almost felt as though they exclusively belonged to her.

"Don't look at me!" Venerable Spirit Butterfly had keen senses. He shrugged his shoulders and said, "The lucky sword lights traps were arranged by Fellow Daoist White! I don't even know where he placed them!"

In other words, Soft Feather was just incredibly lucky!

"Even those with power have to fear those with heaven-defying luck!" True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon heaved a sigh and roared immediately after. "Waves, surge!"

The water started to surge once more. But this time, the waves didn't head toward the other fellow daoists. Instead, they pushed forward True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon, increasing the speed of the hand-guided tractor by a notch.



As the seniors reached the seashore, they activated their waterproof formations and dashed on the surface of the sea, entering the most interesting section of the competition.

After they entered the sea section, the number of traps also started to increase.

As soon as they dashed on the surface of the sea, naval mines, torpedoes, and so on came rushing forward from the depths of the sea, exploding and making things difficult for the contestants.

Those traps that made one spin in place also appeared in large quantities. Song Shuhang finally lost the monopoly on these traps.

Moreover, several other seniors obtained the 'spirit butterfly 60x acceleration' bonus too.

The forefront contestants saw that there were zones on the sea where countless bolts of lightning were raining down and thunder was exploding... to get past those zones, one needed to rely on their driving skills.

Whether they were godly or trash drivers... it would be clear if they managed to pass through that lightning and thunder zone.

Song Shuhang also arrived at the seashore.

Before entering the sea, he asked, "Is the water-proof formation active?"

The Super Phoenix Slayer Battle Armor System replied, Yes.

"Such being the case, let's go!" Song Shuhang took a deep breath and operated the hand-guided tractor, preparing to rush toward the sea and welcome the heavy rain and strong gale!

The hand-guided tractor accelerated and rushed into the sea with rumbling sounds, elegantly running on the surface of the sea for around a hundred meters.

Eh?

Wait, what...?

There seems to be something amiss...?

Why do I feel that my line of sight is getting lower and lower...?

Is the hand-guided tractor sinking?

Since Song Shuhang still felt as though he was driving on flat ground, the water-proof formation should be active. Nonetheless, the hand-guided tractor was still sinking!

"Is the water-proof formation active?" Song Shuhang asked once more.

At the same time, he braked and stopped the tractor.

Due to that three seconds delay, he managed to brake only three seconds later, and with the speed of the tractor, he stopped only after traveling a large distance.

The Super Phoenix Slayer Battle Armor System replied, Yes.

"In that case... why is the tractor sinking?!" Song Shuhang bellowed.

As he was speaking, only his head was still above the surface of the water. Luckily, this was Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body. Even if he were not to breathe for a whole day, it wouldn't have any effect on his body.

Moreover, a circular layer of defense appeared around the tractor on its own, wrapping the whole hand-guided tractor within and stopping the water from entering inside.

The self-examining system is running... please wait...

Warning, problems detected. The water-proof formation has been seriously damaged and is currently covering only 20% of the body of the vehicle.

In other words, the water-proof formation was now damaged, and although it was still 'working', it had lost most of its functionality. This was the reason the tractor was still sinking even though Song Shuhang felt as though he was still driving on land.

In the meantime, the whole hand-guided tractor got wrapped by the defensive layer and sunk into the water.

As the hand-guided tractor was sinking, the 'Phoenix Slayer System' scanned the damaged parts of the water-proof formation and transmitted the pictures to Song Shuhang. The chassis of the hand-guided tractor was damaged.

Song Shuhang didn't remember when that place got damaged. Perhaps it was when Fairy Dongfang drove in the wrong direction and knocked down his tractor, or perhaps it was affected when the hand-guided tractors of Sword Monarch Blue Sky and True Monarch White Crane fell apart and exploded...

Anyway, his water-proof formation was currently damaged.

"F*ck..." Song Shuhang blurted out.

What could he do now? Should he rush forward while still at the bottom of the sea?

But he couldn't afford to do that, either. Because staying at the bottom of the sea would continuously consume the energy of the barrier of the tractor.

And once the energy of the barrier was completely exhausted, the defensive layer would disappear... and the hand-guided tractor would get crushed by the pressure of the water.

"Is it possible to repair it?" Song Shuhang asked.

The Super Phoenix Slayer Battle Armor System replied, Yes.

"In that case, quickly repair it!" Song Shuhang shouted.

...But shouldn't it be Master Phoenix Slayer's duty to fix it?

"..." Song Shuhang.

F*ck, do you think I would be this worried if I knew how to fix this water-proof formation?!

What should I do? What should I do?

Suddenly, Song Shuhang's eyes lit up and he said, "Right, can you go online?"

Yes.

"Quickly log me into the Nine Provinces Number One Group!" Song Shuhang shouted.

Although several seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group were now participating in the hand-guided tractor competition, a lot were still in their dwellings.

If some of them were online, it was better to ask them how to salvage the situation. But if even the seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group were unable to solve the problem, Song Shuhang would have no other choice but to abandon the tractor and flee.

Please wait... connecting to the Internet...

Very soon, the login window of the messaging program appeared on the screen.

Song Shuhang wanted to log in with his account, but the system automatically filled in Young Master Phoenix Slayer's info.

Alright, it wasn't really important whose account he was using.

Song Shuhang fiddled with the window of the program a bit and sent the message.

In the Nine Provinces Number One Group.

At this time, the group chat was very lively. Many of the seniors that weren't participating in the race were chatting about what was happening in the competition.

Moreover, most of them were seniors that Song Shuhang hadn't

usually seen in the group.

Fairy Firefly: "Hahaha, True Monarch White Crane's tractor exploded! This competition is very cool... had I known earlier, I would have participated too."

Dongfang Snow: "I really liked the 'Song of the Stupid Yellow Mountain' that Doudou sang earlier! It was really good~"

[System Notification: Dongfang Snow was muted by the founder of the group, True Monarch Yellow Mountain, for 1 day.]

True Monarch Yellow Mountain was secretly lurking around, scary!

The other fellow daoists immediately changed the topic of conversation...

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman: "Hehe, I'm waiting for them at the finishing line. Moreover, I helped Senior White and Senior Spirit Butterfly arrange a large talisman formation to welcome all the fellow daoists."

Island Master Tian Tiankong: "I love seeing that baboon court death. It was a pity that Dharma King Creation and Northern River's Loose Cultivator didn't finish it off properly earlier."

Vice-Island Master Tian Tianwei: "Elder Brother, that's just Senior Brother Thrice Reckless Mad Saber! I won't pay attention to you anymore, hmph!"

Island Master Tian Tiankong was speechless. Of course I know that the baboon is Thrice Reckless! That's why I like him seeing court death!

"Oh my... I'm dying from laughing! Just now, that stupid Phoenix Slayer sunk into the sea soon after he started driving on its surface! Ahahaha, he actually sunk to the bottom of the sea! Ah... even my belly is hurting! 🤢🤢🤢" Treasure Forging Heavenly Mansion's Yang Xian sent several laughing emojis.

At this time Fairy Lychee suddenly popped out and said: "In times like these, you should send this emote, :senior_white_smiling_face:."

An awkward silence fell on the group chat.

They all knew that the Senior White's expression package was the main reason that meteor shower came into existence... but Fairy Lychee was still using Venerable White's emotes as though nothing happened!

After a short moment, Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman broke the silent: "Ahem..."

Then, he wrote: "Anyway, True Monarch Lychee, I heard that you delivered Iron Trigram to Medicine Master place, right?"

"Yes, I just arrived there and Medicine Master is currently treating Iron Trigram. Hehehe..." Fairy Lychee's mood was quite good.

Because now that Iron Trigram was here, that shady fortune teller would also have to make a trip to this place!

But right at this time, Song Shuhang successfully got online.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer: "Seniors! I need your help! My hand-guided tractor got flooded, what should I do now? I'm anxiously waiting for replies!"

"Wahaha! Phoenix Slayer, we were watching the live broadcast earlier and saw that your vehicle sunk to the bottom of the sea. What happened exactly? Ahaha...😂" Treasure Forging Heavenly Mansion's Yang Xian wrote.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer: "I don't have the time to explain in detail! In short, my water-proof formation is damaged and I sunk to the bottom of the sea! Seniors, how can I solve this situation!"

"Phoenix Slayer seems very courteous today. He is unexpectedly calling everyone 'senior'. Anyway, if your water-proof formation is

ruined, just repair it? After all, it's merely a water-proof formation, it should just take you a few seconds to fix it 😊," Fairy Lychee said.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer: "The problem is that I can't repair it...! Aren't there any other means?"

Chapter 448: I've been imprisoned for 500 years

"Doudou, are you using Young Master Phoenix Slayer's account?" Fairy Lychee hurriedly replied. "The water-proof formation is a mere Second Stage rank formation. How is it possible that Young Master Phoenix Slayer isn't capable of fixing it?"

At this time, Doudou was still anxiously barking next to True Monarch Yellow Mountain. He was still in shock, where would he get the time to go online?

Hence, True Monarch Yellow Mountain replied, "It's not Doudou."

Fairy Lychee asked out of curiosity, "It's not Doudou? Then, what is happening?"

"At this time, it's my turn to step forward," Island Master Tian Tiankong said in a low voice. "There is only one truth... Young Master Phoenix Slayer got possessed by someone? Speak, possessor, who are you?"

Young Master Phoenix Slayer replied, "Seniors, please don't joke around, I'm sinking... if I continue sinking, I'll reach the seabed. Please help me deal with the water issue first, we can talk about the rest later!"

Fairy Firefly replied, "Alright, it's nothing too troublesome. Fixing the 'water-proof formation' would do the trick."

Young Master Phoenix Slayer said, "But I don't know how to fix the water-proof formation!"

"It's time for Fellow Daoist Seven Lives Talisman to make an appearance. As the genius in the talisman department, Fellow Daoist Seven Lives Talisman is rather knowledgeable when it comes to formations too." Fairy Firefly smiled.

"You flatter me, Fairy Firefly... in that case, Fellow Daoist Phoenix Slayer, let me give you a simple explanation about the 'water-proof formation'. I happen to have a simplified version of the water-proof formation here. I can guarantee that it'll take only three seconds to fix ☺," Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman said.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer said, "I beseech you to instruct me."

"Firstly, you want to draw the fundamental framework of the water-proof formation. The simplified version I have is a simple circular formation—using spiritual energy as ink, draw a circle. Next, draw a simple eight-trigram on the inside." As Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman spoke, he sent a few simple pictures.

The pictures looked simple, it was just a round circle with an eight-trigram.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer's heart leapt, the formation was indeed very simple. "What's next?"

"Thereafter, you will have to channel sufficient power into the formation and this simplified water-proof formation would be completed. The water-proof formation will be effective until the spiritual energy you poured inside is completely exhausted. Come, let me send you a picture of the water-proof formation when it's completed." As Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman spoke, he sent another picture of the completed water-proof formation.

When he received the picture, Song Shuhang almost went blind.

The completed design was very beautiful.

A perfect circle with an exquisite picture of an eight-trigram inside, and right in the middle of the image, the characters 'water' and 'proof' were imprinted on it.

However, the completed design was very different from the draft that Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman sent earlier.

When comparing the two of them, it was kind of like comparing the words 'beautiful woman' and a picture of a beautiful woman.

Song Shuhang was immediately angry. "That's cheating! Senior Seven Lives Talisman, did you omit a lot of steps in the middle?"

How did the rough sketch immediately become such a beautiful 'water-proof formation' in just one step?

"Those steps are the ones that can be overlooked, you don't have to care about these details!" Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman calmly replied.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer said, "In that case, let me test it out?"

"I guarantee you it'll work. Remember to channel a lot of spiritual energy into the formation, I don't want to see you suddenly sinking into the water when I watch the live broadcast," said Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer said, "Ok!"

Song Shuhang did not speak any further. He struggled to adjust the spiritual energy within his body and directly engraved the formation on the pedal of the hand-guided tractor.

It didn't matter where he engraved it... as long as the water-proof formation was effective, it was all good.

According to Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman's instructions, he had to first draw the formation before channeling large amounts of spiritual energy directly until the formation was filled with it.

It should start working about now, right? Song Shuhang thought to himself.

However, the water-proof formation did not work, and the hand-guided tractor continued to sink.

"It's a joke, I knew it wasn't that simple and would definitely go wrong!" said Song Shuhang while clenching his teeth. He was

about to interrogate Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman.

As he was in the midst of his thoughts...

"Bam~"

Song Shuhang felt as though the hand-guided tractor knocked into something.

Because it was very obvious that there was still quite a distance before he hit the bottom of the sea.

After it knocked into something, the hand-guided tractor rebounded upon impact, and under the reverse applied force, it quickly floated.

Five seconds later.

"Bubble~" The hand-guided tractor number 44 came out of the water, similar to the magnificent sight of a submarine resurfacing.

Such a simple water-proof formation actually worked?

Within the Nine Provinces Number One Group.

Island Master Tian Tiankong said, "Hahaha, that stupid Phoenix Slayer finally came out of the water."

"Fellow Daoist Seven Lives Talisman's water-proof formation is awesome," praised Fairy Lychee.

"Hahahaha, it's a must. It's my only way of making a living. However, after this, Young Master Phoenix Slayer has to pick up the pace. After all, this water-proof formation is very simple—it's continuously consuming the spiritual energy stored within it. Once the energy is fully consumed, he would sink once again," said Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman.

"No problem, we'll enjoy watching him sink again. It's very amusing," said Island Master Tian Tiankong.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer was speechless.

I'm still online, alright?



Above the layer of clouds, Venerable Spirit Butterfly glanced at Young Master Phoenix Slayer's hand-guided tractor. The corners of his mouth rose. "Hehe, interesting. He actually bumped into the hidden easter egg. I even thought that no one would bump into this easter egg during the competition. Young Master Phoenix Slayer's luck is pretty good, huh."

After all, the second half of the race track required participants to race on the surface of the water, and the easter egg was hiding in ambush underneath the water. The chance of people finding it was not that great.

Venerable White who was in the midst of competing also grinned.

Both he and Venerable Spirit Butterfly had discovered the easter egg by accident. Next, they carefully moved it below the race track.

If nobody bumped into the easter egg, Venerable White wanted to let it out after the competition ended and allow all participants to revel in happiness.



Song Shuhang controlled Young Master Phoenix Slayer's tractor and started to catch up with the participants in front once again.

But at this time... an enormous creature awakened beneath the surface of the sea.

It slowly opened its eye. The enormous eye of the creature had blood traces in the middle. It seemed as though something knocked into it hard.

"Dammit, who knocked into my eye? It's so goddam painful." The enormous creature slowly started moving.

It was a cuttlefish-looking creature with enormous eyes that

resembled that of a goldfish. Each eye was as big as two hand-guided tractors put together.

It had hundreds of strong tentacles and four human-like arms.

After the enormous cuttlefish monster awakened, the hundreds of tentacles spread open, interweaving to form a cobweb of mental energy. They spread to the whole seafloor, trying to locate the bastard that bumped into its eye.

Very soon... it located Young Master Phoenix Slayer's hand-guided tractor that was speeding along the surface of the water.

"Bastard, I found you." The hundreds of tentacles of the enormous cuttlefish monster shook violently, and its extremely agile body charged towards the surface of the sea.

It wanted to overtake that bastard and stop him before swallowing him whole!



The enormous body, coupled with the extremely fast swimming speed, ensured that the enormous cuttlefish monster quickly got in front of the hand-guided tractor number 44.

Thereafter, it used all its strength to come out of the water.

The hundreds of tentacles were like whips cracking in the air, and each of its stocky arms was holding an enormous hammer.

"Roar, roar, roar!" The cuttlefish monster let out an angry bellow. Its eyes were fixed on Young Master Phoenix Slayer, who was far away.

"I was imprisoned for a whole 500 years, and I managed to break out of the seal with much difficulty... and now, you actually dare to intrude into my territory. You—are—practically—seeking—death."

As the cuttlefish monster was reciting its lines, a hand-guided tractor heartlessly rode over it.

It was True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon!

After getting to the second half of the competition, he took the lead and got way ahead of the others.

When True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon was in the water, he was the epitome of 'rowing a boat without oars' or 'sailing without depending on the wind'... all he needed were the waves!

Soft Feather had previously depended on the 'lucky trap' to temporarily get to the first place. But it took True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon only a couple of seconds to overtake her again!

The four bulky wheels mercilessly ran over the cuttlefish monster's head, leaving two thick trails on its face.

The waves continued surging, and True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon continued advancing forward!

The cuttlefish monster bellowed, "Cruel and despicable fellow, you actually dare to mount a sneak attack... aaargh~"

After True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon, True Monarch Fallout, Soft Feather, and Cave Lord Snow Wolf ran over the cuttlefish monster almost at the same time, closely following in True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon's wake.

The cuttlefish monster fell to the ground after being run over multiple times. "So painful! All you rude fellows, I am going to kill every single one of you!"

"Move!" At this time, a cold voice was heard.

The cuttlefish monster blinked its eyes and noticed that not too far away, there was a sea of hand-guided tractors charging over in its direction.

Right in front of the pack was a man with black wavy hair, driving a golden tractor.

"Dammit, all of you are courting death!" the cuttlefish monster bellowed. Afterward, tens of its tentacles and the hammers in its

hands headed for the man with black wavy hair all together.

"Stupid monster, get out of the way! You are blocking the road!" Dharma King Creation said out of anger. At the same time, the golden Buddha statue appeared once again in the open container of his tractor, standing up.

The huge golden fist headed towards the cuttlefish monster.

"Bang!"

The golden fist and the cuttlefish monster's hammer collided!

In the following second, the cuttlefish monster was sent flying—it was not an easy feat to receive a blow from the Super Saiyan Monk, Dharma King Creation!

Thereafter, Dharma King Creation's golden tractor mercilessly rolled over its body.

"Aaah~" cried out the cuttlefish monster.

"Whizz, whizz, whizz..."

After Dharma King Creation, more than ten tractors continuously ran over the cuttlefish monster from different directions.

"Aaaah~" the cuttlefish monster cried out continuously.

With much difficulty, after the wave of tractors had passed, the cuttlefish monster got up once again.

It took a broad view and saw that not too far away, another wave of hand-guided tractors was dashing toward itself at high speed. And that fellow that injured its eye was the last one of the group.

None amongst them seemed to be paying any attention to it.

Chapter 449: A relative of the Sea King?

The announcer Jiang Shan said, Once again, there are new developments in the hand-guided tractor competition! An enormous cuttlefish monster suddenly appeared in the midst of the race track. We can see that the cuttlefish monster has four human-like arms and hundreds of tentacles. There is no monster or spiritual energy within its body. It seems that it isn't a monster that practices cultivation. Could it be a sea monster with a special bloodline?

Wait, the cuttlefish monster opened its mouth and said something...? Unfortunately, it is unknown which Chinese dialect it used. I didn't understand a word of what it said.

Haha, we just got hold of new information. This cuttlefish monster is an easter egg that Venerable Spirit Butterfly and Venerable White placed on the race track. Congratulations to our participant, Young Master Phoenix Slayer, for activating the easter egg!



Just as Jiang Shan was explaining, the cuttlefish monster was thoroughly enraged.

It was an extremely strong monster that had been sealed for 500 years, and it didn't expect that people would start rolling over it as soon as it came out of the seal.

"Are you lumping me together with a stupid octopus just because I didn't reveal my true strength?" the cuttlefish monster roared. Then, it suddenly took a deep breath and drank a large quantity of seawater.

Huge whirlpools formed on the surface of the sea after it sucked up the water.

After a few breaths, its body swelled until its size increased three

times. With that, it completely blocked the section of the race track located on the sea. On the edges of the race track were two light beams that were acting as marks—the competition could be carried out only within the range between these two light beams.

"All of you will die!" the cuttlefish monster said gloomily as it glared at the approaching army of hand-guided tractors.

"Move, you're in the way!" A loud voice suddenly echoed. It was Scholar Drunken Moon.

Northern River's Loose Cultivator and True Monarch Ancient Lake Temple were closely following behind him.

The cuttlefish monster had learned its lesson. Hence, it held the hammers with its four hands and attacked Scholar Drunken Moon. After all, the one that attacked first shall prevail! "Insignificant creatures, die!"

"What an unreasonable fellow! I just told you not to block my way... Mad Lightning Dragon Drill!" A huge drill appeared once more in front of Scholar Drunken Moon's hand-guided tractor, a chain of runes coiled around it.

"In that case, let's beat it until it understands how to behave... Victory Rams!" Four rams appeared above the wheels of Northern River's Loose Cultivator's hand-guided tractor.

"You guys go first. I'll prepare a few Scud missiles in the meantime!" True Monarch Ancient Lake Temple said happily. During that trip the last time, he managed to collect several missiles. If not for the fact that the open container of the hand-guided tractor was too small, True Monarch Ancient Lake Temple would have fired ten missiles at once, getting ten times happier as well.



From the backlines of the group, Song Shuhang looked at the cuttlefish monster with a confused expression on his face.

He felt that the cuttlefish monster looked somewhat familiar.

In particular that huge eye... he felt as though he had seen it already somewhere...

'Where did I see it?' Song Shuhang racked his brain.

Then, his eyes suddenly lit up.

He remembered now... this eye was very similar to that of the Sea King behind the sea urchin warriors!

When the sea urchin warriors within the Illusory Sword School were killed, the leader of the sea urchin warrior used his 'transformation' ability.

Afterward, space cracked, and within the crack appeared the eye of the being the sea urchin warriors called 'Sea King'.

"Is this cuttlefish monster that Sea King?" Song Shuhang muttered.

However, he quickly denied this possibility.

Although the Sea King controlling the sea urchin warriors appeared only once, one could easily tell that he was very powerful and that his strength wasn't inferior to that of Venerable Spirit Butterfly. Moreover, it could even use the power of space to some extent.

Compared to the powerful Sea King, this cuttlefish monster seemed rather foolish and weak...

Even though the cuttlefish monster looked really impressive, it lacked substance in the end. Although it seemed extremely powerful, it wasn't actually that strong... each member of the Nine Provinces Number One Group could beat it to a pulp if they wanted to.

But even if it wasn't the Sea King, it was still quite similar to it.

In that case, was it possible that this cuttlefish monster was a relative of the mysterious 'Sea King'?



Just as Song Shuhang was in deep thoughts, Scholar Drunken Moon controlled his hand-guided tractor and splendidly dodged the hammers of the cuttlefish monster.

After that, he swiftly dodged its tentacles as well.

In the end, his Mad Lightning Dragon Drill mercilessly stabbed the body of the cuttlefish monster, creating a huge hole in it. Pitch-black blood gushed out from the hole like a fountain.

"Aaaaah~ Painful, painful!" the cuttlefish monster called out pitifully again and again. The water it drank earlier gushed out as well, causing the size of its body to decrease...

Scholar Drunken Moon coldly snorted and mercilessly rolled over the body of the cuttlefish monster with his hand-guided tractor.

Next, Northern River's Loose Cultivator's 'Victory Rams' also viciously hit it, leaving two bloody and long marks on its body.

After Scholar Drunken Moon and Northern River's Loose Cultivator left, a barrage of Scud missiles exploded on the body of the cuttlefish monster like fireworks.

"Boom~"

After the explosion, the whole body of the cuttlefish monster was charred black, and one could faintly smell the aroma of a teppanyaki-style cooked cuttlefish...

The body of the cuttlefish monster spread out on the surface of the sea like a jellyfish. Was it already dead...?

True Monarch Ancient Lake Temple laughed and controlled his hand-guided tractor, rolling over the body of the now spread out cuttlefish monster.

In the rear, Song Shuhang exclaimed, "So weak!"

Its awe-inspiring appearance had been of no use!

At first glance, this cuttlefish monster seemed like a final boss that had directly come out of a horror movie. It seemed even more domineering than Abyssal Demon Lords in games.

But little did he expect that it would be continuously rolled over by others and spread out on the surface of the water like a dead jellyfish.

"Whizz, whizz, whizz..."

Next, the hand-guided tractors of the other contestants rolled over the body of the cuttlefish monster one after another.

The cuttlefish seemed to have given up and kept lying face-down on the surface of the water, not moving in the slightest and allowing the contestants to roll over its body with their hand-guided tractors.

Very soon, it was Song Shuhang's turn.

"Did it really die just like that?" Song Shuhang muttered.

He cautiously approached the body of the cuttlefish monster. At the same time, he quietly grabbed the treasured saber Broken Tyrant inserted on the edge of the seat of the tractor.

He felt that it was strange for the cuttlefish monster to die just like that. Therefore, he decided to be a bit careful.

As the hand-guided tractor number 44 belonging to Young Master Phoenix Slayer approached the cuttlefish monster, the latter suddenly moved.

"Ahahaha, what an idiot. Did you really think that I would die just like that? There is no way I would die that easily. Now, die! You were my objective from the beginning!" said the cuttlefish monster with a strange accent.

What it was speaking seemed to be one of China's dialects. However, Song Shuhang couldn't understand which region this

dialect belonged to. Perhaps it was one of the dialects used in China several hundreds of years ago?

"Eat my attack, Tentacle Whip!" The cuttlefish monster mobilized more than thirty tentacles and crazily attacked Song Shuhang with them.

Song Shuhang had already grabbed his saber, and just as the cuttlefish monster was shouting, he prepared himself and used the first style of the <Inverted Scale Saber Technique>, the Dragon Dance Style!

Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body jumped from the tractor and soared into the sky.

The saber moved and slashed out like a huge dancing dragon. One could even faintly hear the cry of a dragon emit from the saber.

"Bang, bang, bang~" The tentacles of the cuttlefish monster rained down.

"Whoosh, whoosh, whoosh~" Song Shuhang's saber danced like a dragon.

Two breaths later...

The thirty or so tentacles of the cuttlefish monster were all blocked by Song Shuhang without fail.

Although he had that three seconds delay, when that barrage of thirty or so tentacles rained down, he was able to predict their trajectory in advance. This allowed him to use his saber to ward off all the attacks before they could land.



The probing attack was over.

The cuttlefish monster received its tentacles, and Song Shuhang controlled Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body and descended to the surface of the sea, walking on water as though he was walking

on flat land.

"Pretty hard." Song Shuhang shot a glance at the cuttlefish monster. The treasured saber Broken Tyrant couldn't cut its tentacles... and this saber was even capable of cutting the body of a cultivator of the Fourth Stage! When cutting the tentacles of the cuttlefish monster, it was only able to leave behind some shallow white marks.

Moreover, it was Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body that was wielding the saber! Young Master Phoenix Slayer was a monster cultivator of the Fifth Stage, and although Song Shuhang didn't know which type of monster he was, the strength of monster cultivators was usually much higher than human cultivators'.

From the looks of it, the strength of the body of this weak-looking and battered cuttlefish monster far exceeded that of a cultivator of the Fourth Stage rank.

Moreover, the opposite party seemed to be interested in dealing with Song Shuhang only... Dammit, why can't I compete properly? If I don't enter the first ten, I'll have to make a one-month trip in space!

The one-month trip this time was much different than the previous one. This time, Venerable White wouldn't be there with him since he had to accompany the other fellow daoists and explore the ruins with them.

Therefore, Song Shuhang would have to go on this one-month trip all alone.

He would surely go crazy!

At this time, it would be really good if he could use Young Master Phoenix Slayer's unique skill and whatnot, beating this cuttlefish monster to a pulp and rolling over its body.

* * *

"Aaaaah... you in the front, step aside!" Right at this time, a series

of screams transmitted from behind.

This voice was rather familiar.

Song Shuhang didn't even need to turn his head to know who this person was. It was the kamikaze driver Fairy Dongfang... she was back to the battlefield to kill.

Immediately after hearing Fairy Dongfang's scream, Song Shuhang heard the rumbling of the tractor's engine transmit from around a hundred meters behind him.

That was fast... did Fairy Dongfang bump into one of those traps that can increase one's speed by sixty times?

Song Shuhang made up his mind and decided to hide beneath the surface of the sea... he had no other choice with this three seconds delay. Hiding in the depths of the sea was his only way to avoid a tragic traffic accident with Fairy Dongfang.

But his body was still lying face-down, ready to get into the water, when he felt a heavy and burning feeling transmit from his back... Fairy Dongfang's hand-guided tractor had mercilessly rolled over his back.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer's eyes started to tear up, and he couldn't make out if this salty taste was that of his tears or the seawater.

"Aaaaah~ I-I'm sorry, Young Master Phoenix Slayer!" Fairy Dongfang said anxiously while on the verge of tears. Next, she also added, "You big monster ahead, move to a side, quick!"

"Dammit, another one? Do you really take me for a good-for-nothing octopus? Eat my move, Turbulent Rain Hammer!" the cuttlefish monster bellowed. Next, it wielded the hammers with its four arms, and a barrage of attacks rained down on Fairy Dongfang.

However, this attack with the hammers was merely a cover.

At this time, it had already condensed a powerful poisonous acid in its mouth, ready to spurt it all over Fairy Dongfang as soon as she was within range...

Chapter 450: Fellow Daoist Phoenix Slayer, will you sing for me?

The voice of the announcer, Jiang Shan, immediately echoed. Fairy Dongfang did splendidly! Immediately after returning to the battlefield, she rolled over Young Master Phoenix Slayer! This is simply like a king, or queen, making her return! Now then, that ugly cuttlefish monster is blocking Fairy Dongfang's path. How would she deal with that monstrosity?

"I'm going to crash!" Fairy Dongfang called out in alarm. The speed of her hand-guided tractor number 37 was getting faster and faster.

"Turbulent Rain Hammer!" The cuttlefish monster madly waved its hammers and attacked Fairy Dongfang.

"Clang, Clang, Clang~"

A series of metallic sounds echoed.

The hammers of the cuttlefish monster continuously hammered on the protective barrier of Fairy Dongfang's tractor. The spiritual energies of the two parties collided, producing explosions each time.

The explosions were like thunder, hurting one's ears.

"Kekeke!" The cuttlefish monster strangely laughed. Since it had appeared on stage, it was its first time attacking someone else... Fairy Dongfang was a kamikaze driver and was thus unable to control her hand-guided tractor. Therefore, she wasn't able to dodge the hammers like the other fellow daoists and could only meet them head-on.

In around a second, the four big arms of the cuttlefish monster hammered on Fairy Dongfang's tractor thirty-eight times.

As the last hammer attack rained down, the barrier around Fairy

Dongfang tractor couldn't take it anymore and broke into pieces!

After losing the protection of the barrier, both the tractor and the driver were now laid bare under the mouth of the cuttlefish monster.

The tractor had continuously moved forward and was now out of the range of the monster's hammers and about to roll over the cuttlefish.

But right at that time, the cuttlefish monster opened its mouth and sprayed a jet of poisonous acid toward Fairy Dongfang.

They were very close to each other, and the area the acid covered was too broad. Hence, Fairy Dongfang wasn't able to dodge it...

The poisonous acid spurted on the tractor, immediately starting to corrode it.

In a mere two seconds, Fairy Dongfang's hand-guided tractor melted and changed into molten metal, just like a wax candle burning down. Only the chassis and the wheels were left, and since the tractor lost the effects of the water-proof formation, it quickly sunk into the sea.

It wasn't only the hand-guided tractor, even Fairy Dongfang got hit by the poisonous acid and seemed to be in a predicament.

"Kekeke~" The cuttlefish monster laughed complacently. This was the fate of those that underestimated it!



Song Shuhang stopped the hand-guided tractor and looked at the perfectly still Fairy Dongfang, saying, "Fairy Dongfang, are you alright?"

"Hehehe..." Fairy Dongfang angrily laughed. She stretched out her hand and waved it, casting off all the poisonous acid in front of her. The spiritual energy coiling around her body managed to ward off the poisonous acid that shot toward her earlier.

But a small part of the poison penetrated the shield of spiritual energy and sprayed on her clothes, creating several holes in her dress.

Her vehicle was gone...

And this year's limited edition dress she was wearing was also ruined...

The fault was of this stupid cuttlefish monster blocking the road!

Fairy Dongfang stretched her hand out and threw her long hair behind her back, then used a bracelet to tie it into a ponytail.

Ah! This conclusion was rather unexpected! The cuttlefish monster hid its ability to spit venom all along! Fairy Dongfang couldn't dodge in time and the poison sprayed on her body! Her hand-guided tractor was also melted by the poison... after True Monarch Yellow Mountain, Sword Monarch Blue Sky, and True Monarch White Crane, Fairy Dongfang is the fourth contestant to be eliminated from the competition! Losing Fairy Dongfang is certainly a big loss for the hand-guided tractor competition, truly regrettable.

How could this competition even be called 'racing competition' without a kamikaze driver participating in it? Why didn't this stupid cuttlefish monster spit its poison on Young Master Phoenix Slayer instead of destroying Fairy Dongfang's tractor?

The spectators on the clouds.

Liu Long sighed with emotion and said, "Little Six is angry!"

Little Six was Fairy Dongfang's childhood name.

"Her whole vehicle melted, no wonder she's angry!" a nearby fellow daoist said with a smile.

"Ah..." Liu Long gently nodded and sat cross-legged, casting his eyes down and not moving in the slightest.



"Kekeke! Let's keep attacking, Turbulent Rain Hammer!" After successfully spraying the poison from its mouth and damaging the enemy, the cuttlefish monster decided to attack once more to preserve its advantage.

Its four huge arms grabbed the hammers and launched another attack toward Fairy Dongfang.

This time, it added almost fifty of its tentacles to make a joint attack against Dongfang.

Fairy Dongfang quietly stood on the surface of the water, and just as the hammer was about to hit her head, she slowly moved.

Her toes gently pressed on the surface of the water as though she was dancing, intermittently creating ripples. Soon after, she started the real dance.

Even though the cuttlefish monster was madly attacking... the scene had suddenly transformed into Fairy Dongfang's musical performance.

The hammers and tentacles of the cuttlefish monster crazily attacked, but all the attacks brushed past Fairy Dongfang without injuring her.

"Dammit!" the cuttlefish monster angrily howled and felt as though it was being made fun of. It opened its mouth once more and sprayed a jet of poisonous acid again.

Fairy Dongfang swung her long ponytail as she sang a few syllables in a low voice. A seven-colored light appeared behind her body and changed into a pillar of light that exploded toward the sky.

The seven-colored light had strong purifying properties and completely evaporated the poisonous acid after they clashed against each other.

The cuttlefish monster opened its eyes wide. Its poison wasn't working?

Dammit. It seemed that it had to use its instant kill move. Aside from the poison, the cuttlefish monster had another powerful technique. But the time required to prepare it was slightly longer.

Thereupon, it sped up the frequency of its attacks and started to secretly prepare its powerful move.



Pleasing to the eye and the mind...

It was Song Shuhang's first time seeing such a beautiful fight.

Fairy Dongfang's dance was truly amazing.

Song Shuhang had seen several types of dances since childhood. But whether it was Chinese classical dance, modern dance, rap dance, break dance, or weeb dance... they weren't as good as Fairy Dongfang's dance.

It felt as though her dance was capable of resonating with the soul itself.

The onlookers wished they could keep looking at her dancing forever.

They felt like staring at her without moving their eyes away.

While dancing, Fairy Dongfang was completely different than her usual self. It almost felt as though they were two different entities.

Fairy Dongfang was quite a beauty on her own... and aside from cultivators that practiced special techniques, the majority would have their bodies tempered along with the increase in realm. After getting tempered, their bodies would automatically become more 'beautiful'.

And when Fairy Dongfang started dancing, her charm increased by tens, if not hundreds of times!



After discovering that its attacks were useless, the cuttlefish monster roared, "Damned human! Are you only capable of dodging and jumping around like a flea?!"

It was trying to provoke Fairy Dongfang with its words and force her into a head-on battle.

"Hehe." Fairy Dongfang lightly jumped, and the streamer entwining her arm gently slashed out, blocking the hammers and tentacles of the cuttlefish monster that were aiming at her.

Afterward, she fell next to Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body. The tip of her toes touched the surface of the water, creating circular ripples.

"Fellow Daoist Phoenix Slayer, will you sing for me?" Fairy Dongfang suddenly asked. "Today, I got out of home in a hurry, and I forgot to bring the music player along."

After being shocked for three seconds, Song Shuhang said, "Sing for you? What type of song do you want me to sing?"

"Anything is fine. You can sing whatever you want. You'll sing and I'll dance!" Fairy Dongfang said with a smile.

"In that case, how about 'In this world, only mom is good'?" Song Shuhang subconsciously said. Actually, the first song he thought of was Doudou's brainwashing 'Song of the Stupid Yellow Mountain'.

That song Doudou sang earlier had a very good rhythm, and the lyrics were easy to read aloud. After hearing it a few times, one couldn't help but feel like humming it. As for the lyrics, cultivators could easily remember them due to their powerful memories.

Therefore, Song Shuhang immediately thought of the 'Song of the Stupid Yellow Mountain' as soon as he heard the word 'sing'.

But that song was too dangerous to sing.

The scene was currently being broadcasted worldwide... wouldn't

True Monarch Yellow Mountain visit him tomorrow to give him a good lesson if he were to sing this song to accompany Fairy Dongfang's dance...?

Fairy Dongfang smiled and said, "That song is too short. Don't you have something a bit longer?"

Actually, Song Shuhang could sing many songs... however, he felt that they were not suited for the current situation.

The most popular songs of 2018 and 2019 were lovey-dovey songs. Moreover, the majority were sung by female singers...

Therefore, Song Shuhang didn't really want to sing them... because it would give others the feeling that he was wooing Fairy Dongfang.

Then... after racking his brain for a bit, he remembered a song that was very famous between 2014 and 2015.

Although it was also a love song as well, it was at least funny... therefore, it should be more suited to the situation?

"In that case, I'll sing! But don't blame me if I'm not good!" 'Young Master Phoenix Slayer' said.

"It's not a problem. As long as the text is long, you can sing whatever you want." Fairy Dongfang faintly smiled.

It was a smile full of confidence.

After Fairy Dongfang's guarantee, Song Shuhang steeled himself.

"Such being the case, I'll begin!" Young Master Phoenix Slayer coughed and adjusted his mood.

Then, he used his foot to set the rhythm and started...

I sowed a seed~
It finally yields fruit~
Today is a great day~

Along with the music, Fairy Dongfang's body started to spin on the surface of the water. The content of the song was unimportant to her; she just wanted to coordinate with the tune.

Water sprayed and the drops were picked up by Fairy Dongfang's spiritual energy, floating next to her body. Afterward, they were dyed by the seven-colored spiritual energy, turning into beautiful-looking pearls.

At this time, Fairy Dongfang resembled the spirit of a lake, incredibly beautiful and captivating.

Song Shuhang controlled Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body and kept singing:

I pluck stars down for you~
I pluck the moon down for you~
I let the sun rise up for you every day~

Fairy Dongfang's dance became faster and faster, and the colored streamer coiled around her, raising up a gentle breeze and giving rise to a strange illusion in the surrounding area.

The image of a 'night sky' appeared on the top of her head, and the surface of the sea below her feet became Fairy Dongfang's personal dance floor.

The bright moon shone in the sky full of stars! The surface of the sea slightly rippled and reflected the picture of the sky.

This wasn't the 'illusory reality' of a Venerable. It was just a phenomenon that would take place whenever Fairy Dongfang executed her particular cultivation technique.

The scene was beautiful, absolutely breathtaking!

At this time, Young Master Phoenix Slayer's voice echoed once more:

I turn into a candle to burn myself only to light you up~
I dedicate my everything to you whatever you like~

You make my every tomorrow meaningful~
Life is short, but I'll love you forever never giving you up~

Both the song and the voice were heartbreaking!

The spectators were both fascinated by the beautiful scene and heartbroken due to the song, continuously alternating between the two. This made them feel the impulse to grab a blade and hack Young Master Phoenix Slayer.

The music continued, and Fairy Dongfang's dance continued as well.

In the sky, the spectators and the referees were all staring at Fairy Dongfang, their eyes moving along with her silhouette. At this time, no one was paying attention to the hand-guided tractor competition anymore.

"Those are unexpectedly the ⟨Nine Bewitching Dance Steps⟩, incredible!" Venerable Spirit Butterfly said gently. He didn't expect that someone could successfully practice the ⟨Nine Bewitching Dance Steps⟩.

This cultivation technique was very different from the others. One could say that it was a cultivation technique that didn't walk the same path as ordinary cultivation techniques.

As far as Venerable Spirit Butterfly remembered, no one had been able to master the ⟨Nine Bewitching Dance Steps⟩ in the last thousand years. He didn't expect that he would be able to meet a user of this technique in this place.

When the ⟨Nine Bewitching Dance Steps⟩ were displayed, even if the onlooker was much stronger than Fairy Dongfang, they would still fall into confusion if their willpower wasn't strong enough.

For example, even the cultivators standing on the clouds and the huge cuttlefish monster were all affected by her dance.

Those cultivators with low strength were completely entranced by Fairy Dongfang's dance.

Their mood would change according to the dance—they would get happy, sad, and angry in the wake of the dance...

Song Shuhang was rather lucky. Since he was Fairy Dongfang's 'vocal accompaniment', he wasn't influenced that much by her dance and didn't lose himself in the *«Nine Bewitching Dance Steps»*.

He only felt that her dance was incredibly beautiful and wished to record the whole scene.



In front, the cuttlefish monster was already mind-broken.

"Uwaaaaah..." The cuttlefish monster burst into loud sobbing. It was crying as though it was extremely aggrieved. While crying, it was ruthlessly battering its body with its tentacles.

Then, while crying, it suddenly started laughing and used its four arms to hammer the surface of the sea. It just couldn't stop laughing, and its whole body swelled due to laughing too much.

While laughing, it suddenly started crying...

While crying, it suddenly started laughing...

Then, from time to time, it would sigh like a middle-aged woman with pent-up feelings or roar like a madman.

If someone unaware of the situation were to look at this scene, they would think that the cuttlefish monster was practicing for an acting competition.



At last, Fairy Dongfang's dance finally came to an end. Her slender white hands overlapped and assumed the shape of a flower, starting to spin upwards...

Song Shuhang coordinated and sped up the rhythm of the song:

You're my little, oh little apple~
Just like the most beautiful cloud in the sky beyond~
Spring is here again and the flowers blossom all over the hills~
If you sow hopes you'll have a harvest!

The song came to an end.

Fairy Dongfang likewise finished the last step of her dance, and her soft body bent backward together with her small and slender waist. This movement really made her magnificent mountain peaks stand out!

Incredibly beautiful!

Song Shuhang held his thumb up in approval. This last movement was truly beautiful; he really liked it!

At this time, the cuttlefish monster also abruptly stopped in its tracks.

In the next moment, it opened its mouth wide. "Ugh~"

This time, what came out wasn't poisonous acid but fresh blood... the volume of the blood was exaggerated and kept flowing without any signs of stopping. It felt as though it wouldn't stop until the whole blood inside its body had gushed out.

Unfortunately, the blood of the cuttlefish monster wasn't compatible with that of human beings.

Otherwise, this quantity of blood would have been enough to fill a blood bank completely...

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=11h6TKmnaxI>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Hp nub-uM6eo>

Chapter 451: The silver bracers

Song Shuhang controlled Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body and asked, "Fairy Dongfang, do you want to take the blood of the cuttlefish monster?"

Although the cuttlefish monster was a bit of a disappointment, it was still a monster beast. Moreover, it was very likely a monster beast above the Fourth Stage Rank, possibly even of the Fifth Stage rank!

The body of a monster beast of that rank should be a precious treasure itself.

In novels, aside from taking the buried treasure of the dragon after killing it, the dragonslayer would also take its blood, scales, skin, muscles, bones, and even its penis... because they were valuable spoils of war.

Fairy Dongfang untied her ponytail and asked somewhat confused, "Fellow Daoist Phoenix Slayer, why do you need the blood of this cuttlefish monster...?"

"The blood, meat, skin, and bones of a monster beast should all be valuable treasures, right?" Song Shuhang probed.

"Oh, there indeed might be some good treasures. Fellow Daoist Seven Lives Talisman might have a use for them, but they are useless for me. Therefore, whoever wants them can take them. Moreover, if we're talking about 'monster blood', can't Fellow Daoist Phoenix Slayer just use his own blood...?" Fairy Dongfang asked in puzzlement.

After all, Young Master Phoenix Slayer was a powerful monster that could assume human form!

"..." Song Shuhang.

Monster cultivators had this small advantage over the others. If one of them were to become a 'talisman master' and didn't have

the ink to draw the talismans, they could just use their own blood to draw the runes; rather convenient and high-end, wasn't it?



At this time, inside a deep-sea trench 5000 meters below the surface of the Pacific Ocean.

This place was full of sunken ships, equipment to explore the seabed, and even wrecked airplanes.

Ordinary people couldn't step inside this sea region, and all the things that entered this area would be destroyed by a mysterious power.

Inside the deep-sea trench was a huge sacrificial altar.

The sacrificial altar had the shape of a pyramid made of stairs. Its length and width both reached a thousand meters, and twelve 100 meters tall pillars surrounded the altar.

At this time, around 100,000 sea urchin warriors were kneeling next to the sacrificial altar.

Each of these sea urchin warriors was holding a thick copy of the <Sea Urchin Warriors' 20 Years of Mandatory Education Manual—Sacrificial Offering Section> in their hands. They were kneeling down while flipping through the textbook and reading the contents aloud.

After seeing how much of the thick book they had flipped, one could tell that these 100,000 sea urchin warriors had been chanting the text related to the sacrificial offering for a very long time.

Soon after, the more than one thousand sea urchin warriors that were particularly sturdy slowly got on the altar. Each of them was wearing a red-colored battle armor. These armors were the same as the one the leader of the sea urchin warriors summoned inside the Illusory Sword School.

The thousand-plus sea urchin leaders were holding huge sealed-

up jars in their hands. Inside the jars was the 'true blood' that the sea urchin warriors collected all over the world.

This true blood came from all sorts of living things with particular powers. Monster beasts, cultivators, inheritors of ancient bloodlines, aboriginal deities, sacrificial offerings, and so on...

At last, the jars full of 'true blood' were placed inside the sacrificial altar.

Afterward, the thousand-plus sea urchin leaders formed a circle and loudly roared in the language of the sea urchin warriors.

Their voice was deafening.

With this roar, they were beseeching the 'Sea King' to descend and accept the sacrificial offering while bestowing them with power, protection, and fertility so that they could prosper and fill the oceans with their race.

After roaring, the sea urchin leaders retreated and left the sacrificial altar, kneeling below the altar like the ordinary sea urchin warriors while chanting the text of the sacrificial offering section.

Around ten minutes later, the sea urchin warriors completed the ritual to borrow the power of the pyramid-like sacrificial altar.

The space above the sacrificial altar fractured, and just like when that sea urchin leader carried out his 'transformation' back then, a huge eye appeared within the space crack.

It was the eye of the Sea King that the sea urchin warriors worshipped.

The huge eye shot a glance at the sea urchin warriors surrounding the sacrificial altar, revealing a satisfied look.



The sound of the prayers of the sea urchin warriors got louder

and louder.

The eye of the Sea King slightly moved as though it was gathering energy. After several breaths, a purple ray of light suddenly shot from the eye and hit the core of the sacrificial altar.

In the next moment, the true blood inside the sacrificial altar got activated by the power of the ray the Sea King shot from its eye. The true blood flowed through the pipelines and poured inside the depths of the sacrificial altar itself.

The whole sacrificial altar was now covered with red-colored lines.

After a short moment...

"Thump, thump, thump!" A heavy and powerful sound that resembled heartbeat suddenly echoed. It almost felt as though there was a huge pulsating heart inside the sacrificial altar.

The whole sacrificial altar shook along the sound of the pulsating heart.

The members of the sea urchin clan were delighted and started to roar like madmen, coordinating their howls with the heartbeat of the sacrificial altar.

Whenever the 'heart' inside the sacrificial altar pulsated, the sea urchin warriors roared together with it.

In the end, the sacrificial altar thoroughly activated!

The twelve stone pillars surrounding the sacrificial altar lit up, and a lifelike eye made of energy materialized above each pillar.

The twelve eyes made of energy quickly rotated and arrayed themselves into a circular formation, gazing toward the outside as though they were looking for something. As long as there was enough 'true blood', the search range of the twelve eyes of energy had no limit.

After seeing this scene, the same thought resurfaced in the minds

of each of the sea urchin warrior: 'These twelve eyes are closely watching the entire world. This is simply like the eye of a god, keeping a close watch on all living things in the world!'

Of course, it was a mere misconception that welled up in the hearts of the sea urchin warriors and nothing more.

Found it, it's in the East China Sea area! The eye of the Sea King lit up, looking very happy.

Soon after, a thought was transmitted from the body of the Sea King to the sacrificial altar, causing the energy of the altar to mobilize.

The twelve eyes above the pillars rotated back to their original positions and fixed their gazes on the pyramid-like sacrificial altar. Then, a gray-colored radiance was refracted from each eye.

The refracted light met in the center of the sacrificial altar, fusing together and causing the space to crack, materializing a space gate above the sacrificial altar.

The sacrificial altar was the secret treasure that the Sea King used to mobilize the power of space.

As long as it had enough 'true blood', it could use the sacrificial altar to display all sorts of mysterious techniques.



The sea urchin warriors fixed their eyes on the mysterious scene taking place in front of them.

From what they saw, there was a rather familiar-looking sea on the other side of the gate.

On the surface of the sea was a huge cuttlefish monster. At this time, the cuttlefish monster was spurting out blood as though there was no tomorrow. Its body quickly withered and shrunk.

The eye of the Sea King became even happier. It's seriously injured? Even better, I won't have to waste time!

The 'true blood' inside the sacrificial altar was continuously consumed, and a special type of energy poured inside the twelve pillars.

This time, the eyes of energy above the pillars refracted a transparent ray of light.

The transparent rays of light shot inside the space gate, ultimately projecting onto the body of the cuttlefish monster.

✧ ✧ ✧

"Wuwuwu~" The cuttlefish monster stopped spurting blood from its mouth and released a strange cry instead.

Its body started to melt, and just like a slime, it turned into a mass of liquid.

A yellow topaz was visible inside the liquid mass, and inside the topaz was a pair of silver bracers.

Chapter 452: How come it's you again?

Song Shuhang was still pondering how to handle the corpse of the cuttlefish monster when twelve rays of light shot out from the depths of the sea, hitting the body of the cuttlefish monster.

In the next moment, the body of the cuttlefish started to melt, and something that resembled a yellow topaz appeared from inside its body.

What's that thing? The calculi of the cuttlefish monster?

Song Shuhang was confused.

Then, the yellow topaz completely separated from the body of the cuttlefish monster.

Song Shuhang could see through Young Master Phoenix Slayer's eyes that there was something inside the yellow topaz—a pair of silver bracers. These silver bracers were similar to the bracers that were part of the heavy full-body armor the cavalry wore in ancient times, it was just much more polished. Several strange runes and decorative patterns were carved onto the bracers; they looked like a piece of art.

"Is it one of those treasure that monsters leave behind after their death?"

After seeing the blood demon that was carrying quite a number of treasures with it, Song Shuhang was no longer surprised by the fact that monsters would leave behind some treasures after their death.

Monsters were also living things. Therefore, it wasn't that strange that they would have treasures with them... but why was this cuttlefish monster carrying this pair of bracers inside its body?

Given the size and shape of this treasure, there was no way the cuttlefish monster could use it.

Was it possible that it accidentally swallowed them while eating something...? And afterward, since it was unable to digest the bracers, they turned into calculi inside its body?

Right at this time, Fairy Dongfang reminded, "Fellow Daoist Phoenix Slayer, be careful. There is a powerful energy fluctuation approaching from the depths of the sea."

Just as Fairy Dongfang finished her sentence, a huge vortex suddenly appeared beneath the body of the cuttlefish monster.

Beneath the vortex was hiding a 'space gate', which immediately swallowed a large amount of seawater as it opened. On the other side of the gate was a huge pyramid surrounded by twelve pillars.

Above each of the twelve pillars was an eye, and it was precisely those eyes that shot the ray of light that melted the body of the cuttlefish monster!

"The sea urchin warriors!" Song Shuhang called out after seeing the numerous sea urchin warriors kneeling next to the pyramid.

These guys were like bad weed, you could literally find them everywhere.

The pillars, eyes of energy, rays of light, and the melting of the cuttlefish monster... are they all related to the sea urchin warriors?

"Their objective should be that pair of silver bracers, right?" Song Shuhang guessed. Then, he quickly transmitted a command to Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body dashed along the surface of the sea, pouncing toward the yellow crystal. As long as it was something the sea urchin warriors wanted... Song Shuhang would steal it even if that thing ended up being the cuttlefish monster's gallstone.

Fairy Dongfang called out in alarm, "Fellow Daoist Phoenix Slayer, be careful! That's a teleportation technique, it's very dangerous!"

Whenever the teleportation started, a ring of chaotic space capable of cutting everything would appear in the proximity of the teleported object—it was not something cultivators below the Ninth Stage Tribulation Transcender Realm could deal with.

No matter how powerful their defense was, they would be cut into pieces if they were to barge into the chaotic space without the means to defend against its cutting power.

* * *

In the secret room of the Chu Family, Song Shuhang had witnessed that mister called She Lan operate the Star Shifting Formation which was a space-type formation.

He had also heard from Venerable Spirit Butterfly some information about the teleportation process and the defensive layer of chaotic space surrounding it.

If he were to use Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body to forcefully barge into the chaotic space, his body would surely be shredded to pieces. But the power of teleportation had yet to enwrap the crystal before his eyes.

Therefore, there was still a chance!

While running, Young Master Phoenix Slayer's foot propped upward one of the pieces left behind by Fairy Dongfang's hand-guided tractor, holding it in his hands.

This piece of the tractor fell off before the whole thing melted earlier, and since it was made of wood, it was floating on the surface of the sea.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body tightly held onto it and dashed forward, jumping very high immediately after.

"Come out!" Young Master Phoenix Slayer said in a deep voice.

Afterward, he threw the piece of the hand-guided tractor in his hand toward the yellow crystal.

Just like he had guessed, the power of space had yet to enwrap that yellow crystal.

The piece of the tractor flew across the surface of the sea and violently smashed into that yellow crystal!

Song Shuhang hoped that the impact could make that yellow crystal fly away.

As long as the thing was thrown outside the range of the teleportation formation, the sea urchin warriors would have no way of obtaining the yellow crystal or the silver bracers inside.

By relying on Young Master Phoenix Slayer's strength of the Fifth Stage, even without assuming the form of a monster, the piece of the tractor he threw with all his strength should have a strength measured in 'tons'.

That yellow crystal of the size of half an adult's body should be knocked flying by it, right?

At the very least, it should allow me to gain some time! Song Shuhang thought to himself.

* * *

"Dong~"

A sound that resembled that of an ancient bell tolling echoed.

The piece of the tractor violently knocked into the yellow crystal hovering in the sky, making it shake. Then, just like Song Shuhang predicted, it started to leave the range of the teleporting formation.

"Success!" Song Shuhang rejoiced in his heart.

But right at this time... an angry roar was transmitted from the other side of the formation.

Soon after, a huge eye emerged from the other side of the teleporting formation.

A sticky white ray shot out from the eye, instantly glueing to the yellow crystal and stopping its movements, pulling it again toward the teleporting formation.

"The Sea King." Song Shuhang clenched his teeth. It showed itself at last.

After seeing the huge number of the sea urchin warriors kneeling next to the sacrificial altar, Song Shuhang guessed that the Sea King might also be hiding somewhere close.

Now that the Sea King was here, he had no hope of snatching away the yellow crystal with these petty tricks.

Luckily, I have powerful helpers by my side.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer looked toward the sky and shouted, "Senior Spirit Butterfly!"

With that attack earlier, he had already gained quite a bit of time. In the capacity of the main referee of the competition, Venerable Spirit Butterfly should appear on site as soon as possible, right?

Song Shuhang knew that Venerable Spirit Butterfly had studied the power of space. Back then, he had disregarded the cutting power of space and seized the scroll from that mister's hands through the chaotic space.

"I'm coming." Venerable Spirit Butterfly suddenly appeared beside Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body. He gently laughed and softly pulled the corner of Young Master Phoenix Slayer's robe, using a gentle strength to throw him backward.

In the next moment, from the other side of the gate, the eye of the Sea King shot a cold ray that hit the place Young Master Phoenix Slayer was standing in the previous instant.

The place was immediately frozen, changing into a stretch of ice.

If not for Venerable Spirit Butterfly pulling him away, Young Master Phoenix Slayer would have turned into a chunk of ice.

At this time, the yellow crystal had entered the range of the teleporting formation once again.



Venerable Spirit Butterfly's eyes penetrated the gate and looked at the Sea King.

"I didn't expect to meet you so soon." Venerable Spirit Butterfly smiled faintly.

In the next moment, he stretched out his hands and used them to pierce the chaotic space while completely disregarding the cutting power of space.

Two golden ropes shot out of his sleeves like snakes and wrapped the yellow crystal in the hope of dragging it out of the formation's range.

"Roar!" On the other side, the Sea King sent out another roar, and the strength of the sticky white ray of light shooting out of its eye increased.

Dammit, it's that bastard again?

Earlier, the Sea King and Venerable Spirit Butterfly had briefly exchanged blows in the Illusory Sword School while separated from a space gate, and the Sea King had suffered a small loss.

It didn't expect that it would meet Venerable Spirit Butterfly so quickly.

How come I'm meeting this bastard wherever I go?

As the saying went: 'Enemies and lovers are destined to meet'.

This time, the Sea King came to this public gathering to retrieve something. The silver bracers inside the yellow crystal were too important for it. It absolutely had to retrieve them.

But now, not only did it want to bring these bracers back, it wanted to give a good lesson to this guy before its eye as well. Thanks to the power of true blood inside the sacrificial altar, it

could burst forth at least 60% of its power even though its main body was still sealed.

The white ray of light shooting from the eye of the Sea King firmly clung to the yellow crystal.

At the same time, several other types of rays shot from its eye, madly attacking Venerable Spirit Butterfly while separated by the space gate.

Venerable Spirit Butterfly didn't stand on ceremony, either—sword qi exploded from his body and changed into spirit butterflies, phoenix butterflies, and even dragon butterflies—and other similar types of different sword qi shapes—continuously thrusting into the space gate and clashing with the rays the Sea King shot out.

While fighting, they resembled two super-fortresses firing at each other.



After seeing that its ordinary rays were unable to deal with Venerable Spirit Butterfly, the Sea King secretly clenched its teeth.

Immediately after, it shot a strange ray from its eye. The color of this ray was pitch-black and it resembled a jet of liquid.

After it was shot out, the liquid ray didn't attack Venerable Spirit Butterfly. Instead, it spread out halfway, merging with all the rays the Sea King had shot out earlier.

In the next moment, the liquid ray changed into a black flood dragon, baring its fangs and brandishing its claws before shooting toward Venerable Spirit Butterfly.

"Ouch, ouch, ouch. This is bad, this thing is quite powerful," Venerable Spirit Butterfly shouted. "Fellow Daoist White, is it not ready yet?"

"It's ready." Venerable White's voice was transmitted from a

distant place.

In the next moment, a sword light flashed and quickly shot toward the yellow crystal.

It was one of Venerable White's personal creations, the disposable flying sword 005 edition. The flying sword shot forward at an incredible speed.

Venerable Spirit Butterfly seized the opportunity to pull back his golden ropes and quickly retreated, avoiding the fearsome black dragon... meeting the attack unleashed by the angry Sea King head-on would be rather painful! He might get seriously injured if he were not careful enough~

While retreating, Venerable Spirit Butterfly flicked his finger, shooting out a spirit butterfly that attached itself to the disposable flying sword 005 edition.

With this spirit butterfly, the disposable flying sword wouldn't suffer the effects of the cutting power of space, allowing it to successfully pass through the chaotic space surrounding the formation!

Next, the disposable flying sword with the spirit butterfly attached to it thrust inside the formation.

"Ding~" The tip of the sword ruthlessly pricked the yellow crystal.

Chapter 453: Not letting go of any opportunity to show off!

Many unexpected events unfolded! After the cuttlefish monster died, a space gate suddenly appeared next to its body. The creature on the other side of the space gate seems on planning to take away the treasure from the body of the cuttlefish monster. This time, the focus of the hand-guided tractor competition suddenly shifted to the space gate that appeared after the death of the cuttlefish monster. Young Master Phoenix Slayer did great and almost managed to send the yellow crystal flying with his attack. Although he is currently placed last in the hand-guided tractor competition, Young Master Phoenix Slayer is one of the flashier contestants! The announcer Jiang Shan sighed with emotion.

One of the flashier contestants?

The referee in charge of firing the starting pistol, Venerable Tornado, was particularly sensitive toward these words. He held his chin and gazed at the distant place where Venerable Spirit Butterfly and Venerable White were fighting the Sea King.

At this time, Venerable White and Venerable Spirit Butterfly were in the center of the attention.

"It won't do! How can such a flashy scene lack the good old me!" Venerable Tornado called out. He really liked to show off, and wouldn't let such an opportunity escape!

"It seems I'll have to appear on stage as well. Otherwise, all the spectators will just forget about me!" Venerable Tornado stretched out his hand and took something out of his cosmos bag.

It was an 80 square meters large eight-trigram disc with sharp blades on its edges. It was a peculiar type of weapon.

Next, Venerable Tornado gently stepped on the eight-trigram disc, whizzing toward the space gate of the Sea King.



After pricking the yellow crystal, Venerable White's disposable flying sword 005 edition kept flying at high speed, trying to carry off the yellow crystal outside the formation along with it.

The speed of the disposable flying sword was extremely fast, and it brought the yellow crystal to the edge of the formation in a mere instant, ready to carry it out of its range.

On the other side, the Sea King roared exasperatedly. It steeled its heart and controlled the black dragon, making it perform a U-turn and sending it toward the flying sword and the yellow crystal!

"Boom~"

The black dragon exploded.

The disposable flying sword was something Venerable White had casually manufactured and was thus torn to pieces.

The yellow crystal likewise exploded to pieces!

"Is it that angry? It wants to destroy the treasure directly?" Venerable Spirit Butterfly said. Was the meaning of this action something like: 'If I can't obtain this thing, no one will obtain it'?

"Eh? No, those silver bracers are extremely hard. Even a full-powered attack of the Venerable rank was unable to destroy them." Venerable White's voice was transmitted from a side.

Venerable White closely followed behind the flying sword and stood in the air, not too far away from the formation. "Fellow Daoist Spirit Butterfly, get ready to steal the bracers!"

After the explosion, the yellow crystal was blown to pieces and the bracers inside were floating in the space of the formation.

Venerable Spirit Butterfly quickly made his move—a piece of cloth flew out from his hand and covered the silver bracers.

Venerable Spirit Butterfly had many treasures with him and the methods he could use were numerous. Therefore, he would

hardly use the same method twice.

Venerable White followed suit and likewise made his move. He didn't have that many magical treasures and decided to use the flying sword he got from the loose cultivator Li Tiansu, slashing toward the space formation.

Unlike Venerable Spirit Butterfly, Venerable White didn't have such a deep understanding toward the concept of space and couldn't disregard the cutting power of the chaotic space.

But after slashing out, Venerable White kept a close watch on the flying sword, concentrating his attention.

In the next moment... the flying sword suddenly disappeared.

The next time it reappeared, it was right above the teleport gate of the Sea King.

"So that was it!" The corner of Venerable White's mouth rose. Although he didn't know what had happened, he seemed to have grasped a little bit of the power of space after advancing to the Venerable rank.

The last time, when he was trying to get Song Shuhang out of the mysterious island, his flying sword suddenly disappeared together with the whale it was carrying. At that time, he thought that it was some special power of the mysterious island getting triggered... but in hindsight, it kept giving him a strange feeling.

Now, he had determined that it was his own power and that he had grasped the power of space!

After appearing inside the teleport gate, the flying sword quickly dashed forward while emitting a bright light, ruthlessly slashing toward the eye of the Sea King.



The Sea King was dumbfounded... since when had the power of space become so common? All the Venerables appearing could now

use abilities related to space?

What kind of joke was this! How could the Ninth Stage Tribulation Transcenders that were so proud of their ability to control space endure something of the sort?!

However, the Sea King didn't have too much time to think at this time.

"Roar~" the Sea King cried out and shot out nearly one hundred rays from its eye.

The rays all shot toward the silver bracers.

In the next moment, the black dragon that had exploded next to the silver bracers reformed once again.

Even though it exploded and dispersed earlier, the Sea King just needed to replenish it with its 'rays' to make the black dragon reappear once more. It was extremely difficult to deal with.

After coming back to life, the powerful black dragon pounced toward Venerable Spirit Butterfly's cloth-shaped magical treasure.

At the same time, the Sea King once more shot out the sticky white ray from its eye, enwrapping that pair of silver bracers and trying to drag them toward its position.

On the other hand, it didn't defend at all against that flying sword Venerable White threw at itself!

In the instant Venerable White's sword entered the range of the teleporting formation and prepared to attack the Sea King, the twelve pillars surrounding the sacrificial altar suddenly lit up.

The twelve eyes above the pillars shot out rays of light that merged and transformed into an umbrella-shaped defensive barrier at the edge of the teleporting formation that blocked Venerable White's flying sword.

The other side of the gate with the sacrificial altar clearly was the supreme headquarters of the Sea King. It obviously enjoyed the

home advantage there!

The black dragon was dealing with Venerable Spirit Butterfly... while the defensive barrier blocked Venerable White's attack!

Both Venerable White and Venerable Spirit Butterfly's attacks turned out to be ineffective.

"It's over! Kaka~" The Sea King sent out a complacent laughter. It was its first time using human speech.

The teleporting formation was ready, and the silver bracers were within its range.

In the next moment, the teleporting formation emitted a blinding light.



"Fellow Daoist White, should we go all out?" Venerable Spirit Butterfly asked.

If Venerable White and him used their full strength, they would still have a chance to snatch the silver bracers away... however, it was somewhat dangerous. If they were careless, they might get pulled inside the teleporting formation.

Still, he wasn't scared of being pulled inside the teleporting formation together with Venerable White and ending up in the supreme headquarters of the Sea King. He was sure that they would win seven times out of eight if they were to cooperate while going all out.

"Hmm... it will be troublesome if we are to get involved with the teleporting formation, and the hand-guided tractor competition hasn't finished yet..." Venerable White replied.

In other words, he hadn't had enough fun yet.

He had been preparing the hand-guided tractor competition for such a long time and finally managed to have this much fun. Therefore, he was unwilling to abandon the competition halfway

to barge into the supreme headquarters of the Sea King.

However, he was also reluctant to let the Sea King take away the silver bracers.

Thereupon, he thought of a compromise.

"I've decided. Let's let it off for the time being," Venerable White said.

"Sure." Venerable Spirit Butterfly laughed and activated a seal technique, taking back his cloth-shaped magical treasure. Otherwise, it would be pulled to the other side after the teleporting formation started and he would suffer a loss.

On the other hand, Venerable White didn't recover the flying sword... after the light of the formation flashed, the flying sword was instantly teleported through the space channel and delivered on the sacrificial altar of the sea urchin warriors.

Venerable White smiled... he had locked onto their position!

If there was still time after the hand-guided tractor competition was over and they were done exploring the ancient ruins, they might as well go to swipe clean the sacrificial altar of the Sea King...

However, that eye was really strong. At the time, he would need to take a few fellow daoists with him and form a group!

Venerable Spirit Butterfly and Venerable White stopped and didn't try to get in the Sea King's way anymore.

From the looks of it, the outcome was a foregone conclusion.

The Sea King was still vigilant. It controlled the black dragon and wrapped the silver bracers, firmly protecting them against possible surprise attacks from Venerable White and Venerable Spirit Butterfly.

At last, the black dragon and the silver bracers also started to

disappear amidst the light of the teleporting formation.

The Sea King on the other side heaved a sigh of relief.

But right at this time, a silhouette approached at high speed from a distant place.

The voice of the figure echoed even before it made its appearance. "Petty thief, stop!"

While shouting, the peculiar weapon beneath the feet of the figure flew away with a whizz.

This figure directly shot its magical treasure toward the teleporting formation. Wasn't it afraid that the formation would take away its weapon?

Venerable White and Venerable Spirit Butterfly turned around and shot a glance at the incoming person. After seeing that it was the flashy Venerable Tornado, they both smiled gently.

If it was Venerable Tornado, the godly weapon he was using should be the 'Child Wheel' of the 'Space Cutting Mother-Child Wheel', right?

It was the godly weapon of the Realm Crossing Sect to which Venerable Tornado belonged!

The Realm Crossing Sect was an old school with a legacy passed down from ancient times. Its founders were Ninth Stage Tribulation Transcenders of the ancient Heavenly City. After the Heavenly City was destroyed, the founding members of the Realm Crossing Sect likewise disappeared. However, they left behind the Space Cutting Mother-Child Wheel.

If both the 'mother' and 'child' part of the wheel were united, they would have the power to cut space.

But even the Child Wheel alone could easily attack through a teleporting formation.

Therefore, Venerable Tornado wasn't afraid of the formation of the other party.



At this time, the left silver bracer had already disappeared, while only the forearm part of the right one was left.

"Ah, slash!" Venerable Tornado roared.

The Space Cutting Mother-Child Wheel pierced the space gate and cut the silver bracer around the wrist area.

"Ding!"

The silver glove was separated from the rest of the bracer and brought out of the formation by the Space Cutting Mother-Child Wheel.

After flying out of the range of the teleporting formation, the Space Cutting Mother-Child Wheel kept spinning as it dashed toward Venerable Tornado's hand.

This change had been too sudden and the Sea King was unable to react.

In the next moment, the space channel gradually closed.

Before the space channel disappeared, the super-unwilling cry of the Sea King echoed from the other side. Just what the hell was happening...? Was it possible that the times were changing, and all Venerables could now wield the power of space?

"Ahahaha!" Venerable Tornado lifted the silver glove and laughed, satisfied.

At this time, he was in the center of the attention.

He was the focus and second to none.

Chapter 454: I'll make you happy!

Venerable Tornado loved the feeling of millions of people focusing their attention on him.

Regardless of the time, I must be the most flashy person among the crowd! I'm Venerable Tornado, the man that speaks for himself! Venerable Tornado lifted the silver glove high up.

However, this degree of showing off was not enough. Although he managed to make his move just in time, he had been unable to stay in the spotlight for a long time. Therefore, he decided to seize the opportunity and do something he'd wanted to do since the start of the competition.

Venerable Tornado turned around and stepped on the Space Cutting Mother-Child Wheel, arriving in front of Young Master Phoenix Slayer so quickly that he seemed to have teleported.

Song Shuhang looked at Venerable Tornado in puzzlement, wondering what he was up to.

"Phoenix Slayer!" Venerable Tornado handed the silver glove to Young Master Phoenix Slayer with a gentle expression on his face.

Song Shuhang was baffled. He had no idea what Venerable Tornado was trying to do.

Was it possible that Venerable Tornado and Young Master Phoenix Slayer were close friends?

Fellow Daoists watching from home! As you can see, Venerable Tornado is launching his offensive against Young Master Phoenix Slayer once again! Will he be able to succeed this time? the host Jiang Shan said.

From the looks of it, it isn't Venerable Tornado's first time launching his 'offensive' against Young Master Phoenix Slayer...

But the problem is that I'm not Young Master Phoenix Slayer!

Just what is the relationship between Young Master Phoenix Slayer and Venerable Tornado? Should I accept the silver glove? Song Shuhang was in a dilemma.

At this time, Venerable Tornado said, "Phoenix Slayer, I like you!"

F*ck!

Three seconds later.

F*****ck!

Song Shuhang was dumbstruck.

It was unexpectedly a public confession? He had never experienced this sort of matter before!

Moreover, Venerable Tornado is a man... and Young Master Phoenix Slayer is also a male monster, right? Song Shuhang was about to subconsciously feel his chest to see if the godly treasure that could allow a woman to disguise as a man—the breast enwrapping cloth—was there...

But right at this time, Venerable Tornado said the second half of his sentence, "Become my beloved pet, Phoenix Slayer! I took a fancy to you long ago. I promise that I'll take good care of you just like Fellow Daoist Yellow Mountain takes care of Doudou. I'll surely make you happy... you'll be the happiest pet in the world!"

"..." Song Shuhang.

Take care of your sister!

"How about it? I'll give you food and lodging, cultivation resources, and I'll accompany you to various secret realms as well. As long as you behave like an ordinary pet like Doudou, you'll be allowed to act like a spoiled child every now and then. What do you think?" Venerable Tornado said with an expectant look on his face.

Three seconds later, Song Shuhang resolutely said, "I refuse!"

Venerable Tornado was disappointed and squatted down on the

Space Cutting Mother-Child Wheel. It seemed he had received a huge blow.

The voice of the announcer Jiang Shan timely echoed. It ended up with failure once more! But even if Venerable Tornado failed this time, we believe that he won't give up so easily... because a show-off like him doesn't know the word 'defeat'. We'll look forward to seeing Venerable Tornado launch more offensives against Young Master Phoenix Slayer!

* * *

Yet another three seconds later.

"Goodbye, Senior Tornado." Song Shuhang controlled Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body and quickly ran to his hand-guided tractor.

There wasn't much time left, and his objective was still to place amongst the first ten in this hand-guided tractor competition!

Even though his chances to place amongst the first ten were almost nil, he couldn't give up!

After climbing onto his hand-guided tractor, he started it...

"Rumble, rumble, rumble~" The hand-guided tractor emitted black smoke and dashed forward.

"Phoenix Slayer, wait a moment!" Venerable Tornado suddenly stood up and stroked his hair. Afterward, he threw the 'silver glove' in his hands toward Young Master Phoenix Slayer with a cool pose.

Then, he continued in a carefree manner, "Phoenix Slayer, since the time I saw your lovely body with fur standing up, your small pointed ears, and your seven-colored pupils... I was deeply attracted to you. I've liked you for a long time, and there is bound to be a day when you'll willingly become my beloved pet. Moreover, I believe that that day is not too far!"

"..." Song Shuhang.

"I won't give up on you. One day, we'll happily live together." Venerable Tornado held his thumb up in approval with a confident look on his face.

Song Shuhang's body fiercely trembled. When the chill in the air and the one coming from his soul merged together, he felt as though he was inside an ice cage.

Venerable Tornado, what drug is behind your confident smile? How about giving some of it to me too?

After ignoring Venerable Tornado and his strange hobbies, Song Shuhang rumbled away on his hand-guided tractor.



But just as he started moving, Venerable Spirit Butterfly fell from the sky and gently landed above his hand-guided tractor.

"Little friend, don't be impatient," Venerable Spirit Butterfly said with a smile. "You have yet to receive the reward for activating the easter egg."

"The reward for the easter egg?" Song Shuhang said in puzzlement.

"Originally, Fellow Daoist White and I hid a reward on the body of the huge cuttlefish monster. After triggering the easter egg, it would be possible to obtain the reward hidden within. Unfortunately, the body of the cuttlefish monster melted and the hidden reward also disappeared," Venerable Spirit Butterfly said as he shrugged his shoulders.

Song Shuhang rejoiced in his heart and said, "And then?"

"Then, Fellow Daoist White and I discussed it a bit and decided to turn the reward into the thing you need the most at this time," Venerable Spirit Butterfly said with a smile.

The thing I need the most at this time? What might it be?

In the next moment, Venerable Spirit Butterfly took out an A4 white paper and pasted it on Young Master Phoenix Slayer's hand-guided tractor.

"It's a 10x speed increasing formation that will last until the end of the competition. Good luck fighting for the first ten places, little friend." Venerable Spirit Butterfly laughed and turned around, returning high up in the sky and resuming his job as the main referee.

Song Shuhang was so excited that hot tears filled his eyes.

Although it was just a 10x speed increasing formation, it was indeed the thing he needed the most at this time!

Moreover, this 10x speed increasing formation would last until the end of the competition! It was a heaven-sent gift!

Song Shuhang's favorable impression of Venerable Spirit Butterfly increased by 50 points, while his favorable impression of Venerable White increased by 51 points.



But three or so seconds later, Song Shuhang's complexion turned ugly.

Under the effects of the 10x speed increasing formation, his ability to predict things three seconds ahead would become useless.

Although he could reduce the distance between him and the other contestants with the help of the 10x speed increasing formation, troubles would also follow one after another.

For example... the lightning zone ahead.

While entering this area, the other contestants would rely on their driving skills and quick reflexes to nimbly shuttle their cumbersome hand-guided tractors back and forth inside the lightning zone, passing through the place without taking damage.

As for Song Shuhang... he would dash about madly through the

lightning zone like a bulldozer.

After passing through the lightning zone, the energy of the defensive barrier of his hand-guided tractor would be thoroughly exhausted.

Afterward, even a simple torpedo would be enough to destroy Young Master Phoenix Slayer's hand-guided tractor.

I mustn't bump into other traps! Song Shuhang prayed in his heart.

At this time, all he could do was to pray.

Perhaps his prayers truly became effective... in front, contestants would often bump into traps, returning to the starting point completely free of charge, suffering surprise attacks from torpedoes, coiling toward the sky to spin in place for a while, getting attacked by earth spikes, and so on...

Moreover, several contestants fell due to the actions of other contestants... for example, True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon made full use of the advantage he had in the sea and overturned the hand-guided tractors of several fellow daoists.

However, Song Shuhang didn't meet with any danger along the way.

He only suffered the surprise attack of a torpedo once, and since the speed of the hand-guided tractor was too fast, only the open container in the back was hit and somewhat damaged. The tractor itself didn't suffer any severe damage.

Time slowly passed by on the race track...

Song Shuhang himself hadn't expected that he would enter the first twelve given his circumstances!

Very soon, the finish line appeared before his eyes!

The silhouette of a faraway small island was already visible. That

place was Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman's dwelling, and the same island where the natives were living. The place also happened to be the finish line of the hand-guided tractor competition.

Song Shuhang was currently placed 12th! He just needed a bit of extra effort to place amongst the first ten!

He was extremely excited at this time.



In the forefront.

"I'll be the winner!" True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon was in the lead.

"Fellow Daoist Tyrant Flood Dragon, I think you meant that I would be the winner." True Monarch Fallout was just to his right.

Immediately behind was Cave Lord Snow Wolf. True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon plotted against him halfway in the race and made him fall behind a bit...

Soft Feather was closely chasing after the three seniors.

Next to her were Great Master Profound Principle who was driving his vehicle silently and Northern River's Loose Cultivator.

The above-mentioned six contestants temporarily occupied the top six. However, only the first five would be able to enter the ancient ruins to explore them. Therefore, the six of them would have to fight until the very end.

Behind Soft Feather were following the baboon version Thrice Reckless Mad Saber, Dharma King Creation, Daoist Priest Southern Lake, Sun Splitting Halberd Guo Da, and the calm-looking Scholar Drunken XXX.

Then, after them was none other than Song Shuhang who was ranked 12th.



The finish line was right before their eyes.

The baboon cheerfully called out, "Hahaha, it's time for the final sprint. I've held myself back until now. It's time to start sprinting! I must enter the first five! Ancient ruins, I'm coming!"

As soon as the voice of the baboon faded, it felt the rear of its tractor shake and the energy of the defensive shield quickly deplete!

Thrice Reckless Mad Saber quickly turned his head around, only to see Scholar Drunken XXX's gentle, smiling face.

"Brother Thrice Reckless, do you like the taste of my Mad Lightning Dragon Drill?" Scholar Drunken XXX said coldly. He could have attacked Thrice Reckless with his Mad Lightning Dragon Drill a long time ago if he wanted to. However, he'd held himself back and decided to attack Thrice Reckless Mad Saber when it mattered the most... because it would give him much more satisfaction!

Thrice Reckless Mad Saber's eyes started to tear up.

Due to Scholar Drunken XXX trying to hinder Thrice Reckless Mad Saber, the two of them quickly lost their place amongst the first ten...

...allowing the lucky Song Shuhang to enter the first ten in their stead!

"I'm amongst the first ten, I'm unexpectedly amongst the first ten!" Song Shuhang said excitedly.

As long as he could hold onto this position, he wouldn't have to go on that one-month trip in space.

"Go, go, go! I must absolutely maintain my current position!" Song Shuhang said excitedly.

Chapter 455: Congratulatory messages from all over the world

Earlier, when Song Shuhang asked about the water-proof formation in the Nine Provinces Number One Group, he heard Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman say that he had arranged a huge and lavish runic formation next to the small island to welcome the fellow daoists participating in the hand-guided tractor competition.

Therefore, he had to be a little careful.

However, he couldn't slow down his speed while he was keeping a watch on the surroundings.

He was barely within the top ten and was thus in a very dangerous spot. If any of the other contestants were to overtake him, the doors of the one-month trip in space would open wide for him.

Now then, what if I fail to maintain my position and get sent into space? What should I do then?

I must take my mobile phone with me and store hundreds of books inside. No matter the type of the books, they are all good. Then, movies and TV shows can't be missing, either. I'll need them in large quantities. Next... games? I wonder what kind of amusing single-player games they released recently.

He didn't need to fear running out of battery. With the 'battery charging technique', he wouldn't have any problem of the sort...

However, he would need to prepare a few tablets and similar things in case the phone went bad after being used for too long in space.

...F*ck, just what the hell am I thinking?

Ugh, ugh, ugh! Everything will be fine, I won't go into space for

trips and whatnot!

I've decided, I'll become the Pirate King! No, wait... I meant that I would place amongst the first ten in the hand-guided tractor competition!

Go, go, go!

Song Shuhang tightly held the steering wheel of the tractor while his whole body shook up and down along with it.

Faster, I need to go faster!

I need to maintain my 10th place and fight for the 9th, 8th, and even 7th place!

If he could get hold of the 9th place or a better one, he would feel much safer.

His hand-guided tractor continued to rumble forward.

"Eh? Wait a moment. I feel that there is something amiss," Song Shuhang said suddenly.

After saying this much, he stretched out his hand and pressed on the interface of the Super Phoenix Slayer Battle Armor System.

"Verify the condition of the vehicle. I have the feeling that it is sinking..." Song Shuhang said.

Yes, the Super Phoenix Slayer Battle Armor System replied, the tires of the hand-guided tractor number 44 sank by one centimeter, and they are continuously sinking as we speak.

"Why is that happening? Did the water-proof formation lose its strength?" Song Shuhang called out.

Yes... the spiritual energy inside the formation has almost been exhausted. The water-proof formation will stop working once the spiritual energy inside is used up completely.

When it rains, it pours~

He had obviously poured a lot of spiritual energy inside the

water-proof formation engraved on the hand-guided tractor... he thought that it would last until the end of the competition.

Was it because he wasted too much time while dealing with that cuttlefish monster?

"I won't give up so easily." Song Shuhang clenched his teeth and controlled Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body, using his right foot to press the pedal on which the water-proof formation was engraved.

Since it's lacking spiritual energy, I just have to pour some into it! Something like this can't stop me!

Thereupon, a huge amount of spiritual energy poured into the formation from Young Master Phoenix Slayer's foot.

The water-proof formation emitted a weak ray of light.

It was working!

Great! Now, I just need to hold on... I just need to hold on until the finish line and it's my victory~ Song Shuhang rejoiced in his heart.

But then, the weakly glistening water-proof formation suddenly became dim.

The water-proof formation exploded!

No! Song Shuhang roared inwardly.

After losing the effects of the water-proof formation, the hand-guided tractor number 44 sank toward the bottom of the sea.

"Transform, quickly assume the Rolling War Wheel Form!" Song Shuhang shouted.

But due to the delay... the order was three seconds late.

When he actually shouted the order, the water had already reached his neck.

Since he had madly dashed about through the lightning zone

earlier, the energy of the defensive barrier of the hand-guided tractor was completely exhausted. Since it didn't have any form of protection when it started sinking, the seawater flooded the engine of the tractor.

After rumbling a few times, the engine died.

Just in this fashion, the hand-guided tractor number 44 kept sinking deeper and deeper towards the depths of the sea...

The finish line was right before his eyes, and he fell short of success right at the end! It was such a shietty day!

Song Shuhang took from the tractor the treasured saber Broken Tyrant, the silver glove Venerable Tornado threw at him, and the tablet that seemed to contain the Super Phoenix Slayer System.

Then, he gazed at the hand-guided tractor number 44 sinking deeper and deeper. Song Shuhang felt that tears started to well up in the corners of his eyes. But since he was in the middle of the water, his tears mixed with the surrounding seawater.

"Not even the boundless sea can hold my sorrow..." Song Shuhang muttered.

After holding the treasured saber Broken Tyrant, the glove, and the tablet, Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body stiffly headed toward the surface of the sea.



Fellow Daoists watching from home, another contestant had to leave the competition just before the finish line due to their hand-guided tractor having problems. The one that left the competition this time was one of the showiest contestants of the competition, Young Master Phoenix Slayer!

Since Fellow Daoist Phoenix Slayer didn't take care of the waterproof formation properly, his tractor was flooded with water and sank toward the bottom of the sea. This time, he wasn't lucky enough to bump into another easter egg but sunk toward the

seafloor directly! In short, don't let things get flooded with water! Be it a vehicle, a computer, or even a brain! You mustn't let them get flooded! the announcer Jiang Shan said vehemently.

"..." Song Shuhang.

Your brain and your shietty jokes are flooded!

After resurfacing, the tablet in Song Shuhang's hand sent out a 'beep~' sound.

This tablet was something that Phoenix Slayer made personally. Even if it was submerged underwater, it didn't break.

The tablet was emitting this sound due to the messages sent in the Nine Provinces Number One Group.

Song Shuhang couldn't help but stretch his hand out and take a look at the messages.

In the Nine Provinces Number One Group.

Fairy Firefly: "Wahaha, I almost died from laughter! Young Master Phoenix Slayer sank into the water once more!"

"I saw it too, and my belly is hurting from how much I laughed," Island Master Tian Tiankong said. "I was eating noodles while watching the live broadcast, and when I saw that stupid Phoenix Slayer sink toward the bottom of the sea, I laughed so hard that the noodles came out of my nose... the noodles happened to be very spicy, shiet~"

"No way, the spicy ones, ahahaha~ My belly is hurting too~ the stupid look on Young Master Phoenix Slayer's face when he sank the second time was priceless, that stupid monster, haha~ 🤔," Fairy Lychee said.

Blue veins bulged on Song Shuhang's forehead. The seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group were only capable of taking delight in other people's misfortunes. Was none of them going to

comfort his wounded heart?

His hand-guided tractor was gone, while the ticket for the space trip was already ready. It was over, it was truly over...

Should he try to beg Venerable White and hope for a lighter punishment?

Just as he was in deep thoughts, the seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group started sending other messages.

Treasure Forging Heavenly Mansion's Yang Xian: "The people of Guangdong send their congratulatory message. Congratulations to Young Master Phoenix Slayer for sinking to the bottom of the sea once more!"

Fairy Firefly followed suit. "The people of Yunnan send their congratulatory message. Congratulations to Young Master Phoenix Slayer for sinking the second time!"

Island Master Tian Tiankong: "The people of Free Island send their congratulatory message. Congratulations to Young Master Phoenix Slayer for leaving the competition ahead of time!"

Fairy Dongfang also got online out of nowhere and wrote: "The people of the Tian Mountain Range send their congratulatory message. Congratulations to Young Master Phoenix Slayer for being so cute!"

After seeing so many fellow daoists pop up one after another, True Monarch White Crane wasn't able to resist and likewise wrote: "The people of New Zealand send their congratulatory message. Congratulations to Fellow Daoist Phoenix Slayer for getting flooded!"

At this time, Song Shuhang felt like smashing the tablet he was holding to pieces.

"Shuhang~" At this time, a voice calling Song Shuhang's name

was transmitted from afar.

Song Shuhang turned his head around and saw Venerable White as he elegantly stopped his hand-guided tractor next to him.

"Get on the tractor. Since the hand-guided tractor competition has come to an end, I'll carry you to Fellow Daoist Seven Lives Talisman's small island first. If I'm not mistaken, you still have to trade that Blood God Crystal with him, right?" Venerable White said with a smile.

Song Shuhang hanged his head down in dejection and said, "Senior White, I'm still in Senior Phoenix Slayer's body, and the Blood God Crystal is with my original body."

Venerable White faintly smiled and said, "Don't worry. I'll help you carry your body over here."

Next, Venerable White pointed at the sky.

A disposable flying sword 005 edition streaked across the horizon and rushed over while carrying a van. It was precisely the vehicle in which Song Shuhang's body, Sima Jiang, and the wooden box were lying.

In the van, the two disciples of the Chu Family had pale faces and their snot was about to come out.

They were just looking after Song Shuhang and Sima Jiang like Young Master Phoenix Slayer told them... but then, the express delivery vehicle started flying and flew to this place faster than an airplane.

In the end, the disposable flying sword stopped above Venerable White's hand-guided tractor.

"Get on the tractor. Once we reach the island, you'll be able to see your friends as well." Venerable White still remembered that Song Shuhang went on that vacation trip together with his friends.

In the end, they entered the mysterious island by mistake and his friends ended up on Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman's island for unknown reasons.

"Indeed." Song Shuhang sighed and sat next to Venerable White.

Venerable White started the tractor and rushed forward while riding the wind and cleaving through the waves.

The sea breeze blew over, and Venerable White long, pitch-black hair fluttered in the wind. At this time, his body was rhythmically shaking along with the tractor; it seemed he was having a lot of fun~

"How did you find the competition? Was it interesting?" Venerable White suddenly asked.

"Eh?" Song Shuhang blinked his eyes and said, "Yeah, I think that it was rather interesting."

He indeed found it interesting, especially when he drove the hand-guided tractor on the surface of the sea and rushed forward at high speed... Song Shuhang really enjoyed that moment!

"However... I feel that it would be even more interesting if there was no race track on the surface of the sea and one could freely dash about through the vast sea with the hand-guided tractor," Song Shuhang suggested.

Although creating a race track on the sea and hiding traps within surely made the competition more exciting... racing on the surface of the vast sea without anything holding you back would make a heroic feeling well up in one's heart, just as though they were being freed.

"Hmm, this seems interesting as well." Venerable White held his chin and said, "In the next session of the hand-guided tractor competition, we can make it so that there is no fixed road. Only the finish line would be set, and the contestants would be free to choose the road they wish to reach it."

"However, I want to participate as a contestant in the next hand-guided tractor competition. Although I had fun this time, I wasn't able to entertain myself enough," Venerable White said.

Chapter 456: Experiencing the rewarding formation

Song Shuhang asked in puzzlement, "Senior White, how come you weren't able to entertain yourself enough?"

"Because I wasn't able to enjoy the competition to my heart's content! After all, I personally arranged the race track and the traps... hence I couldn't participate in the competition as it wouldn't be fair otherwise. Therefore, I could only follow alongside everyone else to satisfy my craving. But I would have really liked to compare my speed with the other contestants and rumble on the race track at high speed, it would have been so exciting!" Venerable White said regretfully.

Right, Venerable White organized the hand-guided tractor competition precisely because he liked the idea of competing with hand-guided tractors.

But later, he ended up becoming the referee that would closely follow behind the contestants and was unable to enter the competition as a participant himself. With that, he wasn't able to enjoy himself to his heart's content.

"Ahahaha." Song Shuhang bitterly smiled.

While he was conversing with Venerable White, he thought several times of asking him about the one-month space trip and beg him to reduce the duration of the trip to half a month and so on...

But whenever he was on the verge of saying something, he would be unable to speak up.

First, he was a bit shy... second, he was still delusionally thinking that Venerable White might be kidding about the whole one-month trip in space and that he wasn't truly serious about it...



"Get ready, we're about to enter the final section of the hand-guided tractor competition," Venerable White said as he stretched out his hand, pointing toward the sky.

In the sky, the door of the van of the Chu Family automatically opened. Afterward, Venerable White used his spiritual energy to prop up Song Shuhang's body, placing it in the open container attached to the rear of the hand-guided tractor.

As for the van, it flew high up in the sky propped up by the disposable flying sword, flying toward Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman's small island ahead of time.

"The final section? Oh, the place where you arranged the huge runic formation together with Senior Seven Lives Talisman? Senior White, what kind of fearsome formation did you arrange?" Song Shuhang asked somewhat worried.

"Fearsome formation? Why?" Venerable White asked out of curiosity. "The formation arranged on the final section isn't a trap, it's a reward!"

"Eh? A reward?" Song Shuhang said in surprise.

"Of course! Traps and so on were placed on the race track to make it more exciting. But which competition would put traps right at the finish line? That would be quite cruel!" Venerable White replied.

What Venerable White said was reasonable, Song Shuhang was unable to refute it.

Venerable White also added, "To prepare the last formation, I spent a lot of resources and asked Fellow Daoist Spirit Butterfly and Fellow Daoist Seven Lives Talisman to help me arrange it. Each fellow daoist that manages to cross the finish line and enters the formation will be 'baptized' by its power. The power of the runes would permanently strengthen their bodies, as well as the true qi and spiritual energy within their bodies. You just advanced

to the Second Stage Realm, and if you received the baptism of the formation, you would be able to thoroughly consolidate your realm and obtain several benefits."

Song Shuhang was now clear about the situation. In short, it was a formation that would permanently increase his stats if he were to pass through it. The values of his constitution, true qi, or spiritual energy, would increase by 1 point. If his luck was good, perhaps even his strength and agility would increase by 1 point?

Although only the first five could follow Venerable White to explore the ancient ruins... it was improper to make all the other participants that had come from afar to participate return home empty-handed. Therefore, Venerable White, Venerable Spirit Butterfly, and Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman joined their forces and arranged this huge formation as a consolation prize.

At this time, Venerable White also added, "Right, do you still have those three 'Aging Crystal Roots'?"

The Aging Crystal Roots?

When Venerable White and Venerable Spirit Butterfly were arranging the race track earlier, Song Shuhang was struck by lightning. Afterward, Venerable White found ten crystal-like plants beneath the feet of the charred black Song Shuhang.

Since Venerable White decided to share it with the spectators, and adding the fact that he had been struck by lightning too, Song Shuhang managed to obtain three Aging Crystal Roots. If a cultivator of the Second Stage were to eat one of these things, they would receive a boost comparable to practicing for three years.

Song Shuhang was planning to wait until his realm had been consolidated and use Aging Crystal Root while trying to break through the second small realm within the Second Stage, the Dragon Tail Dantian.

"I put them in the 'size-reducing purse' on my body," Song

Shuhang replied.

"Take them out and feed them to your body. If you borrow the body tempering effects of the formation, you can assimilate the strength of the Aging Crystal Root as well. The two will complement each other, and the results wouldn't be as simple as an addition, but much better," Venerable White said.

"I see, I'll go feed them to my body." Song Shuhang crawled toward the open container behind and looked for the size-reducing purse on his body, taking the Aging Crystal Root out.

"Eh?" After taking out the three Aging Crystal Roots, Song Shuhang was somewhat confused.

He remembered that when Venerable White decided to share the treasure with the onlookers, giving him a share as well, each Aging Crystal Root had the size of an index finger...

But now... the Aging Crystal Root before his eyes had swelled and reached the size of an apple?

Song Shuhang controlled Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body and brought the Aging Crystal Root toward the driver seat, saying, "Senior White, the Aging Crystal Root underwent a mutation! Its volume increased by a lot!"

Venerable White shot a glance and laughed. "Don't worry, it's very normal. The volume of the Aging Crystal Root will quickly increase after it leaves the soil. At the maximum size, they can become as big as watermelons."

Afterward, Senior White left the driver seat and crawled into the open container in the back. He took the three Aging Crystal Roots in his hands and opened the mouth of Song Shuhang's unconscious body.

Song Shuhang, who was currently in Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body, was a bit confused.

Then, he saw Venerable White grab one of the Aging Crystal

Roots and stuff it in the mouth of his unconscious body.

The whole apple-sized object was stuffed into Song Shuhang's mouth!

Song Shuhang didn't expect that such a big thing could fit in his mouth.

Next, Venerable White stretched his hand out and pressed on Song Shuhang's mouth with his palm.

"Gulp~" The apple-sized thing forcefully entered Song Shuhang's throat and slid into his belly.

Song Shuhang saw through Young Master Phoenix Slayer's eyes the throat of his original body swell due to the huge Aging Crystal Root stuffed into it.

After seeing the scene, he felt his throat was a bit sore.

I won't choke, right? After all, such a big thing was forcefully stuffed into his mouth, wouldn't it choke him to death...?

Song Shuhang used Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body to ask weakly, "Senior White, isn't it better to cut the Aging Crystal Root into pieces before eating it?"

Venerable White replied, "The effects would be much weaker that way. The best method is to swallow it whole."

Therefore... if this thing were to reach its maximum size—that of a watermelon—would I still have to swallow it whole? Even if it were Doudou assuming his five meters long form, wouldn't he still choke if he were to try to gobble down a watermelon-sized thing whole?

In the meantime, Venerable White took the other two Aging Crystal Roots and forcefully stuffed them into Song Shuhang's mouth and pressed them down with his palm, making them slid into his stomach.

"Done... now keep an eye on your body. We'll enter the space of

the formation soon," Venerable White said as he clapped his hands, satisfied.

Then, he got out of the open container and returned to the driver seat, taking control of the hand-guided tractor once again and rumbling forward.

...Yep, they had been in mortal danger just now. Venerable White didn't bother stopping the hand-guided tractor when he decided to leave his seat to feed Song Shuhang those crystal-like roots.

Just now, no one was driving the hand-guided tractor... Song Shuhang felt fear just thinking about it.

After a little while.

Song Shuhang controlled Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body and stretched out his hand, placing it next to the nose of his original body... Phew, I'm still breathing. I wasn't choked to death by those three Aging Crystal Roots...

But wouldn't my stomach explode after getting filled with three of those apple-sized roots...?

Actually, Song Shuhang was worrying for nothing. After sliding into one's belly, the Aging Crystal Root would turn into liquid, starting to strengthen the cultivation level of the person that ate it.

Magical medicines were magical precisely because they defied science and logic.



At this time, the majestic hand-guided tractor competition was about to come to an end.

As before, True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon was still in the lead.

There was no way for others to compete with him; the advantage he had in this place was too big. The sea was his domain, and he had no shame, either. He would often use his innate powers to

create huge waves to slow down the other contestants.

If he were unable to maintain his first position even under these circumstances, True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon might as well leave the sea forever and settle on the land.

Behind him was True Monarch Fallout who was still maintaining his second place, following closely behind.

Great Master Profound Principle had silently taken the third place. Along the way, he didn't speak, didn't grab the limelight, didn't get into fights with others, and didn't use underhanded tricks.

He kept a steady pace during the whole competition and ended up in the third place.

Cave Lord Snow Wolf, who had originally been third, thought of overtaking True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon before reaching the finish line. He was planning to launch a storm toward the latter while overtaking him and freezing his hand-guided tractor. However, not only did his plot fail, his own hand-guided tractor was almost overturned by the small single-person wave True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon sent toward him.

Although he tried his best to keep competing, he had to settle for the fourth place in the end.

In the fifth place was the calm-looking Northern River's Loose Cultivator. However, he intentionally slowed down his speed before reaching the finish line.

He wasn't interested in fighting for the first five places since he was planning to break through to the Sixth Stage during the next month.

A month later, he would have to fight against Immortal Master Copper Trigram on the summit of the forbidden city; hence, he had to gain enlightenment and advance to the Sixth Stage within this period of time! Since the time to advance in realm was quickly

approaching, Northern River's Loose Cultivator decided to leave the opportunity to explore the ancient ruins to another fellow daoist.

And the person behind Northern River's Loose Cultivator happened to be Soft Feather.

If nothing unexpected happened, Soft Feather should be able to overtake Northern River's Loose Cultivator before the finish line now that he had slowed down his speed, placing fifth.

❄ ❄ ❄

"Whizz, whizz, whizz~"

True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon was the first one to cross the finish line.

In the next moment, 10,000 talismans appeared in the sky, forming a huge formation right at the finish line.

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman's complexion was a bit pale, but he was still quite excited. He rode his flying sword and soared into the sky, hovering above the huge formation and starting to manage it.

Chapter 457: Lie down and don't move, let's break through first!

Although managing the huge formation consumed a lot of his energy, it was still quite a good opportunity for Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman.

Venerable White's knowledge in regards to runes was extremely high, and while he was controlling the huge formation, Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman was able to experience first-hand the way Venerable White manufactured the talismans.

While controlling the formation, he became aware of many things, which were going to be really helpful to him when he would advance in realm.

Today, he had almost completed that oath about teaching the natives how to write and read.

Next, he only had to wait for the hand-guided tractor competition to finish and carry out the transaction with little friend Song Shuhang for his Blood God Crystal. After that, he could finally get ready to break through the Fifth Stage Realm.

At the time, he should be able to condense a Golden Core with at least seven dragon patterns!

If one had a Golden Core with seven dragon patterns, they had a 90% assurance of advancing to the Sixth Stage True Monarch Realm. As long as they didn't die halfway or receive a severe injury that crippled their foundation, they also had an opportunity to advance to the Seventh Stage Venerable Realm.

Moreover, if one wanted to have the possibility of reaching the Eighth Stage Profound Stage and show their divinity in front of the masses, they could do so only if they had a Golden Core with seven or more dragon patterns.

First Stage Mortality Transcender, Second Stage True Master,

Third Stage Battle King, Fourth Stage Innate, Fifth Stage Golden Core Spiritual Emperor, Sixth Stage Spiritual Monarch (or True Monarch), Seventh Stage Spiritual Venerable (or just Venerable), Eighth Stage Profound Sage (or Sage Monarch), and Ninth Stage Tribulation Transcender.

One had to proceed one step at a time on the road of cultivation.

After taking each step, they would have to prepare for the next realms and lay down a good foundation.

Only if one had built a solid foundation during the previous four stages would they be able to condense a Golden Core with numerous dragon patterns after advancing to the Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor Realm. The number of dragon patterns represented the potential of a cultivator and how far they could walk on the road of cultivation!

"Laying down a good foundation is really a lengthy process," Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman said.

And today, he finally managed to build a good foundation for himself!

"Formation, start!" Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman made a seal with his hands and clapped his palms together.

The huge formation made of 10,000 talismans ultimately changed into a huge gate of stone. As soon as the projection of the huge gate appeared, it gave all the onlookers an 'ancient' feeling.

Strangely enough, when the cultivators on the scene tried to engrave in their minds the appearance of the gate, they were unable to do so.

Even using techniques or phones to take pictures and drawing it was useless.

When they used techniques or phones to take pictures, they were only able to capture an indistinct and illusory 'gate'.

And when the cultivators picked up their brushes and tried to draw it, they felt as though the gate was everchanging and were thus unable to draw it.

Truly marvelous! When the contestants reached the finishing line of the hand-guided tractor competition, Fellow Daoist Seven Lives Talisman made his move and activated this huge formation made of 10,000 talismans. Afterward, the huge formation changed into a mysterious stone gate. What is the origin of this gate? Is it the final trap? Or is it a pleasant surprise? The voice of the announcer Jiang Shan echoed.

Even the eight-trigram information collecting formation of the Daily Cultivator was unable to record the appearance of the gate.

Therefore, all the cultivators watching the scene from home through their TV-like magical treasures were unable to see the appearance of the stone gate clearly. They could only see an indistinct gray-colored gate.

Jiang Shan's intuition told him that the gate was going to be a pleasant surprise.



Just as Jiang Shan's voice faded, True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon, who was in the lead, passed through the stone gate.

In the next moment, a layer of light descended from the stone gate and fell on True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon's body.

At first, True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon slightly furrowed his brows. Next, a surprised look appeared on his face. Back in the days, when he was practicing an ancient cultivation technique, he made a small mistake and a minor defect was left behind in this cultivation. The defect wasn't serious, but Tyrant Flood Dragon never managed to get rid of it completely. According to his estimations, only after advancing to the Seventh Stage Venerable would he be able to eliminate it completely.

But when the light of the stone gate fell upon him, the small defect in his body disappeared. Moreover, he even felt his constitution strengthen a bit.

Is this a special reward for the winner? True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon thought to himself.

Soon after, he turned his head around and saw that True Monarch Fallout, Great Master Profound Principle, and Cave Lord Snow Wolf, who were following closely behind, were also shrouded in the layer of light.

From the looks of it, the reward wasn't exclusive to the winner?

Fellow Daoist White was really generous this time! True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon thought to himself.

To arrange this formation made of 10,000 talismans, he must have spent a number of natural treasures that goes far beyond the imagination of ordinary cultivators...

...Moreover, only a special existence like Fellow Daoist White is capable of spending so many natural treasures to arrange such a huge formation for something as trivial as the 'hand-guided tractor competition'...

Now then, how many people can gain benefits from this stone gate?

Just as he was in deep thoughts, Soft Feather overtook Northern River's Loose Cultivator and crossed the finish line.

A layer of light fell on her body.

"Eeeeh? Incredible!" Soft Feather shook her small fists and said, "As soon as the light fell on my body, my cultivation increased by a small realm! There is still one last small realm left before I'll be able to break through the Fourth Stage Innate Realm! At the time, I'll finally be able to ride a flying sword, hehehe!"

After that temporary moment of delight, Soft Feather turned

toward Northern River's Loose Cultivator and waved her hand at him, saying, "Senior Northern River, thank you~"

She was well aware that Northern River's Loose Cultivator slowed down toward the end on purpose, allowing her to get fifth place.

Northern River Loose Cultivator faintly smiled and likewise enjoyed the effects of the layer of light.



Soon after, Dharma King Creation, Daoist Priest Southern Lake, and Sun Splitting Halberd Guo Da also crossed the finish line.

The stone gate generously released another layer of light that fell on the bodies of all those that crossed it.

Soon after, Thrice Reckless Mad Saber also crossed the finish line while crying strangely.

At this time, only the front part and the driver seat of his hand-guided tractor were left intact... behind him was the calm-looking Scholar Drunken XXX.

Scholar Drunken Moon operated his fearsome drill and thrust into the baboon version Thrice Reckless, crossing the finish line alongside him.

Then, two layers of light likewise fell on the Scholar and Thrice Reckless~

"From the looks of it, there is a share for each person!" True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon sighed with emotion... Answering Fellow Daoist White's call and traveling for thousands of miles to participate in the competition was totally worth it!



As the contestants crossed the finish line, they all received the baptism of the stone gate.

Finally, Venerable White's hand-guided tractor also rumbled

through the finishing line.

Three layers of light descended from the sky.

The layer of light that covered Venerable White's body only flashed past him... it seemed that such a level of body tempering had no effect on him? Or perhaps his body didn't need any tempering anymore?

Song Shuhang controlled Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body and accepted the baptism of the layer of light. Afterward, he felt his body become lighter; his strength slightly increased as well. But since it wasn't his own body, he couldn't feel it too clearly.

As for Song Shuhang's own body, it exploded with a dazzling seven-colored crystal-like radiance as soon as the layer of light shone upon it.

"Eh? What's happening? How come the light shooting out of my body is several thousand watts stronger?" Song Shuhang asked.

After he had thought up to this point... Song Shuhang felt a powerful attraction transmit from his original body that made him leave Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body, pulling his consciousness back.

The world before his eyes went black.

When he regained consciousness, he was back inside his body.

I'm back in my body?

There is no three seconds delay...

And I don't need to fear to suddenly find a breast wrapping cloth around my chest...

It's truly great!

It feels good to be back!

Song Shuhang felt like someone that had been forced out of home and who had returned only after several years. It was truly a warm

feeling.

However, this beautiful, heart-warming feeling lasted only for about two seconds before Song Shuhang's body fiercely trembled.

An ultra-cold feeling transmitted from the depths of his souls to his body.

The source of this feeling were the shared senses of the ghost spirit!

Song Shuhang tried to feel his chest, but there was no reaction from the ghost spirit.

The ghost spirit wasn't in his body? Where was it, then?

Moreover, why was he continuously feeling a cold feeling being transmitted from the ghost spirit? Did it run to the North Pole or something?

Therefore, Song Shuhang decided to use the 'senses sharing' feature to locate the position of the ghost spirit.

The ghost spirit had signed a contract with Song Shuhang, and the two had already synchronized their senses. At this time, the two of them were like one entity and could induce each other's presence even if they were on the other side of the globe.

But just as he was preparing to induce the ghost spirit, Song Shuhang felt a hand press on his forehead.

"Don't move, you're about to advance by a small realm." Venerable White's voice echoed.

In the next moment, Song Shuhang felt the true qi in his dantian churn.

The three Aging Crystal Roots filled Song Shuhang's dantian with an amount of true qi comparable to the one he would have gathered after practicing for whole nine years.

And when the layer of light released by the illusory stone gate fell on his body, it aroused the medicinal strength of the three Aging

Crystal Roots. The two complemented each other and the resulting effects were much better than a simple 1+1 addition.

Earlier, Song Shuhang's body emitted that seven-colored crystal-like radiance precisely because the power of the Aging Crystal Root burst forth.

"I'm about to break through?" Song Shuhang asked in puzzlement. "Senior White, isn't that a little too fast?"

After all, he broke through from the First Stage to the Second Stage True Master Realm just recently.

And now, he was already breaking through the second small realm of the Second Stage? Wasn't this speed a little too fast—wouldn't it cause his foundation to turn unstable?

If there was a meal, one would have to eat it bite after bite. If there was a road, one would have to take one step at a time. If one were to eat too fast, they might choke on the food. If one were to walk too fast, they might trip and fall.

"If it were before, I wouldn't have recommended you to break through... but now, you don't need to worry," Venerable White said with a faint smile.

If one were to advance in realm too quickly, their foundation might turn out to be unstable. But what was the reason behind it?

Actually, there were many such reasons.

For example, cultivators might lack the complete understanding of their own cultivation techniques if they advanced in realm too quickly, causing the hardware and the software to be out of sync.

For example, their willpower might not be able to keep up with their realm, producing an Inner Demon.

For example, if they lacked in quantity of mental energy or experience, they might have difficulties controlling their power that had sharply risen.

But Song Shuhang didn't have to worry about any of them for the time being... after all, he obtained a lot of experience points while in Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body.

By relying on the good fortune Phoenix Slayer brought him, Song Shuhang had managed to reach the 'master level' in all his cultivation techniques.

Song Shuhang's originally not bad mental energy, which had perhaps increased due to the arduous experiences in the various dreamlands, had now far exceeded his realm.

As for his will... our little friend Song Shuhang once lived as a green onion for several hundred years. After the boring and dull experience of being a green onion, our little friend's will had been thoroughly tempered.

Chapter 458: With the walkthrough in hand, I'm the absolute king of the world!

...His will was very firm, his mental energy very strong, and all the cultivation techniques he knew had reached the 'master level'. Therefore, our little friend Song Shuhang didn't need to worry about his foundation being unstable due to advancing in realm too quickly.

At this time, he had to immediately seize all the opportunities he had and break through.

Opportunities like this were rare, and it was better not to miss them if possible.

"Unfortunately, your <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique> isn't complete yet, and the 'pseudo-innate true qi' has yet to take form... otherwise, the effects would have been even better. On the other hand, we should be able to obtain the full version of the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique> pretty soon given the time." Venerable White laughed.

"Such being the case, I'll start the breakthrough process!" Song Shuhang quietly closed his eyes and got ready to break through the second small realm of the Second Stage, the Dragon Tail Dantian.

From what Song Shuhang knew, whenever a cultivator of the True Master rank wanted to break through a small realm, they had to nourish and accumulate the true qi in their dantian.

After the quantity of true qi in their dantian was enough, they would send it upward along with the cultivator's backbone, opening the second dantian... the rest was analogous. From the Dragon Tail Dantian, the true qi would go upward until breaking through the third dantian and so on... until reaching the eighth dantian, the Dragon Horn Dantian.

In other words, what I have to do now is to control the true qi in

my dantian and make it go upward, opening the second dantian, correct?

In short, I just have to go higher and higher.

Just as Song Shuhang was thinking this much, he started to warm up the nine years' worth of quantity of true qi in his dantian. After all, all this true qi was produced by the power of a medicine. Unless properly processed, it would be hard to control it.



Under the joint effects of the Aging Crystal Root and the runic formation, Song Shuhang felt his dantian swell up, reaching the critical point where it was possible to start the breakthrough process.

I'm almost there, Song Shuhang thought to himself.

Then, he controlled the swelling true qi in his dantian and moved it upwards, making it clash against the second dantian, the Dragon Tail Dantian.

He wanted to go all out and open the Dragon Tail Dantian in one go!



Nowadays, the term 'walkthrough' was often used to refer to detailed guides about how to clear a video game or about other steps and skills. For example, many such guides were created for singleplayer offline games or dating simulation games.

Just as Song Shuhang was preparing to break through the Dragon Tail Dantian in one go, a voice suddenly echoed in his mind. "Idiot, quickly stop! If you keep forcing it, you will waste a huge amount of true qi for nothing! Your method to open the Dragon Tail Dantian is too primitive, you would end up failing!"

Since the voice was directly transmitted in his mind, Song Shuhang was unable to tell to whom it belonged. Whenever a

person directly 'talked' in someone else's mind, their voice and manner of speaking could be freely changed according to their wishes.

"..." Song Shuhang.

Who is talking to me? Is it Senior White?

No, given Senior White's temperament, he wouldn't shout like this. Moreover, he wouldn't call others 'idiots'.

Is it possible that it's one of the nearby seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group?

Since Song Shuhang and Venerable White had already crossed the finish line, there were several other seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group in the surrounding area.

Perhaps one of them saw that he was trying to break through to the second dantian, and since he was doing it incorrectly, they decided to give him a hand?

Regardless of the identity of the senior trying to help him, they were doing it for his own good.

Therefore, Song Shuhang immediately stopped the true qi inside his body.

"Senior, how should I break through to the Dragon Tail Dantian in this case?" Song Shuhang asked in his mind.

"Cough, listen well. There are four 'checkpoints' between the Sea of Qi Dantian and the Dragon Tail Dantian, and each of them is more difficult to break through than the previous one. Moreover, there is a certain relationship between the Sea of Qi Dantian and the Dragon Tail Dantian that you might be unaware of. If you control your true qi and clash against the first checkpoint, breaking through it, only a small part of the original amount of true qi will keep advancing and clash against the second checkpoint. Most of it will disperse along the road between the first and second checkpoint."

In other words, if Song Shuhang were to gather all this true qi and send it upward to open the first checkpoint, even if there was a lot of true qi left after opening the checkpoint, most of it would disperse before reaching the second checkpoint.

Moreover, even if he were to break through the second checkpoint, another part of the true qi would be wasted along the road between the second and third checkpoint...

Such being the case, where would he find the true qi to open the third and fourth checkpoints?

At the time, his attempt to advance in realm would end up in failure.



However, even if one were to fail to open the small checkpoints of the Second Stage, it wouldn't have too much of an effect.

A lot of patience and time was required to break through each small realm of the Second Stage.

Under normal circumstances, if a Second Stage True Master didn't eat medicinal pills or had fortuitous encounters, they would need from 10 to 20 years to nourish the true qi inside their Sea of Qi Dantian and reach the critical point where it was possible to start the breakthrough process.

In Chu Chu's dreamland, Song Shuhang saw that even someone with an outstanding talent like her, with enough medicinal pills at disposal, had to cultivate for whole five years to reach the critical point needed to start the breakthrough process.

It was different from the First Stage where one's realm would drop if they failed to break through.

If a cultivator failed to break through the four checkpoints of the Dragon Tail Dantian at once, they could try to break through by stages.

After ten or so years of accumulation, they would break through one checkpoint.

Then, after a few months passed to nourish the meridians, they could use the newly accumulated strength to break through another checkpoint.

One only needed time to open the four checkpoints... but the problem was precisely this waste of time. If one were to break through by stages, they would need around a year to do something they could otherwise do in an instant.



"Shuhang, your dantian benefitted from the Qi Storage Expanding Technique, right? The amount of true qi inside your Sea of Qi Dantian should be much higher than that of an ordinary cultivator of the Second Stage. Therefore, you should divide your true qi into four parts with the following percentages of true qi inside: 10%, 20%, 30%, and 40%. These quantities will be more than enough to break through the various checkpoints!

Try to use your true qi like I told you while trying to break through the checkpoints. That way, you can avoid wasting true qi, and you'll have a very high chance to break through all the checkpoints!

Right, I remember that there is another small trick you can use while breaking through the Dragon Tail Dantian. After breaking through the second checkpoint, you can take a break for around one minute. During this time, if you feel that the quantity of true qi isn't enough, you can eat a medicinal pill to recover it. But remember, you have only one minute of time to do so.

Come, do as I say. First, gather 10% of your true qi and remember well how to operate it. Give it a try."

The mysterious senior literally walked Song Shuhang through the breaking through process.

With the walkthrough in hand, I'm the absolute king of the world!

The dantian were Shuhang's true qi is currently located aka dantian number 1.

Chapter 459: A dao name must consist of four words!

Song Shuhang followed the instructions of this 'kind-hearted' senior and gathered 10% of his true qi, sending it upward!

If one were to describe the process with a sentence, it would be: 'cutting like a hot knife through butter'!

Thanks to Venerable White's Qi Storage Expanding Technique, the quantity of true qi in Song Shuhang's Sea of Qi Dantian was almost 50% higher than that of an ordinary cultivator of the same rank.

If we add the fact that his mental energy was very strong, when he controlled and operated the true qi, there was hardly any extra consumption.

10% of his true qi easily smashed open the first checkpoint of the Dragon Tail Dantian.

Moreover, there was still a lot of extra true qi left afterward...

"Very well, just like this. Keep going and gather 20% of your true qi now. Then, send it upward and smash open the second checkpoint too!" the senior said excitedly.

It seemed that this senior was extremely excited that Song Shuhang was breaking through under his guidance...

"Got it!" Song Shuhang said as he gathered 20% of his true qi, sending it upward.

The second checkpoint was also smashed open, and there was still a lot of true qi left that slowly dispersed afterward.

"That's the feeling, magnificent! You have one minute of time, do you want to take a medicinal pill?" the mysterious senior asked.

"There is no need. I feel that my current situation is pretty good,"

Song Shuhang replied.

Song Shuhang felt the remaining strength of the Aging Crystal Root he ate earlier resonate with the power of the runic formation, supplementing the true qi he consumed just now.

Just now, he used 30% of his true qi to break through the two checkpoints, but in the blink of an eye, he had already recovered 10% of it.

He felt that his current state was absolutely awesome!

"Then, don't rest and keep going. Gather 30% of your true qi and try to smash open the third checkpoint!" the mysterious senior shouted.

Song Shuhang didn't waste time and did as he was told.

After several breaths, the third checkpoint was also opened!

He felt as though he was a wild bull with enhanced endurance and strength crashing against a half a meter tall wall made of unbaked bricks. It was just too easy!

"Yeah, that's it. Now the final checkpoint... gather all the true qi you have left and launch your attack! Youngster, you'll become a cultivator of the Second Stage Dragon Tail Dantian Realm after opening this last checkpoint!" the mysterious senior had the innate ability to boost the morale of the troops by 3 points.

With him by his side, Song Shuhang was full of fighting spirit and vigor.

Thereupon, Song Shuhang gathered the remaining 40% of his true qi and added to it the other 15% he recovered just now, sending it toward the last checkpoint.

"Boom~"

Song Shuhang felt his whole body shake and the back of his waist ache. The node of true qi at the end of his spinal column had been smashed open.

A huge amount of true qi poured inside the node of true qi, opening it up. This node was precisely the Dragon Tail Dantian!

While he had his eyes closed and was breaking through, Song Shuhang was surrounded by the seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group that were staring at him.

Northern River's Loose Cultivator said, "Is little friend Song Shuhang breaking through?"

"Yes." Venerable White nodded.

"F*ck, he's breaking through for real!" Northern River's Loose Cultivator said. "Senior White, didn't he advance in realm just now? We saw him reach the Second Stage while fighting on the Grievance Settling Platform. He's breaking through again after such a short amount of time?"

"Earlier, when Fellow Daoist Spirit Butterfly and I were preparing the race track, I got lucky and managed to get my hands on a few Aging Crystal Roots. I decided to share them with those present at the scene, and Shuhang got three of them. With the joint effects of the Aging Crystal Roots and the runic formation, Shuhang reached a state where it was possible for him to advance by a small realm again. Therefore, I told him to seize the opportunity and try to break through," Venerable White replied.

Northern River's Loose Cultivator looked at the sky and sighed.

Northern River recalled the bitter events from the past when he just stepped on the road of cultivation.

Life, huh... was this the difference between someone else's life and one's own?

Dharma King Creation moved closer and asked, "Old Northern River, how long did it take you to advance to the Second Stage back in those days?"

"Eight years. I was a loose cultivator at the time, and I had to spend several years just to get hold of the body tempering liquid. That alone consumed most of my money. Afterward, I had many fortuitous encounters and became friends with Su Clan's Seven who was venturing outside... but it still took me full eight years to advance from the First to the Second Stage," Northern River's Loose Cultivator said after recalling those past events.

"Then, how long did it take you to advance a small realm within the Second Stage?" Dharma King Creation asked.

"More than two years. At the time, I had to work for more than a year in the 'Lotus Temple' to obtain the medicinal pills I needed." Northern River's Loose Cultivator felt that his eyes had started to tear up.

The life of loose cultivators was really difficult! They didn't have the support of a school or a sect and no one showed them love. Their life was sad and bitter, and if they needed money to buy herbs, they would need to form groups and work for sects.

"Almost the same as me. It took me two years and a half," Dharma King Creation said. Although he was the important disciple of a famous sect, his cultivation technique was the *Warring Buddha's True Body* which made it difficult for him to advance in realm quickly.

"You two are still better off than me, it took me whole three years. Monster cultivators are at too much of a disadvantage in the early stages. Before gaining the ability to change shape, they have to put in twice the effort for half the result," Cave Lord Snow Wolf lamented.

The numerous seniors looked at Song Shuhang's body which was still emitting that seven-colored crystal-like radiance and sighed one after another.

This bastard managed to advance from the First to the Second Stage in less than two months. Moreover, it took him only one day

to break through to the second small realm of the Second Stage!

Perhaps Venerable White wasn't the only one with a heaven-destroying luck—little friend Song Shuhang seemed to have a heaven-defying luck as well...?



The first session of the hand-guided tractor competition finally came to an end.

When Song Shuhang finished breaking through and opened his eyes, the seniors were attending the award ceremony.

Venerable Spirit Butterfly and Venerable Tornado monopolized the award platform.

Venerable White paid out of his own pocket to arrange that huge formation made of 10,000 talismans.

Therefore, Venerable Spirit Butterfly and Venerable Tornado decided to take care of the medals for the first three contestants.

In competitions held by mortals, medals would be made of gold, silver, and bronze.

But these medals were made by two Venerables. Hence, they couldn't be ordinary.

The medal for the first place was made of precious 'adamantine'. This refining material alone was worth several thousand spirit stones of the Sixth Stage.

Venerable Spirit Butterfly engraved some runes inside the medal as well. In times of need, the medal could display a single-use sword technique, the 'Butterfly-Phoenix Transformation'. It was an attack of the Venerable rank, and its power was enormous.

If True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon didn't need the medal, he could hand it over to his children so that they could use it if they were in danger. After all, he had a lot of them.

The silver and bronze medals were manufactured by Venerable

Tornado, and the refining materials used were also very valuable.

Inside these two medals was likewise sealed a technique of Venerable Tornado's choice. Its power was also of the Venerable rank.

First place: True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon.

Second place: True Monarch Fallout.

Third Place: Great Master Profound Principle.

Fourth Place: Cave Lord Snow Wolf.

The fifth place originally belonged to Northern River's Loose Cultivator, but he slowed down and voluntarily allowed Soft Feather to take his place.

"I just noticed that aside from Soft Feather, the dao names of the seniors that placed amongst the first five are all composed of four words." Song Shuhang felt as though he had suddenly realized something.

Chapter 460: Those are not four-word dao names!

Even though Soft Feather placed fifth, it was only because Northern River's Loose Cultivator allowed her to overtake him. The one that should have originally placed fifth was Northern River himself. Such being the case, the dao names of the seniors that placed amongst the first five in this hand-guided tractor competition were all composed of four words!

"Such being the case, I should take a four-word dao name as well!" Song Shuhang said.

On the other hand, it was really time for him to get a dao name. After all, he couldn't keep calling himself 'Stressed by a Mountain of Books'.

He was already a cultivator of the Second Stage and had officially stepped into the world of cultivators.

With his cultivation slowly rising, he was bound to meet other seniors or fellow daoists.

At the time, when the opposite party saw him, they would warmly greet him like this, "Hello, Fellow Daoist. I'm Scholar XXX, may I ask your name?"

"Haha, so it was Scholar XXX. I've heard so much of you, it's really a pleasure to meet you. As for my name... you can just call me Stressed by a Mountain of Books."

"So it was Fellow Daoist Stressed by a Mountain of Books, it's a pleasure to meet you~"

Just by visualizing this scene in his mind, Song Shuhang felt that there was something quite wrong with it.

It was time to officially take a dao name!



But how can I obtain a dao name...?

If he were a disciple of a sect, one of the elders or his teacher might give him one.

For example, Fairy Lychee and the other disciples of her master all had dao names related to fruits.

But how did loose cultivators get their dao names?

Would he have to choose it himself?

"If I have to choose a dao name myself... well, something like Daoist Priest Godly Sword sounds pretty good, doesn't it? Or perhaps I should follow Senior Northern River's example and use something like 'Loose Cultivator Scholarly Sword'? This sounds pretty good as well!" Song Shuhang held his chin and pondered.

Loose Cultivator Scholarly Sword, Daoist Priest Scholarly Sword, Scholar Scholarly Sword, and so on all sounded pretty good. In the future, if he were to obtain great results and advance in realm, his dao name would change into True Monarch Scholarly Sword, Venerable Scholarly Sword and so on, very fitting.

But returning to the main topic... he felt that it was a bit strange to choose a dao name on his own.

A dao name wasn't like one's online username.

It was something that would affect his whole life... therefore, was it better to use something a little more serious?

Otherwise, he might ask one of the seniors in the group to give him a dao name?

However, he was a little afraid to ask the seniors to give him a dao name...

"What if the seniors were to give me a dao name like 'Daoist Priest Eggplant' or something of the sort...?" Song Shuhang muttered to himself.



On the award platform, Venerable White, Venerable Spirit Butterfly, and Venerable Tornado rewarded the first three contestants.

After giving the reward to True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon, Venerable White arrived next to Song Shuhang.

After seeing that Song Shuhang was awake, Venerable White smiled and said, "Did you finish breaking through?"

"Yes! Thanks to a senior guiding me step by step, I was able to successfully break through." Song Shuhang smiled and pointed at the back of his waist. "It feels rather weird around here after opening the Dragon Tail Dantian."

After opening the Dragon Tail Dantian, he felt as though he had many small tails at his back.

It wasn't just Song Shuhang misconception... after opening the Dragon Tail Dantian, one could release true qi directly from the tail section. That was why Song Shuhang felt as though he had many small tails attached to his back.

Of course... this tail of true qi was only a fleeting thing.

Perhaps a particular type of cultivation technique might allow this tail of true qi to become something permanent... but no cultivator would be so bored to develop such a useless cultivation technique.

Aside from that, the quality and quantity of Song Shuhang's true qi doubled after opening the Dragon Tail Dantian.

His combat strength also doubled.

"A senior was guiding you?" Venerable White was confused.

Song Shuhang replied, "Yes! While I was trying to break through, a senior directly spoke in my mind and taught me the correct method to smash open the Dragon Tail Dantian. With that, I was able to successfully break through the four checkpoints."

Venerable White blinked a few times. Which fellow daoists helped Song Shuhang while he was breaking through? How come he didn't notice anything?

Whatever, it's not a bad thing, after all.

Venerable White smiled and said, "In a while, remember to go in the Nine Provinces Number One Group and ask which senior helped you. They did you a favor, and it's good to bear it in mind."

Song Shuhang nodded and said, "Yes, I'll keep it in mind."

"Moreover, I just heard you mutter Daoist Priest Eggplant, Loose Cultivator Scholarly Sword, and so on. What was the deal with that?" Venerable White asked out of curiosity. In the meantime, he took out a big box and opened it. There were many purple bayberries inside.

"Ah~ Senior White heard it! Haha..." Song Shuhang was quite embarrassed. However, he still replied, "I suddenly realized that I've already become a Second Stage True Master and officially stepped into the world of cultivators. Therefore, I was thinking whether or not it was the time to get a 'dao name'?"

"Oh~" Venerable White nodded in approval.

Song Shuhang continued, "However, I chose the road of a loose cultivator and didn't join any sect or school. Since I don't have a teacher or an elder of the sect to give me a dao name, I was wondering if I should choose one myself."

Venerable White's cheeks bulged. "Pew, pew, pew, pew~"

The seeds of the fruits flew in a straight line and fell into the sea.

Venerable White smiled and said, "Therefore, you thought of Daoist Eggplant? Have you decided to follow in Fairy Lychee's footsteps and use a dao name related to vegetables or fruits like the disciples of her sect? Such being the case, I recommend you to use Daoist Priest Bayberry, it sounds much better!"

"..." Song Shuhang.

"Senior White, that wasn't it! When I thought of Daoist Priest Eggplant, it was because I was deciding which dao name to blacklist permanently! In fact, I feel that dao names such as Loose Cultivator Scholarly Sword and Daoist Priest Godly Sword are much more suited to me," Song Shuhang said with a smile.

Venerable White pondered for a moment and said, "Shuhang, do you even use the sword? I thought you were specialized in saber techniques?"

Venerable White earnestly pointed out the problem with Song Shuhang's dao name.

Song Shuhang: 😞

"Moreover... Loose Cultivator Scholarly Sword, Daoist Priest Godly Sword, and so on dao names were already used by several people in the last thousands of years. If one were to hear them now, they would give an overused and backward feeling," Venerable White continued. "At this point, you might as well keep using your current dao name, Stressed by a Mountain of Books."

Song Shuhang quickly said, "Senior White, Stressed by a Mountain of Books is just my online username, it's not my dao name!"

Venerable White blinked a few times. "Pew, pew, pew, pew~"

"Moreover, I feel that it's better to have a dao name composed of four words!" Song Shuhang continued and stretched his finger, pointing it out. "Senior White, look. Except for Soft Feather, the seniors that managed to place amongst the first five in this session of the hand-guided tractor competition all have four-word dao names."

"Moreover, most of the seniors in the group have four-word dao names! For example, True Monarch Yellow Mountain, Thrice Reckless Mad Saber, Immortal Master Copper Trigram, Island

Master Tian Tiankong, and so on~"

Venerable White: "Pew, pew, pew, pew~"

Venerable White replied, "I have to remind you of something. Those aren't four-word dao names!"

"?" Song Shuhang.

"The majority of the dao names you mentioned just now are only composed of two words! The part at the front is their title, while the part at the back is their real dao name," Venerable White explained.

Chapter 461: Daoist Priest China, Zhejiang Province, Wenzhou City, Baijing Street

"For example, let's take Northern River's Loose Cultivator. 'Northern River' is his real dao name, while 'Loose Cultivator' is just a title. It's not different than 'Mister' or 'Miss'. Once he advances to the Sixth Stage, he would change it to True Monarch Northern River. It's the same for the other fellow daoists, Profound Principle, Snow Wolf, Copper Trigram, and Tian Tiankong are their dao names while Great Master, Cave Lord, Immortal Master, and Island Master their titles. Amongst the names you mentioned earlier, only Fellow Daoist Thrice Reckless Mad Saber has a four-word dao name."

Venerable White gently clapped his hands while speaking and said, "If you really want a four-word dao name, you can just follow in Fellow Thrice Reckless' footsteps. For example, how about Thrice Song Tyrannical Saber? Hmm... this dao name really seems to suit you!"

"No, absolutely not!" Song Shuhang shouted. He absolutely didn't want such a vulgar and crude dao name! No way, nope! At the very least, he wanted a refined and elegant dao name!

Song Shuhang was a university student that loved literature. If placed in ancient times, he would be a distinguished scholar! Therefore, he absolutely didn't want to have a dao name that reminded him of a bandit wielding the saber.

"Haha." Venerable White laughed and stretched his hand out, putting several bayberries in his mouth, his expression satisfied.

"Pew, pew, pew, pew..."

Afterward, Venerable White also added, "Actually, I don't think that four-word dao names are that good. I feel that one-word dao names are the best, it's very easy to remember them."

For example, Venerable White's dao name had only one word in it, 'white'.

Extremely simple, just like a white sheet of paper!

But if he had to take a one-word dao name...

Song Shuhang pondered. "A one-word name... Scholar? Sword?

True Monarch Scholar? True Monarch Sword?

For some reason, they also sound quite good.

"..." Venerable White.

Senior White sighed and said, "Little friend Song Shuhang, you are someone that has grown up while receiving the influence of the Internet and thus have a vast knowledge. But how come the size of your vocabulary is unexpectedly so small? Is it possible that you can't think of anything else that is not related to scholars or swords?"

Song Shuhang replied, "After pondering for a moment, I came to the conclusion that these two words are the ones that conform the most to my ideal image of a cultivator."

Venerable White shook his head and said, "If you really can't think of a good dao name, you might as well just use Thrice Song Tyrannical Saber."

"No, absolutely not! Senior White, this dao name is the only one I won't ever use!" Song Shuhang called out... he didn't want to turn into a second Senior Thrice Reckless. It was such a death-seeking behavior.

Perhaps because Song Shuhang shouted too loudly, the faraway seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group turned their heads toward him.

Fairy Dongfang lightly stepped on the water and came over. "A dao name? Is little friend Shuhang looking for a dao name?"

Although she was merely stepping on the water, when it was

Fairy Dongfang doing it, it was as pleasing as seeing a dance.

Song Shuhang nodded and said, "Yes!"

"Hehe, I always thought that Stressed by a Mountain of Books was your dao name. It seems it wasn't the case!" Fairy Dongfang said with a smile.

"That was just my online username and nothing more!" Song Shuhang said powerlessly. All the seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group had memorized the name 'Stressed by a Mountain of Books'. Such being the case, wouldn't they keep calling him like that even after he had chosen a dao name?

No, I can't let that happen!

I have to choose a dao name as soon as possible! I have to settle this matter by the end of the day!

Northern River's Loose Cultivator also calmly came over and said with a smile, "Little friend Shuhang, which type of dao name do you want to use?"

"There are different types of dao names?" Song Shuhang replied in puzzlement.

"While I was bored and had nothing to do, I categorized all the dao names I could think of," Northern River's Loose Cultivator said with a smile.

In the Nine Provinces Number One Group, Northern River's Loose Cultivator was the always online holy warrior and would always be the first one to reply to whatever question his fellow daoists asked. He was the same in real life, always in the frontline to reply to others as soon as possible.

Song Shuhang humbly asked for advice. "Senior Northern River, do tell."

Venerable White and Fairy Dongfang also curiously looked at Northern River's Loose Cultivator.

Northern River's Loose Cultivator started his captivating explanation. "Such being the case, I'll quickly introduce to you all the types of dao names. Along with the times advancing, dao names aren't as inflexible as they used to be in the past, and there aren't that many rules and conventions anymore. Now, let's talk about the first category of dao names. The dao names belonging to this category can be summed up as place-related dao names. In this case, cultivators that are the masters of a certain place—or just practice there—will directly use the name of the place as their dao name."

Song Shuhang's brain quickly operated, and he replied immediately, "Like Senior Yellow Mountain?"

Northern River's Loose Cultivator nodded and said, "Exactly. Senior Yellow Mountain has a dao name of this type. Other similar dao names are Sword Immortal Glorious Mountain, Scholar Cave Lake, True Monarch Dragon God Island, and so on. Actually, my own dao name also belongs to this category."

"The dao names of this category seem rather simple!" Song Shuhang pondered for a moment. If he had to use the name of a place as a dao name..."In that case, my dao name should be something like Daoist Priest Wenzhou? Scholar Wenzhou? Cultivator Wenzhou, and so on?"

But all of them sounded rather strange.

"If you want to use the name of a place, you don't have to limit yourself to 'Wenzhou'. You can use the name of a village, a mountain, a river, or a well as your dao name. If you wish, you can even choose bigger places such as cities and provinces. You don't have any limitation whatsoever," Northern River's Loose Cultivator said.

Song Shuhang pondered for a moment and said, "In other words, I can call myself Daoist Priest China, Scholar Zhejiang, Wenzhou's Loose Cultivator, or reducing the scale even further, Daoist Priest

Baijing Street?"

"Pew, pew, pew, pew~" Venerable White.

Venerable White couldn't help but crack a joke. "At this point, you might as well call yourself Daoist Priest China, Zhejiang Province, Wenzhou City, Baijing Street!"

"..." Fairy Dongfang.

"..." Northern River's Loose Cultivator.

"..." A certain monster named Phoenix Slayer that just regained his senses.

Song Shuhang quickly said, "Senior White, please stop joking. I'm not applying for a residence permit! Moreover, this dao name sounds very strange if read all together! If I use this dao name while introducing myself to someone else, it wouldn't even feel as though I was telling them my dao name but my mailing address instead!"

Fairy Dongfang held her chin and said, "Actually, I don't think that it's too bad. It would feel rather intimidating to shout aloud a long dao name such as 'Daoist Priest China, Zhejiang Province, Wenzhou City, Baijing Street'. Moreover, if you need to receive an express delivery, you can just write down your dao name instead of your given name and address."

"No, absolutely not!" Song Shuhang said firmly.

"Little friend Song Shuhang is really picky," Venerable White said.

"It's not me being picky! I just don't want a mailing address-type dao name!"

"Cough. In that case, let me introduce the second category of dao names," Northern River's Loose Cultivator continued. "The second category of dao names consists in cultivators using their 'special skills' as dao names. Such dao names are rather popular nowadays.

For example, Seven Lives Talisman, Thrice Reckless Mad Saber, Medicine Master, and even that shady fortune teller all have a dao name of this type. If they excelled in the field of talismans, they used talismans as their dao name. If they excelled in saber techniques, they used saber as their dao name... and so on. They basically used what they were good at as their dao name."

After hearing this much, Song Shuhang fell into deep contemplation...

Chapter 462: A week has seven days!

A dao name based on one's special skills?

Now, the problem was... what were Song Shuhang's special skills or strong points?

If someone asked him this question a year ago, Song Shuhang would have replied that his strong point was reading books, and as for his hobby... it was still reading books.

But if the other party replied that squatting in the corner of a bookstore and reading books wasn't really a special skill, Song Shuhang would have replied that his specialty were ball games.

Before getting admitted to Jiangnan's university, Song Shuhang was pretty good with sports, and ball games could be more or less considered his specialty.

Of course, he couldn't use such a 'special skill' as his dao name... Daoist Priest Basketball, Immortal Master Basketball, and so on would make the opposite party laugh aloud.

Therefore, these 'special skills' had to be cultivation-related.

In that case, what were his special skills when it came to cultivation?

Song Shuhang started to recall the things he had experienced in these two months as a cultivator. Even if it was a period of only two months, he experienced a lot of incredible things. The things he experienced in mere two months were enough to produce a TV series of at least thirty episodes!

Song Shuhang held his chin and pondered. He once used an induction cooker to refine some body tempering liquid... but was that even a 'special skill'?

As for the cultivation aspect... it seemed that the speed he was advancing at was very fast?

However, it happened only because he was together with the seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group and had many fortuitous encounters along the way that made his strength rise sharply. Therefore, advancing in realm wasn't really his personal 'special skill'. His luck was just better than others... such being the case, should he call himself Daoist Priest Good Luck?

But that was improper as well... after all, how could he compare to Senior White when it came to luck? Using this dao name would be like showing off his meager skills in front of an expert.

If none of these could be treated as 'special skills', he had only his cultivation techniques left.

After thinking this much, Song Shuhang muttered, "If we take into consideration my cultivation techniques... I know a fist technique, a saber technique, a movement technique, and the cultivation technique of the Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Sect."

After hearing Song Shuhang's words, Venerable White's eyes suddenly lit up. "You want to use your cultivation techniques for the 'special skills' category dao name? Right now, you have mastered only the 'Flaming Saber Technique' and the 'Basic Buddhist Fist Technique'. Therefore the dao name that suits you the most is precisely Thrice Song Tyrannical Saber, or perhaps Thrice Song Buddhist Fist? This one isn't bad either."

"...Why does this 'Thrice Song' have to be included each time?" Song Shuhang felt helpless about the number 'three'.

For example, Song Eldest or Song One were much better. After all, he was an only child and didn't have an elder brother or a younger sister.

"It's a good question, little friend Song Shuhang!" Right at this time, a baboon suddenly appeared behind Song Shuhang, issuing a pleased laughter.

It was Thrice Reckless Mad Saber.

"You asked why the number 'three' has to be included each time? Because there is a big secret behind it!" Thrice Reckless Mad Saber said complacently.

Song Shuhang asked out of curiosity, "A big secret?"

But right after asking the question, he somewhat regretted it. He had a bad premonition... that the answer Senior Thrice Reckless was going to give him wasn't something he would like.

"This can be considered my biggest secret!" Thrice Reckless Mad Saber snapped his fingers and said, "Since I seek death from time to time without even noticing it... the number 'three' is a reminder to myself!"

"A reminder?"

So, Senior Thrice Reckless is actually aware that he frequently seeks death? Song Shuhang had always thought that Thrice Reckless Mad Saber wasn't even one bit aware of it! But such being the case... wasn't he knowingly seeking death? It was like knowingly violating the law, he was doubly guilty!

"It's a reminder that you can't make the same mistake more than three times!" Thrice Reckless Mad Saber said earnestly. "As long as you don't continuously seek death on the same topic of conversation for more than three times, it doesn't count as seeking death!"

F*ck, there is actually such a theory?

Song Shuhang felt as though he had just learned something quite insightful.

But right at this time, a grave and lofty voice interrupted them. "Hehehe. Fellow Daoist Thrice Reckless, you repeatedly posed as me while in the form of a baboon and ruined my reputation... but since you thought you had yet to surpass the three times, you felt particularly daring, didn't you?"

The voice belonged to Su Clan's Seven. Just from listening to his

voice, one could tell that he was furious.

Thrice Reckless Mad Saber got a scare.

He quickly turned his head around just to see Scholar Drunken XXX's smiling face.

Scholar Drunken XXX had a mobile phone in his hand with the speakerphone on. Su Clan's Seven angry roar was transmitted from the other end. "I'll kill you, Thrice Reckless! Wait until I finish my current business, and I'll have a face-to-face meeting with you and the disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect!"

After the roar, the sound of Su Clan's Seven hanging up was transmitted from the other end.

Scholar Drunken XXX faintly smiled and said, "Hehe, I was just talking to Fellow Seven on the phone about a transaction, and he just happened to hear your words. Hehehe..."

After smiling, Scholar Drunken XXX lightly jumped and left~

Thrice Reckless Mad Saber was speechless..."This is bad! I unknowingly offended Fellow Daoist Seven more than three times... I'm done for!"

Senior, from the looks of it, the number 'three' in your dao name isn't that much of a help! Song Shuhang ridiculed in his heart.

It seemed that a dao name based on 'special skills' wasn't suited to Song Shuhang, either!



"Cough!" Northern River's Loose Cultivator had keen senses. He also felt that a dao name based on special skills wasn't too suitable for little friend Song Shuhang.

Thereupon, he started introducing the other categories of dao names. "Except for place-and special skills-related dao names, there are fellow daoists that decided to use their ancient or divine beast's bloodline as their dao names. The dao names 'True

Monarch White Crane' and 'Cave Lord Snow Wolf' both belong to this category. However, I feel that the dao names of this category aren't that suited to little friend Song Shuhang."

Song Shuhang nodded. He was a mere human... or at least he should be? Therefore, dao names related to 'bloodlines' were not suited to him.

"Aside from these, there are 'stream of consciousness' dao names as well!" Northern River's Loose Cultivator said with a smile.

"Stream of consciousness?" Song Shuhang repeated the name aloud. Perhaps these 'stream of consciousness' dao names might be suited to him!

"This category of dao names puts importance on things such as 'frame of mind', 'objectives', 'ambitions', and so on. In short, those type of things you can't describe with mere words," Northern River's Loose Cultivator said.

Song Shuhang said, "Are there seniors in the group with this type of dao name?"

"Of course. For example, Great Master Profound Principle's dao name belongs to this category... actually, no. In his case, it should be 'dharma name'. After all, he is a buddhist cultivator. Anyway, his dharma name belongs to this category, and the way of buddhism is also somewhat related to the concept of 'contemplation'," Northern River's Loose Cultivator kept explaining. "Moreover, even Fellow Daoist Dharma King Creation, who is another buddhist disciple, has a dharma name of this category. Previously, the dao names of daoist schools were also close to this concept. For example, dao names such as Pure, Pure Yang, Pure Yin, Inaction, and so on were quite popular hundreds of years ago. All of them belonged to the 'stream of consciousness' category of dao names. However, people with this type of dao name have sharply decreased in the last years."

That was it!

Song Shuhang waved his hand... this was the feeling!

"I've decided. I want a dao name of this type," Song Shuhang said.

"It seems that little friend Shuhang likes this type of dao name. Alright, it's normal for youngsters to like dao names that carry a hint of 'mystery' within them. Little friend Shuhang, do you already have something in mind?" Northern River's Loose Cultivator said with a smile.

Song Shuhang pondered for a moment and said, "How about something auspicious like Scholar Peace?"

"..." Northern River's Loose Cultivator.

"..." Venerable White.

"..." Thrice Reckless Mad Saber.

"..." Young Master Phoenix Slayer.

"..." Fairy Dongfang.

"Scholar Peace isn't good?" Song Shuhang asked cautiously.

Fairy Dongfang faintly smiled and said, "If you can't come up with anything better than Scholar Peace, you might as well keep using 'Stressed by a Mountain of Books. At least it gives off a scholarly vibe when someone hears it."

"Alright..." Song Shuhang felt that he had no innate talent when it came to choosing a dao name. "In that case, can I ask you seniors to help me look for a suitable dao name?"

There were so many seniors on the scene, and it was impossible that all of them would come up with stuff of the level of 'Daoist Priest Sweet Potato', right? If they could come up with two or three decent dao names, he could choose from them. With that, he could finally solve this problem about his dao name!

After thinking this much, Song Shuhang immediately gave a 'like' to himself for being so quick-witted.

"It's a good idea. I'll note the names down for little friend Shuhang," Northern River's Loose Cultivator enthusiastically took out a notebook.

At the same time, he went into the Nine Provinces Number One Group and sent a message.

Calling to arms all fellow daoists. If you are online and have nothing to do, you can bring into full play your imagination and think of a suitable dao name for little friend Song Shuhang.



"Thrice Song Tyrannical Saber can't miss, right? Oh wait, it should be Tyrannical Saber Song One now," Venerable White said.

Song Shuhang had a strong urge to object.

But Northern River's Loose Cultivator had already taken his pen, starting to write. He added the dao name Tyrannical Saber Song One to the notebook and wrote Venerable White's name next to it.

"Actually, I feel that the dao name 'Thrice Song Buddhist Fist' that Venerable White came up with earlier wasn't half bad; it felt very manly. The 'Thrice Song' in the front can be changed too, how about Young Master Buddhist Fist?" Thrice Reckless Mad Saber suggested.

"It's not bad. Although only two words were changed, it got much better." Northern River's Loose Cultivator quickly wrote the dao name 'Young Master Buddhist Fist' on the notebook and added Thrice Reckless Mad Saber's name next to it.

"I'll also suggest something then. I feel that 'Daoist Priest China, Zhejiang Province, Wenzhou City, Baijing Street' was rather amusing. However, we can change a few parts. Wenzhou City, Baijing Street's Traveler... hmm, we can remove the first part and turn it into Baijing Street's Traveling Sabersman or Baijing Street's Loose Cultivator. They are both pretty good," Fairy Dongfang said.

Song Shuhang's eyes immediately lit up. Finally a dao name that

sounded normal. "Baijing Street's Loose Cultivator! I like this one!"

"Baijing Street's Traveling Sabersman, I suppose? 'Loose Cultivator' isn't nearly as much awe-inspiring. My dao name is Northern River's Loose Cultivator, and I can assure you that it doesn't sound that overbearing when I introduce myself to other fellow daoists, believe me!" Northern River's Loose Cultivator said.

After saying this much, he wrote on the notebook the dao name 'Baijing Street's Traveling Sabersman' and added Fairy Dongfang's name next to it.

"..." Song Shuhang.

At this time, Venerable White suggested, "I feel that one-word dao names are also pretty good. If we disassemble the Song (宋) character in little friend Song Shuhang's name and take into consideration only the wood (木) part, we can obtain Daoist Priest Wood, which isn't bad, either."

"Alright, I'll note it down." Northern River's Loose Cultivator wrote down on the notebook the dao name 'Daoist Priest Wood'.



Since Northern River's Loose Cultivator sent a message in the Nine Provinces Number One Group earlier, many fellow daoists rushed over to join in the fun.

"If we have to choose a dao name, shouldn't we choose it according to the cultivator's appearance and the vibe they are giving off? After taking a look at little friend Song Shuhang's current appearance, and taking into consideration his ⟨Virtuous Man's Ten Thousand Mile Walk⟩, I recommend the dao name 'Godly Saber Virtuous Buddhist'! Oh, wait a moment, it sounds strange if read aloud. How about changing it into 'Virtuous Buddhist Sabersman'?" Dharma King Creation popped out of nowhere and said.

"Virtuous Buddhist Sabersman? Not bad, I'll note it down."

Northern River's Loose Cultivator quickly wrote the dao name down.

"Brother Creation, you made a mistake! Little friend Song Shuhang said that he wanted a dao name of the 'stream of consciousness' category. Therefore, if we take into consideration his appearance and the fact that he's using the saber and has good character, doesn't it remind one of the saying 'drop the butcher knife and become a Buddha instantly'? Such being the case, how about Great Master Butcher Knife?" True Monarch Ancient Lake Temple said from afar while coming over.

"Great Master Butcher Knife? Although it's a bit strange, I'll note it down." Northern River's Loose Cultivator nodded.

"..." Song Shuhang.

How come the saying 'drop the butcher knife and become a Buddha instantly' turned into Great Master Butcher Knife after being shortened? The meaning changed completely!

Song Shuhang had started to wonder whether his brilliant idea had really been that brilliant...

"Actually, I've already long thought of a dao name for Senior Song. I came up with a very good dao name quite some time ago!" Soft Feather quickly came over and said, "Spirit Butterfly Island's Scholar Mountain of Books, how does it sound?"

Northern River's Loose Cultivator was dumbfounded. "Eh? Why did you add the title 'Spirit Butterfly Island'? Is little friend Song Shuhang planning to join the Spirit Butterfly Island?"

"Ah... no! At the time, when I thought of this dao name, I was thinking of dragging Senior Song to the Spirit Butterfly Island. Anyway, I'll have to settle for Scholar Mountain of Books it seems!" Soft Feather said with a regretful look on her face.

Song Shuhang's eyes teared up. This dao name was the most normal up until now!

Northern River's Loose Cultivator swiped on his phone and said, "The other fellow daoists from the Nine Provinces Number One Group also brought up a few dao names. I'll choose the most normal-looking ones and write them down."

The most normal-looking ones... in other words, the majority of the dao names the seniors came up with aren't normal at all!

"Daoist Priest Stress, Scholarly Fist Monk, Path-seeking Scholar, and Virtuous Cultivator. These four are the most normal," Northern River's Loose Cultivator continued. "As for those fruit-related dao names and those that didn't conform to little friend Song Shuhang characteristics, I removed them all."

In that case... I guess you can go ahead and choose the dao name you like the most?" Northern River's Loose Cultivator passed the notebook full of names to Song Shuhang.

Song Shuhang took the notebook and shot a glance at the eleven dao names on the page.

Which one should I choose?

Just as he was in deep thoughts, Song Shuhang felt his body sink downward... just like his online username 'Stressed by a Mountain of Books' implied, he was under huge pressure.

This pressure came from the several seniors in front that were staring at him.

Song Shuhang felt that he hadn't been quick-witted in the least this time.

Five minutes later.

Song Shuhang stretched out the pen and quickly made a few check marks on the eleven dao names.

Finally, he picked seven of the eleven dao names.

"I've decided." Song Shuhang raised his head with a faint smile

and said, "These are my dao names!"

"These?" Northern River's Loose Cultivator was dumbfounded.

"Yes, these seven dao names!" Song Shuhang confirmed and said, "It just so happens that a week has also seven days!"

Chapter 463: So unlucky!

The first two dao names that Song Shuhang checked were Baijing Street's Traveling Sabersman and Scholar Mountain of Books. Both were dao names that conformed to Song Shuhang's tastes.

As for Great Master Butcher Knife, it was the first one he deleted.

What the hell is this Daoist Priest Stress, and this Daoist Priest Pearple too?! Delete, delete, delete!

Young Master Buddhist Fist? A fusion between the fist of a buddhist cultivator and a young master... so, a pretty face with a muscular and stout body? Delete, delete, delete!

Aside from the two dao names he had already chosen, there were six more left.

Since he wanted seven dao names, he had to delete another one.

Tyrannical Saber Song One, Daoist Priest Wood, Virtuous Buddhist Sabersman, Scholarly Fist Monk, Path-seeking Scholar, and Virtuous Cultivator...

Amongst these six, the dao name Song Shuhang wanted to delete the most was... Tyrannical Saber Song One!

However, it was a dao name that Venerable White chose personally.

After thinking for a moment, Song Shuhang decided to keep it. He had to give Senior White some face!

If he didn't give Senior White face, and the latter was to get angry... cough, that would simply be the end of his poor life!

In the end, these seven dao names were only a temporary thing. Slowly, he would choose the most suitable one for him amongst them. Therefore, he would later find an excuse and remove the dao name 'Tyrannical Saber Song One'.

As for the remaining five dao names, it was very easy which one

to delete—either Virtuous Buddhist Sabersman or Scholarly Fist Monk.

These two dao names were too much of a style ruiner.

But between the two, Scholarly Fist Monk had the highest priority of getting deleted... what was that 'Fist Monk' thing? He didn't want to become a monk!



Virtuous Buddhist Sabersman, Tyrannical Saber Song One, Daoist Priest Wood, Baijing Street's Traveling Sabersman, Scholar Mountain of Books, Path-seeking Scholar, and Virtuous Cultivator... a total of seven dao names.

After putting them in order, he could use one dao name for each day of the week. A week also happened to have seven days.

One dao name for each day, and since a week had only seven days, there would be no repetitions. Wasn't that amazing?

If not for the fact that 365 dao names were too difficult to remember, he would have picked a different dao name for each day of the year!

Today was July 21st, Sunday, late at night. There were still a few hours left until morning.

He decided that he would call himself Virtuous Cultivator for today, and after dawn, his new dao name would change to Virtuous Buddhist Sabersman.

As for the day after tomorrow, Tuesday, he would use Tyrannical Saber Song One!



After checking the seven dao names, Song Shuhang gently smiled and said, "With these seven dao names, I can take turns and change dao name every day. I can alternate between them throughout the whole week."

"Senior Song has seven dao names, so cool!" Soft Feather said enviously.

...I've decided. Once I return home, I'll ask father to give me several dao names.

But how many dao names should I take?

Should I take seven dao names like Senior Song? No, that's improper. It would make us look like lovers.

So, 30 dao names? One for each day of the month! Wait, there is another problem. Sometimes there are only 28 days in a month, and sometimes 31...

In that case... I'll ask father to give me 365 dao names! I can use a new dao name for each day of the year without repetitions!

Perfect. I've decided. I want 365 dao names.

A different dao name each day, and thus a brand-new Soft Feather each day too!

In a distant place... Venerable Spirit Butterfly, who was currently handling the last of matters regarding the hand-guided tractor competition, suddenly trembled. This was the super sixth sense of a Venerable tingling... what kind of calamity was about to befall him?

What a headache!

Is this the work of that big eye Sea King? Hehe, is it planning to send the sea urchin warriors to make a surprise attack against the Spirit Butterfly Island?

Look if I don't kill these stupid sea urchin warriors!

❄ ❄ ❄

Venerable White laughed and said, "Seven dao names that you can use by taking turns? Haha, only someone like little friend Song Shuhang that was never restricted by the rules of the world of cultivators could come up with something like this. However, I

find it rather interesting."

"Seven dao names?" Northern River's Loose Cultivator was still dumbfounded. "Little friend Shuhang, are you sure?"

"Yes, I'm sure. Senior Northern River, don't worry. This is only a temporary thing. In the end, I'll only keep one of these seven dao names, and that dao name will become the one I'll use in the future," Song Shuhang replied.

Perhaps he would stumble upon an even better dao name while deciding which one to keep. At the time, he could replace these seven dao names with that one.

Anyway, it wasn't like dao names couldn't be changed.

Along with their strength increasing or due to the influence of other elements, powerful cultivators would sometimes change their dao names.

For example, Venerable Spirit Butterfly's dao name wasn't 'Spirit Butterfly' since the beginning. Only after he created his personal island, the Spirit Butterfly Island, did he change his dao name to match it.

True Monarch Ancient Lake Temple also had a different dao name 200 years ago. Only after inheriting the position of temple master of the 'Ancient Lake Temple' did he inherit the dao name. It was a tradition in their temple to pass down this dao name.

Thrice Reckless Mad Saber held his chin and said, "It's indeed an ingenious method."

It seemed that he had recovered from the scare he got earlier when Su Clan's Seven threatened to kill him.

Right... after all, he was someone that was always in the foremost frontline of the death-seeking camp. How could he even happily seek death if he didn't have the strength to adjust his mentality at fast speed?

"Anyway, little friend Shuhang, even if a dao name is nothing but a name... it is secretly linked to the fate of a cultivator. Therefore, you shouldn't look down upon dao names!" Thrice Reckless Mad Saber strangely gave a serious and useful advice.

"I know, Senior Thrice Reckless. I've never looked down upon dao names." Song Shuhang closed the notebook and returned it to Northern River's Loose Cultivator. He had already noted down the seven dao names.

It was precisely because he didn't look down upon dao names that he wanted to change 'Stressed by a Mountain of Books'.

Northern River's Loose Cultivator received his notebook and said, "Haha, these words of Thrice Reckless came from his heart. His own dao name is a mistake he learnt from."

"..." Thrice Reckless Mad Saber.

The matter regarding Song Shuhang's dao name finally came to an end.



"Alright, now that the matter regarding little friend Shuhang's dao name has been settled, let's go prepare the market where cultivators can carry out their transactions!" Venerable White said happily as he waved his hand. But as soon as he finished speaking, he thought of a problem and asked, "Shuhang, what is your dao name today?"

"It's Sunday, so it's Virtuous Cultivator." Then, Song Shuhang asked out of curiosity, "Senior, you want to prepare that market to carry out transactions right now?"

"Yes, it's a usual practice in the world of cultivators," Northern River's Loose Cultivator explained. "Usually, cultivators live in secluded places all over the world, and it's not easy to get all together in the same place. Therefore, whenever large-scale events such as the 'flying sword competition' and so on come to an end,

cultivators would seize the opportunity and set up a street market where cultivators can carry out transactions. Senior Spirit Butterfly and Senior Tornado are already arranging the articles for the street market."

"So that was it," Song Shuhang said with a nod. Soon after, he shot a glance at the enthusiastic Venerable White and said, "Senior White, aren't you the organizer of this session of the 'hand-guided tractor' competition? Shouldn't it be your duty to arrange the street market?"

"Don't worry. Let's just leave the matter to Fellow Daoist Spirit Butterfly and Fellow Daoist Tornado. Moreover, Fellow Daoist Tornado really likes these events where he can show off. As long as I show my face once the event has started, it's all good." Venerable White gave the thumbs up and also added, "Additionally, I've already made proper arrangements for all the things I had to do. Before calling everyone for the hand-guided tractor competition, I've requested several fellow daoists specialized in inspecting treasures to come over here and oversee the event. At the time, if anyone thinks that their goods were not evaluated properly, they can request these fellow daoists to appraise the goods for them... of course, one cannot forget the appraisal fees."

Venerable White's abilities as 'hands-off leader' seemed to be top-notch.

On the other hand, Venerable Tornado's abilities to 'bear the burden and the responsibility' were also quite high.

"Right, Shuhang... oh, wait. It's Virtuous Cultivator now. Anyway, look for me once the street market is open. I'll take you around for a stroll, increasing your knowledge as a cultivator." Then, Venerable White waved his hand and added, "I'll go to Fellow Daoist Spirit Butterfly's place now and see at which time the street market will open."

After saying this much, Venerable White happily left.

"Haha, since it's a street market, it's time for Senior White to get a good harvest, right?"

"Whenever there is a similar event, Senior White always manages to find very good items."

"But everyone has become aware of it recently. As long as Venerable White is willing to buy something, that thing must be a valuable treasure."

"That's not necessarily true. His old acquaintances might know it, but there are always a lot of new people at each of these events."

After making these funny remarks, the seniors left one after another, heading toward Venerable Tornado and Venerable Spirit Butterfly's position.



"A place where cultivators can carry out transactions! It seems a rather rare opportunity... unfortunately, I don't have many things on hand that I can use to carry out transactions. I don't even have that many spirit stones," Song Shuhang said with a regretful look on his face.

He was also planning to join in the fun and gain a deeper understanding of the world of cultivators.

'Now then, the finish line was close to the island where Senior Seven Lives Talisman was residing, right? Turbo, Yangde, and Gao Moumou should be still on the island, no? Such being the case, I'll go meet them first!' Song Shuhang thought this much and stood up.

After a short moment...

Song Shuhang discovered that he was all alone in the open container of the hand-guided tractor... all around him was the boundless sea, and he couldn't see even the shadow of an island where the natives might live.

The finish line of the hand-guided tractor competition was supposed to be 'close' to Seven Lives Talisman's dwelling... but who knew how truly far was that 'close' Venerable White and the others were talking about...?

By the way, seniors... couldn't you have given me a ride while you left? Do I really have to swim all the way to look for you...?

So unlucky!



"What a tragedy!"

On the island of the natives.

It was almost dawn at this time.

After studying hard for the whole day, the natives went to sleep very early. Lately, they started studying as soon as the sun rose and kept doing it until it went down. It was a fine routine.

Gao Moumou was lying inside a small mud house and had his eyes wide open. He couldn't fall asleep.

"What a miserable life!"

Originally, he was supposed to go on a lovey-dovey summer vacation with his girlfriend, Yayi. But in the end, it turned into a fearsome task to survive on this island full of savages.

The ship that was supposed to take them away would arrive on the island only after one month.

"A month...! Although I already timed the chapters on the backend platform for authors so that they would be released automatically, there shouldn't be a lot of them left... if this keeps going on, there won't be any more releases..." Gao Moumou muttered to himself.

Chapter 464: Song Shuhang's disciples and followers

It had been already more than a week since Gao Moumou and the others landed on the island.

Summer vacation was only two months long, and if they really had to spend half of it on this island of savages... they felt like crying.

If they wanted to leave this small island a bit earlier, there was only one way... help the master of the island, that rich mister wearing a windbreaker, and teach the natives the *«Analects of Confucius»* in its entirety.

Under the leadership of the old professor, they used the most scientifically advanced and effective methods to teach the natives of the island... but even under these circumstances, they only managed to make them forget about the bad handwriting edition of the *«Three-Character Classic»* with great difficulty and teach them from scratch the correct Chinese-language edition of the *«Three-Character Classic»*.

Therefore, they had really no idea how long it would take them to teach the natives the *«Analects of Confucius»*.



After thinking this much, Gao Moumou sighed and said, "Rich people have strange ways to have fun!"

That man was rich and handsome, but instead of indulging in a life of luxury, he decided to come to this island in the middle of nowhere and teach the natives living here how to read and write Chinese.

That man wearing a windbreaker must be bored to the point of death to do something like this, right?

Someone ordinary like me can't comprehend how these rich people think...

He felt that this year's summer vacation went to shiet after he met the Zhuge siblings. So unlucky! Why did I end up with such a 'childhood friend' and 'childhood sweetheart'?!

Gao Moumou, male. A student of Jiangnan's University's Mechanical Engineering Course. Mechanical Design and Manufacturing Academy Department 19, Class 43. He wore glasses and was a little handsome. His financial situation was good.

By the way, Gao Moumou wasn't his nickname. It was a name belonging to the 'we hate our child' category. His surname was Gao, and his name Moumou. Therefore, Gao Moumou was his real name.

Gao Moumou had a secret wish in his heart. He wanted to go to the local police station and change his name right after graduating from university and finding a job, becoming thus economically independent from his father.

He wanted to change his name at all costs!

Additionally, he was the only 'life winner' in Song Shuhang's dormitory—he had managed to get a girlfriend.

Compared to the computer expert Li Yangde, the full of energy Lin Tubo, and the guy squatting in the bookstore, freeloading books for the whole afternoon Song Shuhang, Gao Moumou was the only 'mature' member of the dormitory. Therefore, he would frequently take on the responsibility to take care of his roommates.

For example, when Song Shuhang got a cold two months ago and fell ill, it was Gao Moumou that reminded the others to buy medicine and get the gruel, dividing their jobs.

However, this mature person and winner in life had a little secret that his roommates were unaware of.

He was secretly writing webnovels... and he had done so for

many years. He started writing when he was in high school and unknowingly managed to gather a very loyal fanbase.

Unfortunately, he didn't have too much time to write since he was busy with his studies. Gao Moumou was a student with good grades. Otherwise, he wouldn't have been admitted to Jiangnan's University in the first place.

Each day, he had very little time to write, and he was only able to write around 6000 characters per day.

Moreover, since Gao Moumou considered writing novels the same as writing a 'personal diary', he felt shy about his roommates knowing about it. Therefore, he never told them about this matter.

He wrote cautiously, and as soon as he had the opportunity, he would write a little bit and stockpile chapters to guard against unforeseen events.

Before leaving home for summer vacation, Gao Moumou had painstakingly saved up enough chapters so that they would last him for half a month.

According to his original calculations, two chapters would be released each day at a fixed time. Moreover, if he could get his hands on computer and WiFi during the trip, he could secretly write a few more chapters. There shouldn't have been any problems in keeping a steady release rate during summer vacation.

But he didn't expect that things would go from bad to worse and the plane would crash!

They unexpectedly ended up on an island with savages living on it!

These savages were the native and only inhabitants of the island.

Aside from the residence of that rich man wearing a windbreaker, there were no other places on the island with a computer, WiFi, or the Internet.

Now, it seemed that he would have to stop the release of the novel for more than half a month. He started writing a new book during the last semester, and from the day the book was released up until now, he didn't ask for a leave and didn't miss a single release. But now, this record was about to be broken.

Would the readers insult me for dropping the novel halfway?

And more importantly, although he could endure the tough and dangerous life on the island, why did he and Yayi have to sleep in separate places?

They were boyfriend and girlfriend, you know?

Why did he have to sleep next to two idiots like Tubo and Zhuge Zhongyang?! These two brainless idiots didn't even have the concept of 'worry' and were already sleeping soundly.

"Ah... from where can I start complaining about this whole situation?" Gao Moumou heaved a deep sigh.

Moreover, that was another matter that was making Gao Moumou worry.

Song Shuhang, who went on the trip together with them, disappeared after the plane crashed.

Although that rich man wearing a black windbreaker said he was Song Shuhang's friend and that nothing bad happened to him, Gao Moumou was still worried after not hearing about him for a week.

On the other hand... when had Song Shuhang become friends with that rich man who also happened to be the master of the island...?



Just as Gao Moumou's imagination was running wild, a human shadow shuttled back and forth outside the small mud house.

There is someone outside? Gao Moumou got vigilant and his body tensed up.

Although he had the look of an intellectual, he had practiced martial arts during his childhood. Even if he had neglected them for years, the foundation was still there.

After tensing his body up, Gao Moumou cautiously moved outside the mud house.

Thanks to the moonlight, Gao Moumou was able to see the figure clearly.

It was a tall and stout foreigner with blonde hair.

There was only one person on the island with these characteristics... Mister Joseph, Song Shuhang's disciple in name. He had learned a peerless martial technique from Shuhang, the <Times are Calling>. Practicing it day and night had strengthened his body a lot.

Strange, what is Mister Joseph doing outside in the middle of the night? Gao Moumou thought to himself.

Then, he saw Joseph pass through the group of mud houses, heading toward the forest on the side.

Inside the forest was a stretch of open space.

Joseph arrived at the open space and took a deep breath. Soon after, he started to perform the steps of the <Times are Calling>.

"..." Gao Moumou.

I understand now. It seems that Mister Joseph wasn't able to sleep and decided to get out to exercise a bit...

Now then, does Mister Joseph still believe that Song Shuhang is a martial arts expert?

If Song Shuhang is a martial arts expert, am I a character comparable to the Legendary Five? Gao Moumou chuckled in his heart. After all, he still learned a little bit of martial arts during his childhood.

However, a strange feeling welled up in his heart as soon as the

thought of this matter.

Two very fragmentary scenes resurfaced in his mind... in one of the scenes, Song Shuhang was vertically running on a wall. In the other, he used the raging flames sword technique like the characters in action novels...?

Why did these scenes suddenly flash through his mind?

Gao Moumou fiercely shook his head.

Was it possible that he had written too many novels and couldn't distinguish fiction from reality anymore?

Forget it, I should return to sleep.

He wasn't in the mood to accompany Joseph and perform the <Times are Calling> together with him in the middle of the night~

After thinking this much, Gao Moumou quietly moved backward. He didn't want to ruin Mister Joseph's mood.



Just as he was preparing to return to his small mud house, he suddenly heard a rustle from the woods.

Next, twenty or so natives flooded the open space from all directions, surrounding Joseph.

This is bad! Gao Moumou felt that the situation was dire.

Scenes from movies and novels regarding cannibal tribes immediately flashed through his mind.

Were these savages planning to hurt Joseph?

Gao Moumou shot a glance all around, trying to look for a weapon. Going in with something like a wooden stick was still better than going in unarmed.

But before he could even look for a weapon, the scene before his eyes changed.

The twenty natives orderly cupped one of their hands in the

other across their chests, just like those characters in TV series set in ancient times, and bent their waists, bowing to Joseph.

Then, they used their awkward Chinese to yell 'teacher'.

Gao Moumou was dumbstruck.

What the hell was this development?



Joseph shot a glance at the natives and said with an awe-inspiring expression and piercing eyes, "Very well. Is everyone here?"

"Yes, Teacher. Today~ it was the turn of us twenty come here... we beseech teacher to teach us the peerless martial technique!" the natives said in awkward Chinese after coming forth of their own volition.

Joseph nodded satisfied and said, "In that case, let's start. Show me the first three styles of the technique I taught you the last time!"

"Yes, Teacher!" the twenty natives said respectfully.

Then, they orderly positioned themselves and lined up, assuming the shape of a square matrix.

Next, the twenty natives started to perform the <Times are Calling> in all seriousness.

This picture was so dazzling that it blinded Gao Moumou's eyes.

What was happening to this world?

Was it really going to shiet?

Or perhaps the <Times are Calling> was really a peerless martial technique? And only stupid youngsters like them were unaware of it?



Very soon, the natives finished displaying the first three styles of

the <Times are Calling>.

"Very well. Your movements were perfect." Joseph had a satisfied expression on his face. "Such being the case, I'll teach you the fourth style today!"

"Teacher, when~ when we'll be able to become strong enough to overthrow the cruel master of the island~ hanging him up to a tree and beating him up!" the natives said with a longing expression.

"While practicing martial arts, one has to guard against inner demons and not make haste. Otherwise, you might be unable to master the peerless technique to perfection," Joseph said with a serious expression on his face.

Soon after, he also added, "The strength of your bodies far surpasses mine. After you learn the full version of the technique and practice it for some time, you should be able to feel your constitution strengthen a lot within a short period of time!"

Since the natives hadn't been learning Chinese for too long, Joseph had to frequently use gestures to make them understand the meaning of his words.

"Afterward, once you have practiced enough and you can feel the 'qi', you can create explosions by simply punching. At that time, you would have completely mastered the technique!" Joseph had an envious expression on his face when he said these words.

His teacher, Song Shuhang, had already reached the realm where he could create explosions just by gently pushing his hand ahead.

After hearing Joseph's description, hope appeared in the eyes of the natives.

The name can be roughly translated to 'tall so and so'

Reference to Jin Yong's novel, The Return of the Condor Heroes.

Chapter 465: Young Master Phoenix Slayer's gift

A realm where one could create explosions just by swinging their fists... it should be much higher than the realm of the cruel master of the island, right?

The natives felt that they would be able to rebel against the cruel master of the island and obtain freedom after reaching this realm where they could feel the qi in their bodies and create explosions with their punches.

After recalling how cruel the master of the island was, tears started to well up in their eyes.

If they wrote a character wrong, he would hit their palms until they turned completely red.

If they were to make mistakes while reciting from memory, they would be starved. Sometimes, they wouldn't get any meals for the whole day.

If they were to make too many mistakes while writing, they would be hung on a big tree outside the tribe and ruthlessly whipped, the pain of it unbearable.

The worst thing was that after the new instructors started teaching them, the natives discovered that the method the cruel master of the island taught them earlier to write the Chinese characters of the <Three-Character Classic> was completely wrong! They just learned his badly-written characters and the real ones were completely different!

Everything they learned... was... wrong...

The natives felt extremely bitter in their hearts. However, they didn't dare to tell this to the cruel master of the island. Otherwise, they might get starved or hung up on a tree and beaten!

But whenever there was oppression, there would be resistance! Therefore, they decided to learn this peerless martial technique. They wanted to become strong and rebel against the master of the island!

At the time, they would make the master of the island learn their own pictographic characters. If he couldn't learn them properly, they would make him starve. If he were to make mistakes while writing, they would hit the palms of his hands, and if he were to make mistakes while reciting from memory, they would hang him on a tree and beat him!

After thinking of this dream-like scene, the natives started to drool.

Thereupon, they gave it their all and tried to master this peerless martial technique called the <Times are Calling> with all their strength.



The corner of Gao Moumou's mouth twitched.

He felt that Mister Joseph's 'Talk no Jutsu' had reached frightening levels. Even in this situation where he had no leverage, he had managed to fool so many natives into practicing the <Times are Calling> together with him.

If they were in ancient times, perhaps this guy could have even used the <Times are Calling> to establish a new school of martial arts... Time Fist School? Or perhaps Calling Fist School?

Anyway, Gao Moumou felt that this dream the natives had about hanging up and beating the master of the island didn't have many prospects...

Gao Moumou could already imagine the natives surrounding the man wearing a black windbreaker after they had mastered the 'peerless martial technique' someday in the future, starting to perform the <Times are Calling> in front of him.

The scene was really too dazzling!

According to his estimations, the big tree at the entrance of the village would be full of ruthlessly whipped fruits called 'natives' at the time.

However, people must have dreams to feel alive. If they don't have dreams, what is the difference between a man and a robot? Therefore, I'll wish all of you good luck, Gao Moumou thought to himself.

Then, he quietly retreated and left the woods, returning to his small mud house to sleep.



In the end, Song Shuhang was able to successfully leave Venerable White's hand-guided tractor. The one that helped him was Young Master Phoenix Slayer.

Anyway, how would they deal with these magically modified hand-guided tractors? Would they store them away and reuse them during the next session of the hand-guided tractor competition?

After all, they couldn't leave them alone just like that... these modified hand-guided tractors weren't that much different than powerful 'magical treasures' from certain points of view.

In particular, that hand-guided tractor with a drill that belonged to Scholar Drunken Something. Song Shuhang was sure he could roll to death a cultivator of the Second Stage with that gadget.

As for that drill, even a cultivator of the Fourth Stage might be severely injured if hit directly!

Young Master Phoenix Slayer used his spiritual energy to prop up Song Shuhang, allowing him to walk on the surface of the water. Then, the duo headed toward Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman's island of natives.

While they were walking, Song Shuhang suddenly recalled a certain matter.

"Senior Phoenix Slayer, there is something I need to tell you." After saying this much, Song Shuhang took out a silver glove and handed it to Young Master Phoenix Slayer.

"What's this?" Young Master Phoenix Slayer took the silver glove in his hands.

"Senior Tornado threw it over, saying that it was a gift for you," Song Shuhang replied. "Moreover, he asked if you wanted to become his pet..."

"That bastard! I hope he dies a painful death!" Young Master Phoenix Slayer roared.

"Don't worry, I already refused his proposal," Song Shuhang said.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer continued bellowing, "You should have given him a good beating! Beep, beep, beep, pet his sister!"

"Haha~" Song Shuhang made a hollow laugh. The opposite party was a Venerable... wouldn't he be tired of living if he tried to attack him?

After making a hollow laugh, Song Shuhang asked, "Anyway, I'll leave the silver glove to you, Senior Phoenix Slayer!"

"Help me return it to Tornado!" Young Master Phoenix Slayer firmly pushed the silver glove into Song Shuhang's hand.

"Senior Phoenix Slayer, it's better if you deal with this matter yourself." Song Shuhang pushed the silver glove back into Young Master Phoenix Slayer's hands. His sixth sense as a cultivator told him that Venerable Tornado was an extremely troublesome fellow.

Therefore, it was better to let Young Master Phoenix Slayer personally deal with this matter regarding the silver glove.

"Stop throwing it back to me! You are the one that accepted it! A man should take responsibility for his actions. You're the one that

accepted the gift, hence you have to return it even if you have tears in your eyes!" Young Master Phoenix Slayer threw the silver glove back.

"Senior Phoenix Slayer, it was your body that accepted it. Therefore, it's better if you return it yourself." Song Shuhang threw the silver glove back once more.

"Dammit, that's your fault for accepting the gift on my behalf!" Young Master Phoenix Slayer returned the silver glove to Song Shuhang once again.

"I refused his gift! But Senior Tornado threw it at me anyway. I tried my best!" Song Shuhang returned the silver glove and continued, "Anyway, Senior Phoenix Slayer, stop throwing it back at me! Otherwise, I'm not going to catch it the next time!"

Young Master Phoenix Slayer held the silver glove in his hands. It wasn't good to throw it, but it wasn't good not to throw it, either.

If the Sea King were to see this scene, its big eye would surely start to tear up.



After a long silence...

"Alright... I'll accept this silver glove," Young Master Phoenix Slayer said.

"That's the way. It's just a silver glove, and it can be conveniently placed inside your treasure-house at worst," Song Shuhang said.

"Hehe." Young Master Phoenix Slayer nodded. Then, he suddenly said, "Right... little friend Song Shuhang, I've heard from the other fellow daoists that you helped looking after Doudou, is that true?"

"Eh? Yes." Song Shuhang nodded.

"Little friend Shuhang, you really went through a lot of trouble." Young Master Phoenix Slayer cast his eyes down and sighed with emotion. "That Doudou is really a troublemaker."

Song Shuhang wasn't able to adapt to Young Master Phoenix Slayer's sudden change in attitude. He forced a smile and said, "Senior Phoenix Slayer, you're exaggerating. Actually, Doudou also helped me a lot."

"Little friend Song Shuhang, you don't need to speak up for that stupid dog. I know how much trouble you went through." Young Master Phoenix Slayer took a step forward and moved next to Song Shuhang. Then, he grabbed Shuhang's hand and said, "I have a small gift here... accept it as my thanks for taking care of Doudou."

"..." Song Shuhang.

Just as he expected, a silver glove had appeared in his hand.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer's sudden change of attitude was because he was looking for an excuse to pass the silver glove to him!

Chapter 466: Fairy Lychee's video broadcast

Song Shuhang subconsciously thought of returning the silver glove back to Young Master Phoenix Slayer once more. "Senior Phoenix Slayer, True Monarch Yellow Mountain already gave me a gift for looking after Doudou. According to the law 'one can't be punished twice for the same crime'... oh wait, wrong choice of words. But my meaning should be clear. Senior Phoenix Slayer, you don't need to give me this extra gift."

"Aren't you a grown man, how can you keep fussing about these small matters? This silver glove is a treasured object, isn't it? I'm not even asking you to return it to Venerable Tornado... I've already accepted his gift, and now, I'm giving it to you as a thank-you gift. Why are you so against accepting it?" Young Master Phoenix Slayer said somewhat disgruntled.

What Young Master Phoenix Slayer said was reasonable!

This silver glove was indeed a treasure. The Sea King, whose strength was comparable to that of a Venerable, tried its best to get its hands on it.

Moreover... even if Song Shuhang didn't want to keep the silver glove for himself... there would be soon a meeting where cultivators could carry out transactions! If he didn't want to keep it, he could exchange it with other cultivators and obtain all kinds of good things in return!

"Such being the case, can I drop formalities and accept it?" Song Shuhang asked.

"A man needs to be more decisive." Young Master Phoenix Slayer laughed and patted Song Shuhang shoulder.

Then, he pushed his glasses up and his attitude changed again as he said earnestly, "Moreover, I've made some progress while looking for the people monitoring you."

"Who are they?" Song Shuhang asked quickly.

He was quite worried about these people monitoring him from the dark and ready to play dirty tricks. If the target of the other party was Song Shuhang himself, he wasn't afraid of it. He would take whatever measures were called for and do what was necessary.

However, he didn't know if these guys hiding in the dark would change their target from Song Shuhang to his family and friends if they thought it necessary. Therefore, he had to guard against them carefully.

Who was the opposite party? The Sea King and the sea urchin warriors? Someone from the Limitless Demon Sect? Or the influence behind that puppet She Lan that was disassembled into pieces by Senior White?

Song Shuhang thought for a while and came to the conclusion that only these three might want to deal with him.

"Hehe, while your original body was unconscious, I purposely made two ordinary disciples of the Chu Family guard it... as expected, the opposite party revealed its horse leg and gave away itself." Young Master Phoenix Slayer gently pushed his glasses up, and the lenses refracted rays of wisdom. "It was literally a horse leg. The opposite party is black horse spirit that can assume human form after cultivating."

"A black horse spirit?" Song Shuhang was confused.

When did he offend this horse spirit? Why was the opposite party spying on him and harboring evil intentions?

Therefore, he asked out of curiosity, "To which influence does this horse spirit belong? Is it a member of the Limitless Demon Sect?"

The Sea King and the sea urchin warriors were too racist to become friends with this horse spirit. Therefore, only the Limitless

Demon Sect and the influence behind that 'mister' were left.

"It shouldn't have any relationship with the Limitless Demon Sect... if I'm not mistaken, it should belong to the monster organization," Young Master Phoenix Slayer said after pinching his chin.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer was also a monster that had cultivated and reached the stage where he could assume human form. Therefore, he was more knowledgeable about the monster organization than the other seniors of the group.

"The monster organization?" Song Shuhang scratched his head in puzzlement. He really couldn't remember when exactly he offended the monster organization!

Young Master Phoenix Slayer pushed his glasses up and said with a smile, "You don't have to worry. I'll take care of this matter on your behalf. I can guarantee you that this horse spirit won't trouble you anymore in the future."

"Thank you, Senior Phoenix Slayer." Song Shuhang secretly heaved a sigh and added, "Senior, while you're at it, can you help me find out why is this horse spirit monitoring me? I don't think I've offended the monster organization in any way..."

Perhaps because Song Shuhang had finally accepted the silver glove, Young Master Phoenix Slayer said very straightforwardly, "Don't worry, leave it to me!"

Even though it was night, his lenses were still refracting light.



Afterward, Young Master Phoenix Slayer carried Song Shuhang along and brought him to the island where the natives lived.

Right at this time, another senior flew over and arrived next to Song Shuhang.

It was Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman.

"Little friend Song Shuhang, I've finally found you!" Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman said with a laugh. Then, he put away his flying sword and moved toward Song Shuhang as he straightened his black windbreaker, looking incredibly handsome.

"Senior Seven Lives Talisman?" Song Shuhang faintly smiled. He also straightened his kasaya and moved toward the opposite party, saying, "Senior, are my friends well?"

"Your friends are fine. I'll take you to see them," Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman said with a smile.

Then, he brought Song Shuhang and Young Master Phoenix Slayer for a stroll on the island.

The island was covered by a special barrier.

Since it was close to the place where the hand-guided tractor competition was held, Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman arranged a formation around the small island and isolated it from the rest of the world. With that, the natives and Song Shuhang's friends would not be disturbed by the competition.

Hence, even if the hand-guided tractor competition were even noisier, it wouldn't affect the residents of the island.

After entering the formation protecting the small island, Song Shuhang saw a pitch-black world littered with sporadic torches that embellished the night of the small island.

The small island was silent; both the natives and the passengers of the wrecked plane were sleeping.

Song Shuhang said, "Ah... it's already very late!"

Given the time, Gao Moumou and the others should be sleeping already... but it was fine this way too. After all, he was currently wearing a kasaya, and he couldn't even take it off... If they were to see him like this, wouldn't they think that he had decided to become a monk?

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman said, "Let's take a look at your friends first. Then, I'll bring you to my treasure-house so that you can look for something similar to the Blood God Crystal in value and carry out the transaction."

"I'll trouble senior then," Song Shuhang said as he took out the Blood God Crystal from his size-reducing purse, handing it over to Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman.

This Blood God Crystal was like a hot potato for Song Shuhang.

Even while he was breaking through to the Fifth Stage Realm, Young Master Hai didn't forget about the missing Blood God Crystal and still intended to take it from Song Shuhang's hands.

Therefore, he had to carry out the transaction with Senior Seven Lives Talisman as soon as possible. At the time, if Young Master Hai wanted the treasure, he would have to look for Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman instead.

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman received the Blood God Crystal and cautiously took out a wooden box he'd prepared earlier, putting the treasure inside. After all, the Blood God Crystal was a valuable object that would determine how many dragon patterns his Golden Core would have.

Soon after, Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman smiled and said, "Let's go. Let's see your friends first."



In a group of mud houses on the small island.

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman brought Song Shuhang and Young Master Phoenix Slayer toward the mud houses.

Song Shuhang didn't enter the houses. By relying on his eyesight as a cultivator, he saw through the window some familiar figures.

Tubo and Zhuge Zhongyang were sleeping soundly, while Gao Moumou had just gone to sleep.

Gao Moumou's girlfriend Yayi, Lu Fei and her elder sister, and Joseph's daughter Ji Shuangxue were sleeping in a house not too far away.

As for that Zhuge Yue that had forcefully kissed Gao Moumou and whose gender was unknown, she was shrinking all alone in a small and narrow house.

Additionally, the old professor, the black uncle who was an expert in break dance, and all the other passengers that Song Shuhang didn't recognize but entered the mysterious island together with him had all settled down in their respective mud houses.

After seeing that they were safe and sound, Song Shuhang was finally able to feel at ease.

But after taking a look all around, Song Shuhang discovered that his disciple in name, Joseph, was missing. "Eh? Where is Joseph?"

"Joseph? Little friend Shuhang, are you talking about that middle-aged foreigner?" Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman asked.

"Yes, I'm talking about him," Song Shuhang said. After hearing Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman's tone, he wondered what was Joseph up to and where he had gone.

The corner of Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman's mouth rose. "If we're talking about him. He should be down there. I'll bring you to him."

Then, he took Song Shuhang and Young Master Phoenix Slayer along and passed through the forest. Afterward, he pointed toward a faraway place and said, "Little friend Shuhang, is that the Joseph you were talking about?"

Song Shuhang saw Joseph taking the lead and perform the *«Times are Calling»* while twenty natives had arranged themselves into a small square matrix and were enthusiastically imitating

him.

"..." Song Shuhang's heart was in turmoil at this time.

"What are these guys doing?" Young Master Phoenix Slayer asked out of curiosity.

"Hehe, they're practicing a peerless martial technique," Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman said. "They want to master this peerless martial technique and rebel against me someday in the future, hanging me up to a tree and beating me up. I think they want to starve me too~ hehehe."

"Seven Lives Talisman, are you making fun of me?" Young Master Phoenix Slayer asked.

"No, that's really their plan. I've been looking at them practicing this peerless martial technique for a few days already. I can't be wrong after hearing them talk about this matter over and over again. I find it rather amusing," Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman said.

Song Shuhang face-palmed.

Shiet... I absolutely can't let Senior Seven Lives Talisman know about the relationship between me and Joseph....

At the same time, Song Shuhang realized that he made a big mistake by teaching Joseph the <Times are Calling> back then.

After Song Shuhang was done seeing his friends, Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman quickly pulled him along and said, "Little friend Shuhang, let's go. We'll head toward my treasure house now. I've gathered quite a number of good things, I'll assure you that you won't be disappointed."



It was late at night and very quiet...

But the Nine Provinces Number One Group was very lively at this time.

System Notification: Fairy Lychee started a video broadcast.

As soon as the notification appeared, many of the fellow daoists that were aware of what was going on immediately clicked on the pop-up message.

After they clicked on the message, the video started getting broadcast.

In the background of the video should be Medicine Master's immortal cave. There were precious herbs planted all over, as well as pill refining equipment and medical herbs lying on the shelves.

Then, the camera moved and pointed toward a figure in the sky.

Up there was an eastern woman with a carefree smile on her face. Whenever she smiled, two dimples would appear on her cheeks. This woman was Fairy Lychee. But her title had now changed to True Monarch Lychee.

Fairy Lychee was currently itching for a fight and had a bad smile on her face. Moreover, a chubby cultivator was hiding not too far away from her.

The camera moved once more and captured the image of a figure rushing over at high speed with a flying sword.

The incoming person had an anxious expression on their face.

Although he had an unfamiliar face, everyone could guess that this person was precisely Immortal Master Copper Trigram.

Chapter 467: Bewitching screams

"Fairy Lychee? What are you doing in Medicine Master's dwelling?" Immortal Master Copper Trigram waved his hand at Fairy Lychee and smiled brightly.

"Fellow Daoist Copper Trigram, hello." Fairy Lychee sweetly smiled, revealing her two cute dimples. "I was waiting for you."

Immortal Master Copper Trigram was dumbfounded. "Waiting for me?"

"Yes, I've waited for Fellow Daoist Copper Trigram for a very long time." Fairy Lychee smiled even more sweetly.

"Fairy Lychee, did you need something?" Immortal Master Copper Trigram was utterly confused. Soon after, he said with a smile, "Fairy Lychee, let's speak as we walk. Right, I still have to thank you for delivering that disciple of mine to Brother Medicine Master's place... I'm very grateful!"

After saying this much, Immortal Master Copper Trigram controlled his flying sword and approached Fairy Lychee, planning to continue conversing with her while walking side by side.

At this time, Immortal Master Copper Trigram was worried about the injury of his disciple. How severe was the wound Iron Trigram received, and what was his current situation? As his teacher, he was extremely worried.



As Immortal Master Copper Trigram moved closed to her, Fairy Lychee said, "Fellow Daoist Copper Trigram."

"Fairy Lychee, do tell." Immortal Master Copper Trigram nodded.

But right at this time, the standing still Fairy Lychee suddenly sprinted forward.

She jumped high up and made a 180-degree flip in midair, ruthlessly hitting Immortal Master Copper Trigram with her elbow while facing the opposite direction.

At the same time, a scary ray of light flashed through her eyes.

Fairy Lychee had suddenly launched her attack. At this time, she was already a Sixth Stage True Monarch. Moreover, Immortal Master Copper Trigram hadn't expected it in the least...

Therefore, Copper Trigram was only able to use his face to ward-off Fairy Lychee's powerful elbow attack.

"Ouch~" Immortal Master Copper Trigram called out.

His body was sent flying off the flying sword by Fairy Lychee's sudden attack... however, this elbow attack was only the start!

In the next moment, the nimble Fairy Lychee slipped behind Immortal Master Copper Trigram, using a beautiful 'triangle choke' on him. Her two legs coiled around the back of his head and tightened. At the same time, the ankle of her left foot moved toward the ankle of the right foot, locking up Immortal Master Copper Trigram's head.

"Crack~"

Immortal Master Copper Trigram felt as though pincers made of steel were gripping his head. It was very painful. "Ouch~"

"Yiya!" Fairy Lychee cried out in a lovely manner and put all her strength in her legs!

Immortal Master Copper Trigram was swung away and sent flying... at this time, he was dumbstruck and had no idea what was happening.

F*ck, what the hell is happening? Why did Fairy Lychee start treating me like a punching as soon as she saw me?!

Is it possible that Iron Trigram made Fairy Lychee angry, and she thus decided to take it out on me?

Immortal Master Copper Trigram didn't have much time to think when a silhouette suddenly appeared in front of him.

This silhouette that appeared in front of him in the blink of an eye was Fairy Lychee.

"Spinning Kick, yiya!" Fairy Lychee's legs did a split as she started spinning really fast.

Her beautiful white feet spun like a tornado and ruthlessly hit Immortal Master Copper Trigram's body.

"Ouch~" Immortal Master Copper Trigram called out pitifully as he was launched into the sky by the Spinning Kick, flying very high!

"It's not over yet. Have a taste of this!" Fairy Lychee took out an AT4 anti-tank rocket launcher and issued a lovely cry, "Yiya!"

"Boom~" Flames shot out from the rear of the rocket launcher.

After the rocket was fired, it exploded on Immortal Master Copper Trigram's body.

"Ouch~!" Immortal Master Copper Trigram called pitifully as he was shot higher and higher by the attacks, changing into a mass of fireworks after the rocket exploded.

"Again! Take my Bicycle Kick!" Fairy Lychee's body changed into a series of afterimages and whizzed in front of Immortal Master Copper Trigram. "Yiya~"

A beautiful attack launched while upside down high up in the sky!

"Ouch~" Immortal Master Copper Trigram didn't have the strength to revolt and couldn't do anything else except for crying out in pain. He didn't even have the strength to defend himself.

"Shoryuken, yiya!" Fairy Lychee shouted.

"Ouch~" Immortal Master Copper Trigram screamed.

"Spinning Knee Drop, yiya!"

"Ouch~" Immortal Master Copper Trigram screamed again.

"Ascending Double Hit, yiya!"

"Ouch~"

"Explosive mixed martial arts, yiya!"

"Ouch~"

"Some unknown style x18, yiya!"

"Ouch~" Immortal Master Copper Trigram~

"Yiya!"

"Ouch~"



"Done. Fellow Daoist Deng Yima, please come over and help Copper Trigram pick up his pieces. Bring him to the bed I booked for him earlier." Fairy Lychee clapped her hands, satisfied.

The cultivator with a chubby face hiding behind the corner came out... earlier, he was hiding in a secret place in order to stop Immortal Master Copper Trigram from escaping, cutting off all his escape routes.

However, it seemed that he worried for nothing... the pitiful Immortal Master Copper Trigram didn't even have the opportunity to escape.

At this time, there was a compassionate expression on Deng Yima's chubby face.

When he came here to look for Immortal Master Copper Trigram earlier, his heart was filled with rage.

Even if he received a large sum of spirit stones from True Monarch Yellow Mountain that allowed him to balance out his losses, his anger toward this shady fortune teller didn't decrease by one bit.

But now, after seeing Immortal Master Copper Trigram's miserable appearance... an emotion called 'pity' started to well up in his heart.

The anger of a woman—especially one that was as beautiful as a fairy—was truly scary!

All the hatred he felt had disappeared without him realizing.

Deng Yima raised Immortal Master Copper Trigram's corpse and headed toward Medicine Master's immortal cave.

Actually, Immortal Master Copper Trigram's injuries weren't as serious as they looked in the video. While he was high up in the sky and got hit by the anti-tank rocket, he saw Deng Yima hiding in a secret place.

Then, he immediately realized why Fairy Lychee was so angry. It was because he disguised as her once and performed a few shady divinations!

Thereupon, Immortal Master Copper Trigram obediently coordinated with her and played the role of a character that got beaten up in movies.

The only problem was that Fairy Lychee's attacks were really ruthless! Immortal Master Copper Trigram felt so much pain that he had tears streaming down his face.

After this much, the video broadcast came to an end.

After Fairy Lychee turned the video broadcast off, the members of the group didn't write for a while.

After a long time...

Northern River's Loose Cultivator: "Fairy Lychee... that was amazing!"

Wandering Monk Profound Principle: "👍"

Island Master Tian Tiankong: "I'm not sure if it's just my misconception, but I can still hear two words echoing in my ears."

Cave Lord Snow Wolf followed suit. "Yiya!"

Sun Splitting Halberd Guo Da likewise followed suit. "Ouch~"

Fairy Dongfang:: "That's it!"

Vice-Island Master Tian Tianwei: "That's the feeling!"

Treasure Forging Heavenly Mansion's Yang Xian: "That's the feeling!"

Fairy Firefly: "That's the feeling!"

Both Fairy Lychee's lovely cries and Immortal Master Copper Trigram's pitiful yells from the video were addicting. At this time, they were continuously reverberating in everyone's ears.

At this time, Song Shuhang and Young Master Phoenix Slayer followed behind Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman and arrived at his treasure house.

Usually, cultivators hid their treasures in secret places so as to avoid strangers knowing their whereabouts.

Then, if a cultivator died due to unforeseen events, their treasure house, immortal cave, and so on would become the 'buried treasures' that the cultivators of the younger generation would explore after many, many years.

Is it possible that Senior Seven Lives Talisman's treasure house is really hidden on this island where the natives live?

Chapter 468: That's happiness~

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman brought Young Master Phoenix Slayer and Song Shuhang along, arriving at a sandy beach in the rear of the small island.

After arriving at a certain position on the sandy beach, he stretched out his hand and opened a secret door.

It's so easy to enter this treasure house? Isn't Senior Seven Lives Talisman afraid of getting robbed?

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman took the lead and entered the treasure house first. Song Shuhang and Young Master Phoenix Slayer followed after him and entered together.

Below the secret door was a circular bottomless pit that went downward; there was no trace of stairs.

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman stepped on his flying sword and slowly descended. Song Shuhang likewise descended while supported by Young Master Phoenix Slayer's flying sword.

After descending for an unknown amount of time, Song Shuhang finally saw light appear before his eyes. "Have we arrived?"

"We have arrived. My treasure house is right here," Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman said with a smile. Then, he stretched out his finger and pointed forward.

Over there was a hundred meters long white jade turtle; its whole body was made of cast jade, and it looked very lifelike. The light Song Shuhang saw earlier was emitted from the body of the turtle.

The turtle was lying down inside the bottomless pit, perfectly still.

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman laughed and said, "This is the place where my treasure house is located."

Young Master Phoenix Slayer shot a glance at the big turtle and

sighed with emotion. "Fellow Daoist Seven Lives Talisman really has some skills."

"Hehe, my luck was good, and I managed to become friends with this Senior Turtle."

Senior Turtle? Song Shuhang's eyes lit up. Was this huge turtle a living creature?

Just as he was in deep thoughts, Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman brought him and Young Master Phoenix Slayer above the back of the turtle.

"As you know, I made several strange oaths back in the days. Then, I became friends with a Senior Turtle while completing one of the oaths. Afterward, I shifted the position of my treasure house to the body of this Senior Turtle." After saying this much, Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman reached the top of the turtle shell and gently tapped on it.

The top of the turtle shell opened, changing into a door.

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman said, "Let's enter. The treasure house is inside."

Before entering the treasure house, Song Shuhang shot a look at the eyes of the huge turtle below.

From start to end, the jade turtle didn't move in the slightest, and neither did its eyelids.



After entering the turtle shell, Song Shuhang saw a huge white room.

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman and Young Master Phoenix Slayer both hovered midair. It felt as though there was no gravity inside the room.

Inside the room, several wooden shelves, boxes, and chests were floating. Inside them were treasures belonging to Palace Master

Seven Lives Talisman.

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman beckoned to Song Shuhang with his hand and said, "Now then, what does little friend Shuhang need right now?"

"I don't know, either. Senior, what do you suggest?" Song Shuhang asked.

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman held his chin and said, "Little friend Shuhang has already reached the Second Stage. As far as I can see, you already have magical clothes and weapons. You don't lack cultivation techniques either, and you have medicinal pills too..."

"Senior, how about giving me a few good talismans then?" Song Shuhang said. Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman's talismans had saved his life several times already.

In particular, those sword talismans helped Song Shuhang get rid of several powerful enemies that surpassed his rank.

"About talismans... I can at most manufacture talismans of the Fourth Stage due to the limits of my cultivation level. If you want, I can first give you a few talisman papers." After saying this much, Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman stretched out his hand and waved.

Three piles of talisman papers flew over from one of the nearby shelves and directly arrived at Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman's hand.

Then, he counted them as though they were banknotes and gave three samples of twenty papers each to Song Shuhang.

"There are twenty armor talisman, twenty sword talismans, and twenty floating talismans in here. All of them are of the Fourth Stage rank and are somewhat stronger than the ones I gave you the last time. You can consider these sixty talismans as the reward for sending over that professor. It's not part of the transaction for the

Blood God Crystal!" Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman said with a laugh.

Song Shuhang forced a smile and accepted the sixty talismans... he wasn't the one that sent the professor onto the island!

"As for the transaction for the Blood God Crystal, I've prepared several things. Little friend Shuhang, take a look and tell me which one you prefer," Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman said with a smile.

Soon after, he pulled Song Shuhang along and arrived in front of three big chests.

Inside the first chest was a golden rope.

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman explained, "This thing is a duplicate of the Wondrous Binding Rope. When used, it can bind the enemy. Although it's a mere copy, it can still bind a cultivator of the Fifth Stage for a little while. However, it can be used a limited number of times. I used it five times after obtaining it, and now, it can be still used sixteen times. Afterward, it will turn into an ordinary rope."

A rope that could be used to bind enemies sixteen times. Although it was an item with limited uses, it had unlimited potential if used well.

Moreover, it could even bind cultivators of the Fifth Stage for a small amount of time... in a fight between cultivators of the Fifth Stage, a short moment was more than enough to change the outcome of the battle.

Song Shuhang silently nodded; it was a very good treasure!

"Now, the second treasure... this one is a puppet," Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman said as he opened the second chest.

Inside the chest was an exquisite puppet... Song Shuhang found this puppet very familiar. It had the appearance of a western dragon and was around three meters long and two meters tall; the

color of its body was silvery white.

Aside from the color, it was almost the same as that black dragon he saw inside that mister's underground smelted cave.

"This one is a flying puppet manufactured by the Jet-Black Sect. You can switch it on by putting spirit stones inside. If the quality of the spirit stones is high enough, it can even reach supersonic speed. Before little friend Song Shuhang reaches the Fourth Stage and becomes able to use a flying sword, this puppet will be a very good riding tool. The only drawback is that the consumption of spirit stones is quite big," Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman continued his explanation.

Song Shuhang immediately fell in love with the silver puppet after seeing it.

Just like those dragon knights, so cool!

Although this huge dragon is a mere puppet... it's still very cool!

But the most important thing was that after getting his hands on this puppet, Song Shuhang could freely fly in the sky even before reaching the Fourth Stage!

"It seems that little friend Song Shuhang really likes this second treasure!" Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman said with a smile. "However, I still want to recommend you the third treasure."

While speaking, he opened the third chest.

Inside the chest was a small bamboo shoot; it looked very tasty.

"Is this some type of natural treasure? How should one prepare it before eating it?" Song Shuhang asked.

He remembered that Venerable White had discovered two bamboo shoots back then that helped him open the Nose Aperture after he ate them. They tasted really good after Penniless Thief Sect's Candy cooked them up.

"Well, you don't really need to eat this one... although you can

indeed eat it, it would be a waste to do so." Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman quickly waved his hand.

The nearby Young Master Phoenix Slayer looked at the bamboo shoot for a long time and said, "I sense monster qi... no, wait. The spiritual qi on its body is even more abundant. Is this an object that managed to develop intelligence after cultivating?"

"Correct. This small bamboo shoot grew in a place with rich spiritual qi. What is even more incredible is that it didn't turn into a monster. After developing a little bit of intelligence, it started to evolve into a sentient object. As long as one takes good care of it and allows it to mature until it turns into a bamboo, they would automatically obtain a sentient magical treasure without even the need to refine it," Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman said with a smile.

It was an extremely good treasure!

It wasn't easy for a magical treasure to develop intelligence. Not only did one need to invest many natural resources into it, but they also needed to pour their love into it and accompany it day and night. Last but not least, they would need a lot of luck as well.

Even amongst Senior White's treasures, only Meteor Sword had developed a little bit of intelligence.

As for this small bamboo shoot, one only needed to cultivate it and wait until it matured and turned into a bamboo to have a bamboo stick with innate intelligence.

The value of this treasure exceeded by far that of the Blood God Crystal.

"Fellow Daoist Seven Lives Talisman, is there some problem with this small bamboo shoot?" Young Master Phoenix Slayer asked. Why did Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman decide to take out this treasure and exchange it for Song Shuhang's Blood God Crystal?

It was like exchanging a diamond as big as a human head with a coin!

"The bamboo shoot itself doesn't have any problem... I took it out to carry out the transaction because it's not something that belongs to me. The small bamboo shoot is temporarily residing inside my treasure house because it made a deal with me," Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman said. "According to the deal, whenever I'm carrying out a transaction with a fellow daoist inside my treasure house, I must let the other fellow daoist come in contact with the bamboo shoot. The bamboo shoot is waiting to find a master it likes to leave with them."

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman had mysterious origins, and the influence behind him was incredibly powerful. Everyone in the Nine Provinces Number One Group knew about this point. Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman never avoided this topic of conversation, but he still very rarely mentioned to others the influence behind him.

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman had a few strange items in his hands... just like the strange oaths he made when he was young...

Song Shuhang smiled and said, "Is it one of those stories where the object acknowledges its master?"

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman laughed and said, "Yeah, that's the gist of it."

"What do I need to do?" Song Shuhang asked.

"It's very simple, you just have to stretch your hand out and grab it. Then, take a look at how it reacts," Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman said.

Song Shuhang nodded and propped up his kasaya, stretching out his hand toward the small bamboo shoot. At the same time, he thoughtlessly asked, "Ah, yes. Senior Seven Lives Talisman, if

someone gets acknowledged by the small bamboo shoot and manages to carry it away, how long will it take to transform into a bamboo?"

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman held his chin and said, "Hmm... it should turn into a small bamboo in around 500 years. It should be almost mature after 2000 years."

500 years just to grow the bamboo tip!

Just as he was in deep thoughts, Song Shuhang's hand reached the bamboo shoot.

It felt prickly and soft at the same time, very nice to the touch.

Then, Song Shuhang's mind suddenly shook.

Soon after, an illusion of heaven and earth appeared before his eyes.

In the illusion, a colossal bamboo stick was standing between heaven and earth. One end of the bamboo stick pierced the sky, while the other pierced the depths of the earth. From its appearance, it felt as though it wanted to hold both heaven and earth.

"Incredible!" Song Shuhang sighed with emotion.

But right at this time, the stick extracted its lower end from the ground and attacked Song Shuhang!

"Dong~" The sound of two metallic objects colliding echoed, and Song Shuhang felt his head buzzing. He felt incredibly uncomfortable at this time.

This is happiness~

A thunderous sound echoed between heaven and earth.

The sound directly broke the illusion and made Song Shuhang wake up.

At this time, Song Shuhang had already retreated ten or so steps

away from the bamboo shoot, his expression one of shock.

Did it just attack me?

Chapter 469: F*ck, I hit the wrong person

"What happened?" Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman asked in puzzlement. In the past, he had carried out many transactions with fellow daoists he had a good relationship with here in the treasure house. In total, more than twenty fellow daoists had come in contact with the bamboo shoot, but none of them reacted like Song Shuhang did.

Song Shuhang touched his head and said, "The small bamboo shoot turned into a big stick and hit me!"

At this time, he felt a bit dizzy, and he could still see stars dancing before his eyes.

"..." Young Master Phoenix Slayer.

"..." Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman.

From the looks of it, the bamboo shoot didn't like Song Shuhang? It seemed that the bamboo shoot showed its presence just to viciously attack little friend Song Shuhang.

But it was quite strange...

Little friend Song Shuhang was obviously a good person, and all the fellow daoists in the group had a good opinion of him. Such being the case, why did the bamboo shoot come out just to attack him?

Just as Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman was in confusion, the bamboo shoot shook.

Then, it transmitted its thoughts to Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman's mind.

After the thoughts of the small bamboo shoot arrived to his mind, they translated as this: "F*ck... this is rather embarrassing, but I mistook him for someone else just now."

"What?" Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman was dumbfounded.

"It's precisely as I said... I'm sorry. I mistook him for someone else," the small bamboo said.

The corner of Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman's mouth twitched.

Hit the wrong person~?

Now then, since when has this small bamboo shoot developed such a human-like consciousness?

Until now, whenever the small bamboo shoot communicated with him, the transmission would be on and off as though it had just started developing intelligence.

Even when Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman agreed to find the bamboo shoot a master, their conversation was rather difficult because the bamboo shoot couldn't convey its thoughts properly and there were thus many twists and turns.

But from the way it communicated just now, it felt as though its intelligence had already completely developed... moreover, did it just say that it mistook Shuhang for someone else? From the looks of it, this small bamboo shoot already knew a lot of people!

As expected, I picked up a very troublesome thing. Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman rubbed his temples.

"Seven Lives Talisman, help me apologize to that little fellow daoist~" The small bamboo shoot transmitted its voice once more.

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman deeply sighed and said, "Little friend Shuhang, the small bamboo shoot said that it is very embarrassed because it mistook you for someone else and hit you."

Song Shuhang stared at Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman, speechless.

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman was quite embarrassed by having Song Shuhang stare at him like that. He turned his head around and looked at the small bamboo shoot.

The small bamboo shoot was also embarrassed by having Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman stare at it like that.

After a short while, the body of the small bamboo shoot trembled and one of its bamboo leaves fell down. At the same time, it transmitted a thought to Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman.

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman took the bamboo leaf and handed it over to Song Shuhang. "Cough. Little friend Shuhang, you can treat this leaf as an apology. The bamboo shoot decided to gift you this bamboo leaf. Don't look down on it, it can save your life once if you're in danger!"

Song Shuhang took the bamboo leaf and said, "Alright, I accept the apology."

At this time, the chest the small bamboo shoot was residing into closed with a bang. It seemed that it was very embarrassed and didn't want to be seen.



"Cough, cough." Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman coughed twice and pointed toward the first two chests, saying to Song Shuhang, "Little friend Song Shuhang, which one of these two treasures do you prefer? Of course, if you don't like either of them, you can casually choose something else from the treasure house. After all, there are many good things in here, and I can assure you that the worth of the item you'll choose would be only higher and not lower than the Blood God Crystal!"

Song Shuhang pondered for a moment and pointed toward the second chest, saying, "I choose the silver dragon puppet."

Although the copy of the Wondrous Binding Rope also seemed quite good, it didn't have that many uses for the current Song Shuhang.

With his current equipment, talismans, and medicinal pills, he wouldn't need something like the Wondrous Binding Rope to deal

with enemies he could defeat.

And if the enemy was too strong for him to defeat, the Wondrous Binding Rope would be useless as well. For example, if the opposite party was a Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor, the Wondrous Binding Rope would block him only for a short while. But that short amount of time wouldn't be enough for Song Shuhang to escape.

Therefore, he decided to choose the silver dragon puppet.

Since the puppet wasn't a living creature, he could store it inside the size-reducing purse and take it out whenever he needed to use it.

Moreover, Song Shuhang remembered that the black dragon puppet inside the smelted cave had a certain fighting capacity.

"Good, the transaction is complete!" Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman picked up the big chest and gave it Song Shuhang.

Song Shuhang took out his size-reducing purse and stored both the chest and puppet inside.

The transaction was finally complete!



Right at this time, Young Master Phoenix Slayer said, "Fellow Daoist Seven Lives Talisman, are you willing to trade this Wondrous Binding Rope?"

"Fellow Phoenix Slayer, are you interested in it?" Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman asked. "If you want it, you can use something of equivalent value and make a transaction."

"Haha, I just happen to have a few good things here with me. Fellow Daoist Seven Lives Talisman, take a look and tell me if you need them." Young Master Phoenix Slayer took out a small bag.

Form the looks of it, it should also be a size-reducing purse.

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman moved closer and shot a look inside the bag and, satisfied, said, "These are high-quality things!

Give me five of them and you can consider it done."

"Deal, it was a pleasure to do business with you." Young Master Phoenix Slayer took out five of those round scarlet objects from his bag and gave them to Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman. Then, he took the Wondrous Binding Rope.

At this time, both of them had a satisfied expression on their faces.

Although he knew that the transaction between the two seniors had been just and honorable, the scene made Song Shuhang remember about those shady transactions where people were secretly selling porn movies.

"The transaction is complete, let's go. In a while, there will be a meeting of cultivators, and transactions would be carried out there as well. Perhaps we can find a few good things," Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman said. Next, he seemed to have thought of something and said to Song Shuhang, "Little friend Song Shuhang, you should closely follow behind Senior White at the time. If Senior White feels that something is good, you should keep it in mind and try to get your hands on that thing. It's bound to be good!"

Song Shuhang smiled. He had only three spirit stones with him. He got them when the seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group teamed up and killed the blood demon. It was something that Venerable White gave him as a consolation prize after he inspected the body of the blood demon.

What could he buy with three spirit stones in that place where cultivators were carrying out their transactions?

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman and Young Master Phoenix Slayer controlled their flying sword and left the place together with Song Shuhang.

The trio left the turtle shell and headed toward the surface.

On the way, Song Shuhang felt his body cold from head to toe...

"Again that feeling..."

Is the ghost spirit at the South Pole, making a snowman with the penguins?

So cold~ I like playing in the northeast mud~

Ugh!

I'll look for it as soon as I get out of here.



At this time, in a corner of the island.

Several natives were currently surrounding a van.

On the vehicle, the two disciples of the Chu Family were forcing a smile while rubbing their temples. Senior White's flying sword had delivered them on this small island. Afterward, they were immediately surrounded by the natives on patrol.

Given their strength, it wouldn't be difficult for these disciples of the Chu Family to deal with these natives. But they knew that the natives were under the protection of a certain senior. Therefore, it was better if they didn't make a move against them.

Luckily, the natives didn't seem to have any intention to use violence, either.

The natives surrounded the vehicle and seemed very interested in it. They cautiously stretched out their hands and touched the vehicle. Afterward, they bowed their heads and started to discuss something.

The two disciples of the Chu Family could only force a smile. At this time, they had no other choice but to wait for Senior White, or the senior protecting these natives, to come over.

"Ouch~" A painful groan was transmitted from the inside of the van at this time.

It looked like that tall and stout had finally woken up...



Sima Jiang rubbed his head. He remembered that his vehicle went out of control and overturned. After that, he should have lost his senses, right?

But what was happening right now?

After opening his eyes, Sima Jiang discovered that he was lying inside a big van.

Then, after shooting a look at the surrounding area, he heaved a sigh of relief. He discovered that the huge express delivery box was still there.

The girl from the Chu Family, who had a clever look in her eyes and a sweet smile on her face, turned her head around and said, "Uncle, you finally woke up."

Her smiling face was such that it subconsciously removed all kinds of hostile thoughts the first time one saw it.

"Ah? Hello," Sima Jiang said as he rubbed his still somewhat aching forehead. "Are you the ones that saved me? Where are we now?"

"That's the problem. We don't know, either." The girl of the Chu Family shrugged her shoulders.

"?" Sima Jiang was confused and thus looked out of the window.

Soon after, he saw several black-skinned primitive men surrounding and touching the vehicle.

"F*ck!" Sima Jiang subconsciously called out.

Where did these primitive men come from? There shouldn't be people like this within China's borders, right?

Although Sima Jiang's voice wasn't too high, all the natives had a very good hearing. Therefore, they immediately heard his shout.

"This... mister... cursed, that's wrong!" one of the natives said after looking at Sima Jiang through the window of the car.

Although the pronunciation wasn't too clear, that was surely Chinese.

"..." Sima Jiang.

Did I mishear? Or perhaps the pronunciation of their language is similar to Chinese, and it turned into a case of 'soramimi' when I heard it?

At this time, one of the natives coughed and shot a glance at Sima Jiang and the two disciples of the Chu Family in the vehicle. Then, that native waved at them and said, "Confucius said: Is it not a joy to have friends come from afar? It is impolite not to reciprocate!"

"..." Sima Jiang.

Shiet, this is really Chinese!

Moreover, shouldn't 'Is it not a joy to have friends come from afar?' be followed by 'What a pleasure, what a delight'? What the hell was that 'It is impolite not to reciprocate'?

"Idiot, you made a mistake while reciting from memory. Dagen, lower your voice... otherwise, he will hit your palms," one of the nearby natives quickly said.

The native called 'Dagen' quickly covered his mouth, not daring to make a sound.

Sima Jiang rubbed his temples. These natives were unexpectedly able to speak Chinese.

After pondering for a moment, he said to the two disciples of the Chu Family, "Little brother, little sister, should we get out of the vehicle? It seems we can communicate with these guys."

"That's also good." The boy nodded his head.

Although they were only cultivators of the First Stage with two of their apertures opened, they were strong enough to deal with

these natives. Therefore, they weren't afraid.

"In that case, I'll get down first. You stay here and keep an eye on the situation," Sima Jiang said. Soon after, he opened the door and got out of the vehicle with a vigilant look on his face.

But right at this time, a native that carried a gentle look on his face took a step forward and made an 'inviting' gesture, saying, "Confucius said: Friend, this way, please!"

A reference to this song: <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=vTIIMJ9tUc8>

There are several Chinese memes around this Indian song, and when the lyrics are read aloud it feels as though he is saying these words in Chinese.

Check out the link in the note below for more info.

<https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Soramimi>

Chapter 470: Three consecutive dreams

"Shitou, you're also an idiot! Confucius did not 'said' that! If you keep 'said' these wrong things, you'll be tied up and beaten, very painful!"

The native with a gentle look had an embarrassed expression on his face as he said, "Eh? Confucius not 'said' that?"

"Nope~ Confucius never 'said' that!" another native called out.

The corner of Sima Jiang's mouth twitched. He didn't know from where to start to ridicule the dialogue between these natives.

Am I really on an island of natives? The natives aren't only quoting Confucius' sentences, but they are also blabbering about palms getting hit, getting hung up and beaten, pain, and so on things.

Overall, it feels as though I ended up in the wrong play!

"Cough, hello. Excuse me, can you tell me where this place is?" Sima Jiang asked slowly.

"This... I know!" The native with a gentle look on his face smiled and said, "According to what that scary man said... this is a small island in the 'Peaceful Water'."

'Peaceful Water'? What the hell is that supposed to mean?!

Sima Jiang scratched his head for a while. Then, his eyes suddenly lit up. Was it possible that he meant 'Pacific Ocean'?

Am I currently on one of those islands in the Pacific Ocean?

Impossible! Before getting into the car accident, I was in mainland China! That place was very far from the ocean! Why did I suddenly appear on an island in the Pacific Ocean?

Is it possible that several months have passed since the day I lost control of the vehicle and fainted...?

At this time, Sima Jiang was lost in a myriad of thoughts.



Just as Sima Jiang was thinking of inquiring more information from these 'good-natured' natives, three figures slowly came over from a distant place.

One of the figures was tall and thin and was wearing a black windbreaker. He looked both cool and handsome.

One of the figures wore their hair in a casual ponytail and had skin as white as jade. On the face of the figure was a pair of glasses with a thick black frame. Even though it was night, the lenses of the glasses were refracting rays of wisdom.

The last figure had a bald head, and its body was wrapped in a green kasaya. Its facial features weren't clearly visible from afar, but from the looks of it, it seemed to be a young monk?

When the three figures came over, the natives acted as though they had seen a ghost. They orderly arranged themselves into two rows and stood perfectly still.

The man wearing a black windbreaker was a bit faster than the others and arrived beside the natives, saying in a cold voice, "Confucius said: Learning and constantly reviewing..."

The several natives quickly said full of pride, "Learning and constantly reviewing, what a pleasure, what a delight!"

The man wearing a black windbreaker continued, "Is it not a joy to have friends come from afar..."

"Is it not a joy to have friends come from afar? What a pleasure, what a delight!" the natives said with haste.

But amidst all this, one of the natives still answered incorrectly, "Is it not a joy to have friends come from afar? It is impolite not to reciprocate!"

A cold light flashed through the eyes of the man wearing a black

windbreaker. He took out a thick disciplinary ruler out of nowhere and pointed it toward the native that answered incorrectly.

The native had a bitter expression on his face as he arrived in front of the man wearing a windbreaker. Then, he nervously stretched out his black hands.

"Pa!" A loud sound echoed. The disciplinary ruler mercilessly hit the palms of the man.

"Aaaaah~" the native called out in pain.

Even the body of the nearby Sima Jiang couldn't help but twitch, just as though he was experiencing the scene in person.



At this time, the two figures in the rear also slowly came over.

The one that seemed to be a young monk suddenly looked at Sima Jiang as he approached.

"Hey, Little Jiang, how are you!" the young monk said.

It was late at night and very dark; Sima Jiang opened his eyes wide and tried to look in the direction of the young monk.

It was a youngster with kind-looking features. He looked really familiar!

Eh? Wait a moment. Isn't this the student of Jiangnan's university, Song Shuhang?

"Song Shuhang, what are you doing here?" Sima Jiang said, surprised.

"Song Shuhang shrugged his shoulders and replied, "Haha, this place is the... territory of a friend? I came here as a guest.

After coming out of Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman's treasure house, Song Shuhang tried to induce the ghost spirit and locked onto its position. What surprised him was that the ghost spirit was very close to him. It was also on this island of natives.

Thereupon, Song Shuhang started looking for it and finally arrived next to the van and Sima Jiang.

At this time, Song Shuhang could feel that his ghost spirit was inside the van!

But when he tried to recall the ghost spirit, the latter only transmitted over a thought saying that it was powerless. Afterward, an extremely cold feeling also was transmitted over from the ghost spirit through the shared senses.

The more he was approaching the van, the stronger the cold feeling was getting. Song Shuhang felt as though even the joints of his bones had frozen.

Thereupon, he had no choice but to temporarily disable the senses sharing with the ghost spirit and keep active only the position locking feature.



Sima Jiang shot a look at Song Shuhang's bald head and the kasaya he was wearing, asking, "Song Shuhang, have you decided to become a monk?"

As expected, he asked that question!

Song Shuhang faintly sighed and squeezed out a smile, saying, "No, I've never thought of becoming a monk. I had to shave my head due to a small accident... and the kasaya I'm wearing is a gift from a friend. Would you believe me if I were to say that all of this was a mere coincidence?"

Sima Jiang silently nodded... but it was unknown whether he really believed Song Shuhang's words or not.

Song Shuhang faintly sighed once more. After going back, he would look for Dharma King Creation and ask him which level one needed to be to learn that technique that could let one grow their hair back.

Moreover, there was still that problem with True Monarch Yellow Mountain!

Yellow Mountain took Doudou and left quite some time ago... but what about the password to unlock the emerald-green kasaya on his body?!

Without the password, he couldn't take off this kasaya!

❄ ❄ ❄

"In that case, I need to ask you something, Shuhang. Is this place really in the middle of the Pacific Ocean?" Sima Jiang asked.

Song Shuhang smiled and nodded.

Sima Jiang forced a smile... he really ended up in the middle of the Pacific Ocean. Now then, who was bored to the point of delivering him from mainland China to an island in the Pacific Ocean?

"Song Shuhang... is there a way to leave this island?" Sima Jiang asked.

"Little Jiang, don't worry. We'll go back after a few days. At the time, we'll return to China together," Song Shuhang said with a smile.

After hearing these words, Sima Jiang was finally able to relax. As long as he could return to China, it was fine.

❄ ❄ ❄

Song Shuhang followed the traces of the ghost spirit and got into the vehicle.

The two disciples of the Chu Family greeted Song Shuhang and said, "Senior Song, hello."

Although this Mister Song seemed rather young, he was already a cultivator of the Second Stage. Therefore, it wasn't wrong on their part to call him 'senior'.

"Hello to you guys too." Song Shuhang smiled and nodded. Soon after, his gaze fell on the express delivery box.

From what he was sensing... the ghost spirit was inside the box. It was inside this box that had to be delivered to the old ancestor of the Chu Family, Chu Kangbo!

The name of the sender wasn't written on the express delivery box. There were only the words 'To my dear friend Chu Kangbo'.

Song Shuhang stretched out his hand and tried to touch the express delivery box. But as soon as he touched it, he felt a cool feeling transmit to his body even though he had already cut off the senses sharing with the ghost spirit.

The bone-piercing cold made the hand Song Shuhang was using to feel the express delivery box stop for a moment.

"This express delivery box is really strange," Song Shuhang said after forcing a smile.

The nearby Sima Jiang nodded and said, "Yes, it is indeed a bit strange."

The sender of the express delivery deposited the box at this place one month ago, paying a large sum of money in advance.

According to the agreement between Sima Jiang and the sender, the latter would deliver the box if the former were to fail to show up within one month to cancel the delivery.

Therefore, after a month passed, Sima Jiang personally set out to deliver the express delivery to the Chu Family's place.



Song Shuhang had no idea what the ghost spirit was doing inside the box. Even recalling it forcefully was of no use. It just kept transmitting a 'cold' feeling.

Luckily, although it was frozen stiff and trembling, the ghost spirit didn't say that it was in danger.

As long as the ghost spirit wasn't in danger, Song Shuhang didn't want to tear down the express delivery of the ancestor of the Chu Family...

"From the looks of it, I'll have to wait until the express delivery box is delivered to the ancestor of the Chu Family to do something..." Song Shuhang muttered to himself.

Afterward, he forced a smile and gently patted on the box, transmitting a thought to the ghost spirit. If you are in danger, call me immediately.

If the ghost spirit was in danger, he would have no choice but to tear down the express delivery to save it. Afterward, he would find some way to apologize to the ancestor of the Chu Family.

After he transmitted this thought to the ghost spirit, Song Shuhang suddenly felt a strong dizzy feeling transmit back to his head.

Countless scenes flashed through his mind at once.

There was a huge blood pond with several puppet arms and legs scattered all around. Moreover, there were human skins getting air-dried. These pictures belonged to that puppet called She Lan.

Then, there was the picture of a mysterious small island. This time, he could see even more clearly the huge city on this island in the sky. There were incredibly big condors flying in the sky, as well as giant lizards... then, he felt as though there were countless palaces and faintly saw Nine Lanterns' silhouette, as well as her version with long hair. These pictures belonged to the mysterious island?

...In the end, he saw the picture of a huge chunk of ice. Then, an anxious voice came from within the chunk of ice... what was the origin of this scene?

Wait a moment, this ice cold feeling... is it possible that it's something the ghost spirit transmitted over?

"My head is about to explode," Song Shuhang said as he rubbed his temples.

Song Shuhang got extremely sleepy and his eyelids became very heavy, to the point that he couldn't even open his eyes.

He made an effort and turned his head around, saying to Young Master Phoenix Slayer and Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman, "Seniors, is there a place where I can rest?"

"What?" Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman asked in puzzlement.

"I suddenly feel somewhat... exhausted?" As soon as his voice faded, Song Shuhang's body softly fell downward, lying face-down on the seat of the vehicle.

Before long, a rhythmical breathing sound was transmitted over.

Did he fall asleep?

The way he fell asleep was so fast and sound that it would make the people that suffered from insomnia and couldn't sleep for the whole night despair!

"..." Young Master Phoenix Slayer.

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman got a bit worried and moved forward, giving Song Shuhang's body a check.

"He is sleeping for real, and there seems to be nothing out of the ordinary. I got scared for nothing." Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman didn't know whether to laugh or cry.

"Perhaps it's because of me," Young Master Phoenix Slayer said somewhat embarrassed. Song Shuhang had controlled his body for so long with the mental energy of a cultivator of the Second Stage... that should have completely drained his mental energy.

"Forget it. I'll prepare for him a place to rest," Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman said with a smile.

Chapter 471: The grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue

Song Shuhang had a strange dream...

This time, he became a disciple of the Thousand Hands Sect.

In the capacity of an ancient sect that was as famous as the Penniless Thief Sect, the secret technique of the Thousand Hands Sect wasn't inferior to the Emptying Miracle Hands of the Penniless Thief Sect! It was particularly good at removing seals and unearthing hidden treasures!

It was regrettable that the Thousand Hands Sect wasn't as clever as the Penniless Thief Sect and didn't have the restraint a sect of thieves should have. In the end, it disappeared during the course of history, and now, even their heritage was about to disappear.

However, Song Shuhang didn't start dreaming about this person's life from the start. When the dream started, the disciple of the Thousand Hands Sect had already completed his training and left the sect.

With that, Song Shuhang lost the opportunity to study that secret technique of the Thousand Hands Sect that could be compared with the Penniless Thief Sect's Emptying Miracle Hands.

However... why am I dreaming about a disciple of the Thousand Hands Sect?

Did I get in contact with a disciple of the Thousand Hands Sect in real life? Whenever I entered a dreamland before, I always had some relationship with the person I was dreaming about...

But Song Shuhang couldn't remember any disciple of the Thousand Hands Sect at this time!

Just as he was in deep thoughts, the plot of the dreamland started to move forward.

The disciple of the Thousand Hands Sect formed a team with other fellow daoists and went to explore an ancient grave.

According to the rumors, during that time, someone of the 'Venerable' rank left behind a grave. If they could successfully enter the grave, the profits would be quite large.

In the dreamland, the disciple of the Thousand Hands Sect had a very vague impression of the ancient grave.

When Song Shuhang took his place and entered the dreamland, the ancient grave appeared pixelated, and the scenery in the distance was covered by a dense fog.

However, he saw a stone tablet after entering the place, and the stone tablet appeared very clear.

To be more precise, rather than a stone tablet... it was a gravestone!

On the gravestone were inscribed the following words: The grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue.

The stone tablet was very eye-catching. Therefore, even if the memory of this disciple of the Thousand Hands Sect about the grave was rather vague, he still clearly remembered the gravestone.

Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue?

When Song Shuhang saw this name, he found it very familiar.

Therefore, he operated his brain at high speed.

Seventh Stage Venerables... Song Shuhang had come in contact with several people of this rank.

Venerable White, Venerable Tornado, and Venerable Spirit Butterfly!

Then, one of the admins of the Nine Provinces Number One Group, Xuan Nu Sect's Skylark, was also a figure of the Venerable rank.

Additionally, there was another admin of the Nine Provinces Number One Group with high prestige in the group... Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue.

That was it!

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue!

The only difference between him and this Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue was the number... and even the difference in number was of only one.

Were they relatives? Or fellow apprentices?

If they were really fellow apprentices, that was truly terrifying!

The one ranked 6th and the one ranked 7th were both at the Venerable rank, and there were still their fellow apprentices from the 1st to the 5th left...

Venerable First Cultivator of True Virtue, Venerable Second Cultivator of True Virtue... up until Venerable Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue; all of them were Venerables or perhaps even stronger! Just the thought was enough to cause fear.



Just as Song Shuhang's imagination was running wild, the disciple of the Thousand Hands Sect entered Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue's grave.

Since the disciple of the Thousand Hands Sect had a secret technique that allowed him to remove seals, he was the one in charge of removing traps and restrictions, and exploring the place.

From the very beginning, the exploration of the ancient grave proceeded very smoothly.

Although the strength of this disciple of the Thousand Hands Sect was only of the Fourth Stage Realm, it wasn't a problem for him to remove the traps inside Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue's grave.

There were six other fellow daoists that were taking risks alongside him. The faces of these six companions were also pixelated, and Song Shuhang couldn't make out their appearances.

As time passed by, the seven people reached the depths of the grave.

"Our luck isn't bad... our journey up until now was very smooth. But the real challenge starts now. We have to be careful," one of the companions said.

His voice had yet to fade when the sound of an explosion was transmitted from ahead!

Next, Song Shuhang felt a stabbing pain all over his body.

The disciple of the Thousand Hands Sect he was impersonating had been seriously injured by one of the traps of the ancient grave.

Countless sword qi had condensed inside the explosion... piercing the body of the disciple of the Thousand Hands Sect afterward.

However, these innumerable streams of sword qi didn't take the life of this disciple of the Thousand Hands Sect. Instead, they accurately chopped off his four limbs.

All that sword qi acted like a blunt cutting blade and turned him into a human stick.

The pain was unbearable.

"Aaaaaah~" the disciple of the Thousand Hands Sect screamed in pain.

Soon after, his consciousness started to fade... from a side, the screams of his companion was likewise transmitted.



Has the dream come to an end? Song Shuhang thought to himself.

No... the dream is still going on.

Just as Song Shuhang regained his senses, he discovered that the disciple of the Thousand Hands Sect was lying inside a huge blood pond.

"Don't worry. Your companions brought you here... you're safe now." A dull robot-like voice echoed.

The disciple of the Thousand Hands Sect opened his eyes and discovered that he was lying inside a huge blood pond.

A blood pond? Isn't this the same blood pond inside that underground smelted cave?

When he raised his eyes, he discovered that there was a guy that resembled a balloon filled with water next to the blood pond. It was currently laughing strangely while looking at him.

Then, the water balloon-like guy moved forward as he wobbled and installed artificial arms and legs on his body.

This water balloon-like fellow was the same as that 'skin puppet' full of blood!

"This outstanding technique comes from the ancient Jet-Black Sect. It will allow you to have legs and arms that are as convenient to use as your previous ones. Moreover, you won't need to worry about having your arms or legs injured anymore." The skin puppet strangely laughed.

The disciple of the Thousand Hands Sect slightly nodded and didn't move.

"In that case, keep sleeping. Once you wake up, you'll discover that your arms and legs have been restored to what they were before." The water balloon-like man used a strange tone and said gently, "And once you wake up... you'll be the master of this smelted cave!"

The voice of the puppet seemed to have the ability to mesmerize others.

The disciple of the Thousand Hands Sect fainted once more.

Song Shuhang had finally understood which dream he had entered... it was the dream of that She Lan he met in the underground smelted cave. The guy that didn't know that his whole body had been changed into that of a puppet.

That skin puppet on a side was the one that secretly transformed She Lan's body into that of a puppet.

It was unknown what was the person behind this skin puppet scheming.



After an unknown amount of time, that mister called She Lan regained his senses once more.

His eyes started to open slowly... at this time, he was standing in the deepest part of the smelted cave.

In other words, it was the same place where Song Shuhang, Soft Feather, and Liu Jiangyi discovered those human skins getting air-dried when they were plundering the smelted cave.

However, the deepest part of the smelted cave that She Lan saw was a bit different.

Before She Lan started to open his eyes, there was a thick stone gate that slowly descended downward.

Inside the stone gate was concealed a very exquisite wooden puppet.

This wooden puppet was perfectly still and mounted on the wall.

After the stone gate thoroughly descended and closed, a layer of sandy soil covered it, merging it together with the wall of the smelted cave as though they were one entity.

At this time, She Lan's body shook.

He had finally regained his consciousness...

Chapter 472: Another one is happy?

"I am She Lan, a disciple of the Thousand Hands Sect... I'm the master of this smelted cave and the ruler of all puppets!" She Lan muttered to himself. After that moment, he became a completely different person, just as though he had been hypnotized.

At this time, Song Shuhang's consciousness also shook and separated from the dream.

The dream stopped there.

Song Shuhang wasn't able to learn anything useful in this dream... after all, not all dreams could be like Li Tiansu's where he was lucky enough to meet a senior of Daoist Priest Scarlet Heaven's rank that was kind enough to display the Flaming Saber Technique to him.

Anyway, it wasn't like there hadn't been any gains, either... there was unexpectedly a double-layered wall in the depths of that underground smelted cave.

And in there was concealed an exquisite human-like puppet.

What was the relationship between that exquisite human-like puppet and that person that secretly transformed She Lan's body into a puppet?

It's very interesting...

When the time comes, I should go back to that smelted cave and take a look.

After all, he already had to make a trip to the Chu Family's place together with Sima Jiang since his ghost spirit was still stuck in the express delivery box of the ancestor of the Chu Family, Chu Kangbo.

At the time, he might as well bring a powerful senior to explore the smelted cave together so as to avoid something unexpected

happening.



Such being the case, it should be time for me to wake up, right?

Song Shuhang opened his eyes...

...and discovered that he had already returned to his body. This time, he was inside his own body, and he was absolutely sure of it. After all, he was very familiar with each part of his body, whether it was his skin, palms, hands, and so on.

At this time, an air current blew toward him from ahead, changing into a light breeze that caressed his face... moving something on his scalp.

It was both a familiar and unfamiliar feeling... it was the feeling of having hair!

My hair is back?

Eh? Weird... there is something wrong with my realm. My current realm is that of a cultivator of the First Stage, but I've obviously already reached the Second Stage and opened the second dantian!

Is it possible that the dream is still going on?

Right at this time, he discovered that there was someone in front of him.

"Ahaha, you can accompany me in my confinement for a few years. Don't worry, time will fly by once you start meditating." A bald girl laughed aloud without caring for her image. She was holding something that resembled a 'drill' in her hand and was madly drilling into the wall.

"Boom, boom, boom~"

This time, I didn't enter a dream, it seems?

Am I just having an ordinary dream...?

But what's the deal with this dream? It'd be somewhat acceptable if I dream of myself having hair again... but why is this bald girl together with me?

Moreover, did she just say that she wants to be locked up with me for a few years?

What did she mean?

These dreams should at the very least illustrate the entire process and stop confusing me even more!

Just as he was in deep thoughts, the bald girl started laughing and said, "The stone wall ahead isn't solid, there must be a secret room on the other side!"

As she spoke, the bald girl turned her head around and looked at Song Shuhang.

Ah? It's that nun called Nine Lanterns! Why did she appear in my dream?

As before... the dream kept going on.

Song Shuhang and Nine Lanterns entered the secret room.

In there, he saw ten ancient coffins.

The coffin in the center was made of crystal and surrounded by the nearby nine bronze coffins.

Inside the crystal coffin was lying a spirit beast with a long and slender body.

It had deer-like horns, camel-like head, rabbit-like eyes, snake-like neck, clam-like belly, fish-like scales, hawk-like claws, cat-like palms, and cow-like ears. All of these elements were merged into this spotlessly white body.

"A dragon!" Song Shuhang opened his eyes wide. Moreover, it was a completely white dragon!

After the dream reached this point or perhaps when he saw Nine

Lanterns back then... Song Shuhang had more or less guessed what was going on.

This time... he had also entered someone's dream.

However, the target of the dream was Song Shuhang himself. The plot playing in the dreamland should be part of his lost memories.

And the only memories he lost were of the things he experienced on the mysterious island.

So, was this something he experienced on the mysterious island?

Song Shuhang didn't expect that he had seen a real dragon in there!



The story continued, and a skeletal flood dragon drilled out from one of the bronze coffins.

After discussing for a while, the skeletal flood dragon used a few 'skeletal dragon's withered vines' to carry out a transaction with Song Shuhang.

Song Shuhang had Nine Lanterns make a cut on his wrist and poured a bowl's worth of fresh blood in the grooves of the crystal coffin. After he poured his blood inside the groove, it flowed until it completely surrounded the crystal coffin.

However, the little white dragon inside the crystal coffin didn't react to Song Shuhang's blood.

That skeletal flood dragon that had drilled out of the bronze coffin seemed very disappointed.

It was truly regrettable that my blood wasn't able to resonate with this white dragon, Song Shuhang thought to himself.

However, Song Shuhang also felt that it was a good thing that his blood didn't resonate with the white dragon.

His intuition told him that something very troublesome would have happened if his blood had reacted with it.

The skeletal flood dragon that had drilled out of the bronze coffin smiled and sent them off. "The transaction is complete. Now, I'll allow you two to leave this place. Although I would like to chat with you a bit more, this place is full of dragon corpse aura... it would harm your bodies if you were to stay here for too long."

In the dream, Song Shuhang and Nine Lanterns started to leave the chamber tomb.



But just as Song Shuhang was about to leave the tomb, his mind shook.

What's happening now?

In the next moment, the scene before Song Shuhang's eyes changed.

Huge rosy clouds appeared before his eyes, and a colossal white dragon was flying through the clouds.

"Incredible!" Song Shuhang sighed with emotion.

It was a dragon! One of those dragons in legends! It looked so cool while it was dancing amidst the clouds, truly incredible!

After dancing in the air for a while, the huge dragon shot a glance at Song Shuhang.

The dragon and the man looked at each other.

"Ugh! Damned baldy, eat my claw!" The white dragon madly laughed and used one of its claws to pierce the clouds, attacking Song Shuhang.

"Bang!"

The attack sent Song Shuhang flying.

It was super, super, super painful. Song Shuhang felt as though

his mind had been savagely beaten and could only hear a buzzing sound. He felt very uncomfortable at this time.

The white dragon said cheerfully, "This is happiness!"

Soon after, the world before Song Shuhang's eyes started to collapse.

After the white dragon hit him, this dream regarding the mysterious island also seemed to have come to an end.

Even in this dream, he didn't find out anything noteworthy aside from discovering how he obtained those skeletal dragon's withered vines and coming to know of a few other matters related to the mysterious island.

Anyway... why the hell did that white dragon attack me?

"Ah?! ...F*ck, I hit the wrong person..." Before Song Shuhang consciousness completely faded, he heard the depressed shout of the white dragon.

Just what is happening?

This guy also hit the wrong person?

I feel that something similar has happened before!

Both the bamboo stick earlier and the white dragon now mistook me for someone else and immediately attacked me with happy expressions on their faces...

For whom did they mistake me...?

Moreover, this white dragon mentioned a certain 'damned baldy' earlier... does it mean that it's related to my bald head?

Senior Creation, I absolutely want that technique of yours that allowed you to grow back your beautiful shiny black hair!

Chapter 473: Don't sing, we are on the same side!

Song Shuhang slowly opened his eyes.

This time, he had woken up for real. His head was once again bald, and he still felt dizzy and ill.

On the outside, the sun had already risen and a new day had begun.

It's Monday today, right? Therefore, I'll go by the name of 'Virtuous Buddhist Sabersman'...

"Oh, he woke up!" Dharma King Creation, who was sitting next to Song Shuhang, said with a smile, his black hair dashing and shiny.

Song Shuhang rubbed his eyes and said, "Eh? Senior Creation? What are you doing here?"

If Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman, Young Master Phoenix Slayer, or Venerable White were next to him, it would be pretty normal. But why was the one looking after him Dharma King Creation?

"How can I explain it..." Dharma King Creation was a little embarrassed as he said, "While you were dreaming, you kept shouting my name for some reason. Since you were calling my name again and again, the situation got a bit strange and Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman decided to call me over."

Dharma King Creation felt particularly uneasy at this time. After all, him and Song Shuhang hadn't officially met and introduced to each other.

It should have been True Monarch Yellow Mountain or some other fellow daoists that told little friend Song Shuhang about his name, right? In that case, why was Shuhang continuously calling out his name? This matter really put Dharma King Creation under

a lot of pressure!



What? I was continuously calling out Senior Dharma King Creation's name?

F*ck!

It must have been because I wanted to grow my hair back. Therefore, I must have kept thinking about him. But I didn't think I would shout his name while sleeping...

One could well imagine how much Song Shuhang was embarrassed at this time.

"Cough. Such being the case, did little friend Shuhang need my help with something important?" Dharma King Creation asked cautiously.

Song Shuhang quickly seized the opportunity to explain. "Ahaha... there was indeed a matter I needed Senior Creation's help with! I had a nightmare earlier, and I wanted to ask Senior Creation how to get rid of it!"

After hearing this much, Dharma King Creation heaved a sigh of relief and said, "Little friend Shuhang, please say. Oh, right. I heard that little friend Shuhang took seven dao names. What is today's name?"

"It's Monday, and today's dao name is 'Virtuous Buddhist Sabersman'," Song Shuhang made a hollow laugh. Soon after, he said, "Actually, I wanted to ask Senior Creation if there was a method that could let one grow back their hair in a short amount of time just like you did!"

After hearing these words, Dharma King Creation roared with laughter.

"Here I thought that little friend Shuhang would ask for something very difficult! Originally, it was about that small

technique!" After saying this much, as he shot a glance at Song Shuhang's bald and shiny head, understanding feeling welled up in his heart. Both of them were trying their best to get rid of their bald heads!

"Senior Creation, are there any requirements to use this technique? Can I learn it with my current realm?" Song Shuhang asked.

He was afraid that one would need to be in the Third, Fourth, or even higher Stage to display the 'hair growing' technique. If that were the case, there was nothing he could do about it.

"Don't worry. Your strength of the Second Stage rank is more than enough to learn this technique," Dharma King Creation said.

Song Shuhang's eyes immediately lit up. "In that case, I beseech Senior to teach me this technique."

Then, he thought of the custom of the Nine Provinces Number One Group and added, "Senior, is there something you need? What can I give you in exchange for this technique?"

Even if it was just a small technique, if the senior didn't share it with everyone on their own initiative, one should pay something in exchange for learning it, even if it was only a spirit stone.

Dharma King Creation held his chin and said, "It's just a small technique, you don't need to pay anything." But after pondering for a moment, he added, "But if you really can't get over it... how about listening to one of my songs in exchange? I wrote a new song recently, and I haven't let anyone hear it. How about listening to the song and giving me an evaluation?"

"Senior Creation can unexpectedly compose songs and sing? Incredible! Senior, you can start singing, I'll listen very carefully." Song Shuhang gasped in admiration.

Whenever he wasn't using the *Warring Buddha's True Body*, Dharma King Creation looked like one of those unruly and

handsome men. He really gave-off the vibe of a superstar.

"Ok, I'll sing then!" Dharma King Creation had a happy expression on his face. He pinched his throat and tried to warm up his voice. "Aah~ aaaah~ aaah~"

He looked very professional while he was warming up his voice.

"Senior, do you need some music in the background?" Song Shuhang asked.

Dharma King Creation replied, "There is no need. I'll sing a segment of opera music."

Then, Dharma King Creation opened his mouth and started singing.

Ding dong~ lalalala~
It's easy to dodge an open spear~
but hard to ward off a hidden arrow~
I'm standing on top of the city walls~
looking downward at the attackers at the gate~
Ooooooh~

His voice was shocking!

The destructive power of the voice couldn't be described with mere words.

When Dharma King Creation opened his mouth to sing, the sound wave spread in all directions like the shock wave of a nuclear explosion, bringing harm to all and ignoring defenses, not distinguishing between friend and foe.

Song Shuhang bore the brunt of the attack and was completely stunned.

What's the matter? What's happening to my ears?

Song Shuhang felt like a small boat swinging left and right in the middle of a raging tempest, ready to capsize at any moment.

What happened just now?

Am I... dying?

❄ ❄ ❄

At the same time, a lot of panicky voices were transmitted from the outside, as well as the sound of people falling to the ground, objects overturning, and all sorts of weird cries.

"What's the matter? Who is singing? Just who used this sound wave attack?"

"This voice... I'm sure of it, this is the voice of the 'Soul King' Dharma King Creation!"

"My ears, my ears~"

"It's Dharma King Creation? Heavens... no, stop! Mom, save me!"

"Fellow Daoist Dharma Creation, stop singing... we are on the same side!"

"I'm dying~ someone, go stop Dharma King Creation, stop him!"

"My ears are getting raped, save me~"

"This is a full team wipe!"

"Rather than listening to this, I would die, die, die...!"

"Dharma King Creation, stop singing! Don't sing, we are friends~ Ugh—" (sound of vomiting blood)

"Cease fire! Quickly cease fire! We're allied troops~"

"This is bad, my ears are about to undergo a miscarriage after that rape earlier~"

"Quickly break your eardrums! It will save your life!"

"Fairy Dongfang, use your dance to neutralize this voice! Eh? Fairy Dongfang, what happened to you~ Fairy Dongfang~"

❄ ❄ ❄

After an unknown amount of time that felt as long as a century... Song Shuhang was absentmindedly sitting on the bed with a

foolish expression on his face.

What a fearsome sound wave attack!

Actually, that was not it... when Dharma King Creation casually opened his mouth to sing, it felt as though he used a fearsome sound wave attack with something like the Roaring Lion's Technique attached to it.

The devilish voice was capable of flooding one's mind... yes, it literally flooded the minds of the victims. It passed through the ears and directly reached the brain, causing a ruckus in there.

If an average man were to hear this fearsome voice, wouldn't they turn into a fool?

And cultivators with low strength might go insane as well...

❄ ❄ ❄

Outside.

"Is it over? Did I survive that fearsome voice?"

"Fellow Daoist Snow Wolf, what did you say just now? I can see your lips moving, but I didn't hear any sound."

"It's easy to dodge an open spear~ but hard to ward off a hidden arrow~ ...These two lines of the song keep reverberating inside my mind. Absolutely terrifying... when will I be able to forget it?"

"Fellow Daoist Ancient Lake Temple, don't sing! Otherwise, I will feel like singing as well!"

"The house will have to be repaired. It was thoroughly destroyed."

"Leaving all of this aside... Fellow Daoist Northern River, we have to rejoice that we're still alive."

"Eh?" Amidst the group of wailing seniors stood a slim girl with long legs and black hair sprinkling behind her back.

"Was I the only one that found Senior Creation's song very nice

to hear?" Soft Feather muttered to herself.



Inside the house.

After he was done singing, Dharma King Creation was very happy.

In the capacity of a tank, Dharma King Creation had a very powerful aggroing ability. However, his singing technique was even scarier than his aggroing ability. If he wanted to sing, he would do so without any notice.

After he was done singing, the happy Dharma King Creation passed down onto Song Shuhang the small hair growing technique. Since his mood was really good, he guided Song Shuhang step by step while teaching him the technique.

Song Shuhang accepted Dharma King Creation's teachings with a dull expression on his face.

The hair growing technique was very good minor technique and rather convenient to learn.

The only problem was that the length of the hair growth was difficult to control. Sometimes, one's hair might grow only by a few millimeters; at other times, it would reach the waist.

But it didn't really matter. If the hair was too short, he could use the technique again. If the hair was too long, he could cut it!



Song Shuhang was also unaware how he learned this technique. Dharma King Creation taught him, and he noted down everything like a robot. If Dharma King Creation told him to do this or that, he would simply do it while in a confusional state.

Then, after using the hair growing technique on his head, a headful of hair quickly grew until reaching his shoulders.

The black hair was shiny and glossy, just like black pearls.

"Now then, little friend Shuhang... no, wait. Fellow Daoist Virtuous Buddhist Sabersman, I have some matters to attend to. Therefore, I'll take my leave first. You have a good rest. There will also be that cultivators' street market today, make sure not to miss it! You might find a few good things in there," Dharma King Creation said with a smile as he patted Song Shuhang's shoulder and left... his mood was very good.

"The cultivators' street market..." Song Shuhang repeated these words like a robot... it was finally about to begin.

However, leaving the street market aside, the most important thing that Song Shuhang had to do right now was to pack his things.

Very soon, he would have to go for a one-month trip in space.

What kind of things should he prepare?

Food and drink weren't a problem since he could use fasting pills.

However, he needed to find a way to care of stool and urine. Otherwise, those things might end up sticking to his body while he was floating in space.

And aside from these, what else was there...?

Chapter 474: Pearls with the spiritual energy of a beast

Just as Song Shuhang was thinking about the one-month trip into space and wondering what he should bring with him, a senior arrived next to him.

It was Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman.

At this time, his complexion was a bit pale. After arriving next to Song Shuhang, he asked thoughtfully, "Little friend Shuhang, do you feel better now?"

Song Shuhang raised his head in puzzlement. At this time, he still felt his ears buzzing, and stars were dancing before his eyes.

"Dammit, little friend Shuhang was mind-broken," Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman lamented.

Whatever, surviving the roar of the 'Soul King' was already considered a lucky thing itself.

"Senior, what did you say?" Song Shuhang shook his head and said, "I can't hear too well now, and even my reaction time has slowed down by several times. My brain can't read lips, either."

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman patted Song Shuhang's head with a compassionate look on his face... little friend Shuhang had really suffered a lot this time.

"It's alright, just follow me. I'll bring you to your friends. While we're at it, let's eat breakfast as well," Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman said with a smile.



Gao Moumou, Tubo, Zhuge Zhongyang, Lu Fei, her elder sister, and the other 'teachers' had just woken up.

After rinsing their mouths and washing their faces, they

prepared to eat breakfast.

On this island of natives, while houses and clothes were not really to their liking, the food on the other hand was pretty good. They could eat rich food and delicacies of every kind. Moreover, it was 100% natural and pollution-free.

Each day, breakfast would be a buffet, and one could eat whatever they felt like. Chinese style breakfast, Western style breakfast... if they wanted to eat something, they could eat it.

Just as Gao Moumou, Tubo, and the others were about to enter the dining room, they heard a strange singing voice transmit over from afar.

That voice was simply bewitching. Although it was transmitted from a very far away place, each word was clearly audible to all the present as the sound entered their ears. Moreover, this voice had the ability to literally kill one's brain. After listening at it for a while, all the present felt their brains collapse, and their thought process slowed down by several times.

This happened even though Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman had arranged several formations on the island that greatly weakened the effects of Dharma King Creation's sound wave attack. Otherwise, this devilish sound would have flooded their minds and turned all the people on the island into fools.

After the voice faded away, Gao Moumou, Tubo, and the others were still stiffly standing in their original places. At this time, their minds were completely blank, and they had lost their ability to think and act for a short period of time.

After quite a while, Gao Moumou subconsciously said, "Was that the singing voice of that female monster, the siren?"

"No, the voice we heard just now was that of a man. Even if it was a siren, it should be a male one," Tubo said.

Zhuge Zhongyang sighed with emotion and said, "One surely

needs to be talented to sing like this!"

Just as everybody was discussing, two figures appeared outside the dining room.

One was the master of the island, the guy wearing a black windbreaker.

The other one was a young man wearing a kasaya, as well as long hair that reached his shoulders.

Was this young man a monk that had decided to let his hair grow long?



Eh? Wait a moment!

"Shuhang!" Gao Moumou called out.

Wasn't this young man with shoulder-length hair and a stupid look on his face their good friend Song Shuhang?

But when did Song Shuhang's hair grow so long? When the airplane crashed, his hair was short! And what was the deal with this kasaya he was wearing?

Song Shuhang absentmindedly looked at Gao Moumou and Tubo. Even after quite a while, there wasn't any change in his expression.

Tubo went ahead and, somewhat worried, asked, "Master of the island, did something happen to Shuhang?"

"Ah! It's a long story... anyway, did you hear that singing voice just now?" Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman asked with a pale look on his face.

"The singing voice of the siren?" Tubo asked subconsciously.

"Siren? Hahaha!" Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman laughed loudly. Soon after, he said, "We all call that singer 'Soul King'. Even if there was quite some distance, you should have also felt the lethality of that sound, right? Little friend Song Shuhang was too

close and bore the brunt of the attack of the Soul King's music. The voice passed through his ears and flooded his mind. Under these circumstances, his reaction speed is slowed down a bit. But don't worry, he should recover in half a day given the strength of his body."

He would still need half a day to recover?

"Ah! It's Tubo and Gao Moumou!" Song Shuhang replied after a long time and forced a smile. His current situation was very similar to when he was controlling Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body earlier.

He felt as though there was a lag between all his actions. That three seconds delay while he was controlling Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body was enough to give him a lot of trouble. Now, the condition of his body was even worse. The delay went from three to eleven seconds, and it was even longer sometimes.

"Anyway, I'll leave little friend Song Shuhang to you teachers for now. I have some matters to deal with so I'll take my leave first. We'll see each other at noon," Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman said.



Tubo and Gao Moumou helped Song Shuhang and made him sit down. Zhuge Zhongyang, Zhuge Yue, Lu Fei, and her elder sister all gathered over.

Joseph and his daughter weren't here yet. For some reason, Joseph was getting up later and later nowadays...

Gao Moumou and Yayi went together to get some breakfast for Song Shuhang.

Somewhat worried, Tubo asked, "Shuhang, where have you been for the past few days? How come you weren't with us?"

"Don't speak so quickly, slow down a bit. Both my ears and brain are buzzing. It's very difficult for me to properly hear your words,"

Song Shuhang replied with a forced smile. "My luck was pretty good. Although I fell into the sea when the plane crashed, a friend quickly came over and found me, saving my life. Afterward, I returned to China with that friend. But then, I discovered that you guys were here on this little island. So I decided to come over with that friend to take a look at you guys."

The breakfast wasn't bad. Fried eggs, thin pancakes, and soybean milk were all things that Song Shuhang liked. Song Shuhang trembling hands made an effort and picked up the food, bringing it to his mouth.

Lu Fei asked out of curiosity, "Shuhang, what's the deal with that kasaya you're wearing?"

"Ah..." After a while, Song Shuhang replied, "It's something that another friend gifted me."

While they were eating, Tubo, Gao Moumou, and the others asked some questions out of concern.

After seeing that Song Shuhang was safe, Gao Moumou and Tubo were finally able to heave a sigh of relief.



Song Shuhang kept eating the breakfast with much difficulty while listening to Gao Moumou and the others telling him about the interesting things that happened while they were giving lectures to the natives.

Then, Song Shuhang suddenly paused and turned his head around, looking toward two positions at the back of the dining table.

A businesswoman was sitting with her friend there, eating her breakfast. A pearl the size of a pigeon egg was hanging around her neck.

Song Shuhang could feel spiritual energy emitted from the pigeon egg-sized pearl. This spiritual energy was different than the

pure spiritual energy inside spirit stones. The aura of an animal seemed to be mixed within this spiritual energy.

Perhaps because she felt Song Shuhang gaze, the businesswoman raised her head and looked at him while eating her breakfast.

After seeing Song Shuhang, the woman faintly smiled at him... it was a very strange feeling. Although it was her first time seeing Song Shuhang, she felt that he was a trustworthy person. Even if the other party was staring at her in a rather rude manner, she didn't dislike it.

When she saw this man, she felt as though he was a very reliable person, just like someone that had saved her life in the past.

Song Shuhang could only smile somewhat embarrassed.

"Were you looking at this?" the businesswoman asked as she held the pearl hanging around her neck. She had very keen senses and discovered that Song Shuhang was staring at the pearl hanging around her neck.

"Yes, I feel that there is something strange with that pearl," Song Shuhang said as he nodded. It wasn't a spirit stone, and yet there was a lot of spiritual energy inside, as well as the aura of an animal. What was this thing?

Since there is spiritual energy inside, it should be a treasure, right?

Such being the case, why didn't Senior Seven Lives Talisman pay attention to the pearl hanging around the neck of this businesswoman?

After all, Senior Seven Lives Talisman has been in contact with this group of 'teachers' for a very long period of time. It should be impossible for him not to notice the pearl...

Perhaps an item of this level is not even worth mentioning for someone of Senior Seven Lives Talisman's level?

Anyway, regardless of why Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman ignored the pearl, Song Shuhang felt a strange feeling in his guts. He wanted this pearl that had the aura of an animal inside!

His intuition was screaming at him that this item would be very useful for his practice!

"I also don't know where this thing comes from. I'm sure I didn't have it with me before the plane crashed. But after I woke up and found myself on this small island, I discovered that I had this pearl in my pocket," the businesswoman said as she tried to recall what had happened.

Then, after pondering for a moment, she grabbed the pearl around her neck and did something that was out of Song Shuhang's expectations... she threw the pearl toward him.

"This is a gift for you~" the businesswoman said.

Song Shuhang tried to catch the pearl in a flurry.

"Hehe." The businesswoman smiled.

"Ah? Le'er, did you take a liking for that little brother?" That slightly plump but very attractive air hostess next to the businesswoman made fun of her.

"That's not it." The businesswoman named Le'er gave her a supercilious look.

She only felt that she owed this young man a favor. Therefore, she subconsciously thought of doing him this favor in return.

Song Shuhang held onto the pearl, somewhat embarrassed. After a while, he scratched his head and said, "Thank you, Miss. It's true that I liked this pearl... but it's a very valuable item. I cannot take it without giving you something else in return. Can I use money to buy it?"

The businesswoman felt a bit strange after she was called 'Miss'.

She smiled and said, "There is no need. It's just a pearl, and even I

don't know where it comes from. You can take it."

"But it's something very valuable. Although I can't tell what this thing is either, I can assure you that it's an item whose value goes far beyond your imagination."

"Pfff~" Le'er found Song Shuhang's serious expression very amusing. She smiled and said, "Alright, it's up to you then."

Given how serious the expression of the young man before her eyes was, she felt that he would return the pearl to her if she didn't agree to his proposal...

Song Shuhang pondered for a moment and stretched out his hand toward his clothes. He seized the opportunity and took out of his size-reducing purse a big strap of money.

Chapter 475: How about exploring an ancient grave?

At first, Song Shuhang wanted to use something else to carry out the transaction with this businesswoman named Le'er. Even if everyone couldn't do without it in their lives, it felt a bit rude to bring up something like money under these circumstances.

However, amongst the things Song Shuhang had with him, there was nothing that was suitable for Miss Le'er.

After pondering for a moment, he decided that if it was of poor taste, so be it. At this time, he had no choice but to use money to solve the matter.

"I don't know the exact value of this pearl. Is it fine if I give you 100,000 RMB now and add the remaining difference in price later when I ask my friend to properly assess the value of this thing?" Song Shuhang delivered the big strap of money to Le'er.

"Pfff~" Le'er didn't know whether to laugh or cry after seeing that strap of money. "You carried such a big a strap of money while leaving home? Isn't that a bit suspicious?"

"About that, my friends and I were planning to go on a vacation on an island abroad. Since the island was outside of China's borders, it would be quite troublesome to withdraw money. Therefore, I simply decided to bring quite a bit of cash with me," Song Shuhang explained.

"Still, you're quite amusing," Le'er said with a smile. She took the strap of money and said, "In that case, you can consider the transaction to be over. As for the remaining money, don't mention it! Otherwise, I will get angry!"

"Alright... thanks," Song Shuhang said earnestly.

From the looks of it, this Miss Le'er didn't seem to be someone that lacked money.

Now, Song Shuhang owned a favor and had to bear it in mind.



After Song Shuhang returned to his seat, Tubo stared at the pearl in his hand and asked, "Shuhang, what is that thing?"

"I don't know," Song Shuhang replied.

"You still bought it even if you don't know?" Tubo didn't know whether to laugh or cry.

"It's something very valuable. I'm sure of it," Song Shuhang said with a smile. Then, he cautiously stored the pearl in his clothes.

But right at this time...

"Bang!"

The front door of the dining room was pushed open.

A figure quickly barged into the dining room and trotted next to Song Shuhang.

"Senior Song, I've finally found you!" the figure said with a smile as it grabbed Song Shuhang's arm. "Senior Song, let's go. Senior White told me to come over and pick you up. The cultivators' street market is about to start!"

"Eh? Soft Feather? Wait a moment, I'm still eating!" Song Shuhang called out.

"There is no time, we have to go immediately!" Soft Feather grabbed Song Shuhang and started to run.

Soft Feather had already reached the peak of the Third Stage, and Song Shuhang had no means to resist her. Therefore, he was dragged along just like that~

After running up to the entrance of the dining room, Soft Feather suddenly thought of something.

She turned her head around and waved at Gao Moumou, Tubo, and the others, saying, "Right, I remember you. You are Senior

Song's roommates, right? Hahaha, Senior Song and I have a matter we need to attend to. Therefore, we'll leave first! In a while, I'll look for you so that we can have some fun together!"

After saying this much, she didn't wait for Gao Moumou and the others to reply and run away while dragging Song Shuhang along.

"..." Gao Moumou.

"..." Tubo.

"There is something wrong!" Tubo pounded the table and shouted, "Isn't that girl with long legs the one that Song Shuhang said was his other elder sister? Why was she calling him 'senior'?"

"She must be his girlfriend, right?" Yayi said. "After looking at the interaction between Song Shuhang and her, I'm sure that their relationship isn't that of an elder sister and a younger brother. Both an elder sister and a senior, huh...? Is it possible that she and Song Shuhang are having fun while role-playing between lovers?"

"Role-playing between lovers? Like, today she's an elder sister, and tomorrow she will become someone of the younger generation? And after a few days, she'll become his secretary, and so on? I can't believe that Song Shuhang would play such a shameful game," Gao Moumou said as he clenched his teeth. He and Yayi hadn't ever done something like this!



Soft Feather dragged Song Shuhang along and reached the seashore. Then, she climbed on the water scooter.

"Senior Song, get on. I'll drive!" Soft Feather said excitedly.

Song Shuhang probed, "Do you know how to drive?"

"Of course. It was me who drove all the way here!" Soft Feather smiled and said, "Senior Song, don't look down on me. Whether it's a plane or a car, as long as it's a means of transportation, I can drive it. Anyway, hold tight onto me. The speed might be a bit

fast."

Song Shuhang's cautiously stretched out his hand and grabbed the corner of Soft Feather's clothes.

Then, Soft Feather started operating the water scooter.

And its speed truly shocked Song Shuhang... it was going at 20 km/h at most!

Was this what Soft Feather meant by 'the speed might a bit fast'?

"Ah! The formation expired," Soft Feather said disgruntled. "These modern means of transportation are very fragile. After you add a formation to them and it expires, they turn into scrap. They aren't as durable as hand-guided tractors. Anyway, forget it. There is not that much of a distance. We might as well proceed slowly."

"Ahaha, it's fine. Going slowly is very safe!" Song gave the thumbs up. It was truly great that this thing wasn't going super fast.

"Right, Senior Song. Senior White told me to return this phone to you. The modification process has been completed. As long as you're on Earth, you'll be able to receive signal unless a powerful formation is causing interference." Soft Feather turned her body around and delivered the smartphone to Song Shuhang.

"The modification process has been completed? So fast?" Song Shuhang said as he received his mobile phone. It was like meeting a family member once again.

Since the speed of the vehicle wasn't too fast, Song Shuhang relaxed and swiped on the screen of the phone, opening the Nine Provinces Number One Group.

"Ding!"

System Notification: Spirit Butterfly Island's Soft Feather shared an MP3 file.

"Soft Feather, what did you share?" Song Shuhang asked out of

curiosity. But in the meantime, he had already clicked on the MP3 file.

"It's that song Senior Creation sang earlier. I felt that it was very pleasant to hear. Therefore, I recorded it and shared it within the group," Soft Feather replied without turning her head.

"..." Song Shuhang.

Mom!

I have to quickly turn it off before the music starts!

However, his 'slow reaction speed disease' flared up once again. Although he clicked several times, he failed to stop the music from playing.

Why is my goddamn hand so useless?

In the next moment...

Ding dong~ lalalala~

It's easy to dodge an open spear~

but hard to ward off a hidden arrow~

I'm standing on top of the city walls~

looking downward at the attackers at the gate~

Ooooooh~

The unique voice that belonged to Dharma King Creation, the Soul King, exploded.

July 22th, 2019. Monday, the weather was clear.

Fellow Daoist Virtuous Buddhist Sabersman... died.

Luckily, this time he heard the voice of the Soul King through a recording, and there wasn't any sound wave attack. This allowed Fellow Daoist Virtuous Buddhist Sabersman to die in a rather peaceful manner without suffering too much. He managed to find fortune amidst misfortune.



However, Song Shuhang wasn't the only one to 'die' this time.

In the Nine Provinces Number One Group.

Island Master Tian Tiankong: "My HP bar is already empty..."

Vice-Island Master Tian Tianwei: "I died in action together with my stupid elder brother..."

Treasure Forging Heavenly Mansion's Yang Xian: "My... my ears..."

Fairy Firefly: "No, I can't die yet... I have to do a favor to all humanity! @Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue, @True Monarch Yellow Mountain, @Daluo Sect's True Monarch Rain Moon, @Xuan Nu Sect's Skylark, @Su Clan's Seven... come out! You absolutely can't miss this beautiful song!"

Very soon, several seniors popped out after they were summoned.

Fifteen seconds later...

[System Notification: Fairy Firefly was muted by the administrator of the group, Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue, for 1 day.]

[System Notification: Spirit Butterfly Island's Soft Feather was muted by the administrator of the group, Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue, for 1 day.]

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue: "Dammit, Dharma King Creation's voice exploded so suddenly that I wasn't able to guard in the least. The poor ears of this Venerable! Fairy Firefly, did Fellow Daoist Thrice Reckless hack into your account or something?"

Stressed by a Mountain of Books: "..."

At the same time, Song Shuhang poked Soft Feather and said, "Soft Feather, you were muted."

"Eeeh? Why? I didn't do anything bad! Who muted me?" Soft

Feather said resentfully.

"It was Senior Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue," Song Shuhang said with a bitter smile on his face.

"Why did he mute me?" Soft Feather called out.

"The reason is that MP3 file you sent earlier," Song Shuhang replied.

"Why is that? It was such a spicy and pleasant to hear music. I was so good to share it with the seniors in the group, and they didn't even appreciate it," Soft Feather said as she pouted her lips, her expression unhappy.

"..." Song Shuhang.

A spicy and pleasant to hear music? Did Soft Feather's music-related cell develop the wrong way? From which viewpoint can she like such a fearsome song?

Soft Feather kept pouting her lips and firmly swore, "The next time, I absolutely won't share good music with the seniors."

After hearing these words, Song Shuhang felt quite relieved.

At the same time, he swiped on the screen of his smartphone and gazed at 'Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue' who had just sent a message.

He couldn't help but recall that dream from yesterday where the disciple of the Thousand Hands Sect, She Lan, was exploring Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue's grave.

Was there any relationship between Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue and Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue? Did Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue really have five senior brothers and sisters named First, Second Third, Fourth, and Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue?

After pondering for a while, Song Shuhang decided to send a message in the Nine Provinces Number One Group.

Stressed by a Mountain of Books: "Senior Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue, do you know a certain 'Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue'?"

Song Shuhang quickly received a reply after he sent the message.

It was the always online holy warrior, Northern River's Loose Cultivator. "Eh? Little friend Song Shuhang knows about Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue?"

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue replied almost at the same time. "Little friend Shuhang, from whom did you hear about Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue?"

"Senior Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue, is Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue your senior brother?" Song Shuhang cautiously asked. After all, he saw Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue's grave. If they were really fellow apprentices, wouldn't it mean that Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue was already dead?

"No, I don't have a senior brother called Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue," Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue replied.

"I feel relieved then." Song Shuhang heaved a sigh and said, "Actually, I got this information from a disciple of the Thousand Hands Sect I met yesterday. This disciple of the Thousand Hands Sect once explored the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue. In other words, Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue should be already dead."

"Ooooh, so it was Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue's grave!" Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue quickly replied.

"Senior, do you know about it?" Song Shuhang asked out of curiosity.

"Yes, I know about it. That grave is currently located on a

meteorite in space. Has anyone in the group been to Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue's grave yet?"

"I don't think so, I remember that I've only been to the grave of True Monarch Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue," Northern River's Loose Cultivator replied.

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue: "Ahahaha, it should be right about time. Today, we can keep working on the ancient grave exploring session of the Nine Provinces Number One Group. Which session is this one? The 13th, I think?"

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue also added: "Then, little friend Song Shuhang, would you like to explore an ancient grave as well?"

Chapter 476: Borrowing spirit stones

Stressed by a Mountain of Books: "Explore an ancient grave?"

Moreover, Song Shuhang paid great attention to what Northern River's Loose Cultivator said earlier. The seniors of the group explored the grave of True Monarch Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue? If one were to add to the mix the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue and Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue... no one would believe that there wasn't any relationship between these three!

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue sent another message in the Nine Provinces Number One Group. "Immortal caves, ruins, and ancient graves are the right places to explore if cultivators wish for 'fortuitous encounters'. Inside a lot of graves belonging to ancient cultivators, one can find the heritage that these cultivators left behind. Therefore, taking risks and exploring ancient graves is something that cultivators absolutely can't miss. Little friend Shuhang, do you want to give it a try as well?"

"I would like to very much, but when are you going to explore the grave?" Song Shuhang asked. After all, he had a few matters to take care in the near future.

Before going into space, he wanted to go to the territory of the Chu Family together with Sima Jiang. His ghost spirit was still stuck inside the express delivery box and didn't want to come out.

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue: "As for the time... I've heard that little friend Song Shuhang is going to space for one month, is that correct?"

"Haha, haha..." Song Shuhang typed.

"In that case, I'll contact you after you return from space. Right, isn't there a cultivators' street market going on next to you guys? Get a few items that are useful for exploring graves!" Venerable

Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said.

"Items that are useful to explore graves? For example?" Song Shuhang asked. They weren't going to get shovels and so just as ordinary graverobbers, right?

"It's up to you! However, ancient graves are usually dark, have layers upon layers of defensive mechanisms, and all sorts of deadly poisons. As long as you prepare a few things that can help you deal with unexpected matters, it's all good," Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said.

Song Shuhang silently sent a nodding emoji.

"I'll meet you in space when the time comes 😊," Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said with a smile.

"Alright, Senior," Song Shuhang replied.

Regardless of what relationship there was between Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue and 'Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue', he would find out at the time.

At the same time, he thought of another matter... in the memories of that disciple of the Thousand Hands Sect, She Lan, it didn't seem as though the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue was in space...?

Although the whole graveyard was pixelated, that disciple of the Thousand Hands Sect didn't have any special defense around his body and was breathing normally.

"Senior Song, we're here." Soft Feather stopped the water scooter.

This time, the cultivators' street market was held on the water.

It wasn't really on the surface of the water but on a huge... plank.

Song Shuhang estimated that the length and width of this plank were both 1000 meters.

Above this plank were engraved several magical runes and all kinds of formations.

Even though it was day, the light emitted from runes and formations was incomparably dazzling.

Song Shuhang jumped down from the water scooter and gently stepped on the plank, saying, "Is this some sort of treasure?"

"This is the floor of the immortal palace from Venerable Tornado's sect," Soft Feather replied.

"What?" Song Shuhang stared at the 1000 meters long and wide plank. This was a floor? Who would need such a floor? A giant that was 2000 meters tall?

Soft Feather smiled and explained, "Venerable Tornado's sect, the Realm Crossing Sect, is specialized in space-type magical techniques. The Realm Crossing Sect has been building a colossal palace since 200 years ago. According to their plans, they would usually keep the immortal palace in a state where it's shrunk by a thousand times through a magical technique. In times of need, they would remove the above-mentioned space-type magical technique and have its size suddenly increase by a thousand times, turning into a fortress.

However, the Realm Crossing Sect was only able to prepare the foundation up until now, and even the plank they have to place on the floor is only half-prepared. This time, the cultivators' street market just happened to need a platform that could be positioned on the surface of the sea. Therefore, Venerable Tornado borrowed the floor from his sect and released its original form over here," Soft Feather replied.

Just in this fashion, this gigantic floor that had a size of 1000x1000 meters became the platform on which the cultivators' street market was held.

Afterward, these cultivators that had come from all sides set up

their stalls on the huge plank according to the rules.

Some cultivators just sat on the ground and used a piece of cloth as their 'stall'.

Others had prepared earlier and set up exquisite counters.

Some had even built small buildings.

The street market was finally open, and it was incredibly lively.

* * *

After stepping on the plank, Song Shuhang saw a stall on the side that was surrounded by several cultivators.

Song Shuhang curiously went over and shot a glance at the goods this stall was selling.

This stall was selling things of the size of a pigeon's egg. One could also faintly see shadows moving within them.

These things that resembled the eggs of a pigeon were divided into several types. Some of them could be bought with spirit stones of the Second Stage, others with spirit stones of the Third Stage, etc., until reaching the Fifth Stage.

Song Shuhang asked out of curiosity, "Eh? What are these things?"

Soft Feather likewise squeezed through the crowd and shot a glance at the goods, saying, "This is a characteristic stall that would appear every year in the cultivators' street market. These things are called 'spirit pearls' and are treasures related to 'spirit beasts'.

After getting their hands on spirit pearls, cultivators don't need to refine them and can eat them directly. The effects will be different according to the quality of the spirit pearl. It's an item that can increase a cultivator's true qi or spiritual energy, and just like medicinal pills, it's a treasure that can assist in one's practice. A few sects specialized in raising spirit beasts can obtain a lot of

these spirit pearls every year.

However, spirit pearls are marvelous objects... spirit pearls of the same rank are perfectly identical when seen from the outside and there isn't any difference amongst them. Only after a cultivator eats them will they know by how much their true qi or spiritual energy increased."

"In other words, the effects these things would have to completely depend on one's luck... it's just like drawing lots." Song Shuhang understood.

If one's luck was good, they could spend a spirit stone and obtain an increase in spiritual energy several times, if not tens of times, higher than the original amount stored within the spirit stone. But if one's luck wasn't good, they would surely suffer a loss.

"Yes, that's it... however, these things aren't too expensive. Therefore, there will be a lot of people at each year's street market that will buy them and join in the fun. Moreover, they taste really good. I like the flavor a lot, " Soft Feather said with a smile. Then, she arrived next to the stall and used ten spirit stones of the Fourth Stage to buy ten spirit pearls of the fourth rank, and four spirit stones of the Second Stage to buy four spirit pearls of the second rank.

She delivered the four spirit pearls of the second rank to Song Shuhang and said, "Senior Song, come and have a taste. Their flavor is pretty good."

Song Shuhang took the spirit pearl and bit it.

The flavor was indeed good. It felt as though one was eating chocolate. After he swallowed it down, the interior of his dantian became hot, and the quantity of true qi increased.

Song Shuhang had never used spirit stones to practice. Therefore, he had no idea if the increase in true qi was higher or lower than that of a spirit stone.

"Now then, this is a stall where one can only rely on their luck... so if Senior White were to come here and choose a few spirit pearls, he would surely get the good ones, right?" Song Shuhang said with a smile.

"Hmm... but I don't really like the taste of spirit pearls. I find it somewhat bitter. But if you want to buy them, I can choose some for you. How about it, Shuhang?" Venerable White appeared beside Song Shuhang out of nowhere and said as he held his chin.

"Eh? Senior White, you finished so quickly?" Song Shuhang said.

"I just had to show my face at the inauguration of the cultivators' street market. I'm not in charge of the other matters," Venerable White said as he squatted beside the stall and waved at Song Shuhang, saying, "How many spirit stones do you have with you?"

Song Shuhang checked his whole property... Senior White decided to give him three spirit stones as a consolation prize after the seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group killed the blood demon. Then, he found two ugly things that resembled spirit stones on the bodies of the sea urchin warriors. Afterward, he found another ten spirit stones while he was exploring She Lan's underground smelted cave.

"That's it? Don't you have more?" Venerable White held the spirit stones and stared at Song Shuhang.

"I don't." Song Shuhang shook his head.

"Shuhang, you are really poor, aren't you," Venerable White said.

Forgive me for being poor! Song Shuhang had tears streaming down his face. Moreover, he had obtained all these spirit stones in the past two days. Before that, Song Shuhang didn't even know what spirit stones were!

After all, it hadn't been long since he had become a cultivator.

"Three spirit stones of the Fourth Stage, ten spirit stones of the Third Stage, two spirit stones of the Second Stage... just enough to

buy 402 spirit pearls of the second rank," Venerable White said as he handed the spirit stones to the stall vendor.

"Eh? You're spending all of them?" Song Shuhang asked. This was the cultivators' street market, and he had come here to join in the fun and broaden his horizon. But now, he was going to spend all this property as soon as he set foot in this place?

"There is no use in keeping these spirit stones... moreover, it's rather troublesome to use spirit stones to practice while in the Second Stage. It's better if you just eat spirit pearls. The taste is not that bad, and you can fill your belly as well. After you go into space and become sick of eating fasting pills, you can eat spirit pearls for a change in menu," Venerable White said.

Senior White was very thoughtful. He had already thought of what would happen after he was in space... for some reason, Song Shuhang's eyes started to tear up. How nice would it be if Senior White could change this one-month trip in space into a mere half-a-month trip?

Venerable White picked a small basket and grabbed the spirit pearls of the second rank, starting to throw them inside the basket.

Very soon, the small basket was full.

"A total of 402 spirit pearls." Venerable White gave the small basket to Song Shuhang and said, "Eat them when you have free time. After you finish the contents of the basket, the quantity of true inside your second dantian would increase by almost 1%."

"After eating so many spirit pearls, it will increase by only 1%?" Song Shuhang muttered.

Venerable White said, "You should be happy. If you were to directly use spirit stones to cultivate, all those spirit stones wouldn't have increased the true qi inside your dantian by even 0.1%."

After saying this much, Venerable White stretched himself and

followed behind Soft Feather who had gone toward the depths of the street market.

"Such being the case, did I just profit ten times?" Song Shuhang stored the small basket inside the size-reducing purse and quickly followed after Venerable White.

In the rear, the corner of the stall vendor's mouth twitched.

In other words, Venerable White had made a profit of more than ten times just by casually grabbing things at his stall?



Venerable White carried Song Shuhang along and proceeded toward the depths of the 'cultivators' street market' and introduced to him the various goods they saw along the way.

There were lifelike medicinal pills, and some spirit herbs could even roar like wild beasts to confuse other living creatures. For example, Song Shuhang saw a herb called 'Tiger King Herb' that could continuously roar like a tiger.

Also, there were all types of godly weapons and medicinal pills.

There were also several types of armors and talismans.

After seeing all these things, Song Shuhang was dazzled.

Sometimes, Venerable White would also squat beside some of the stalls and briefly stare at some of the treasures displayed. But he would ultimately shake his head. He wasn't interested in buying these treasures.

But right at that time... the rich Miss Soft Feather, who was following behind Venerable White, would wave the bank cheque... no wait, would wave her spirit stones and buy all the treasures that Senior White had taken a liking to.

As long as the stall vendor didn't increase the price of the item by more than 20% after Venerable White stared at it, Soft Feather would buy it.



While the three of them were shopping, Song Shuhang saw a stall that was selling shining white rice.

"They sell rice as well here?" Song Shuhang asked in puzzlement.

"That's spirit rice... actually, it's ordinary rice that was cultivated with the water from a spiritual spring. The ashes of spirit beasts were used as fertilizer and so on until it changed into spirit rice. It's very useful to strengthen the qi and blood of the disciples of the First Stage. Even ordinary people can eat it a bit. However, the stall here only sells the ordered goods wholesale," Venerable White said. "If you want, you can order some spirit rice for your family members."

This sentence hit Song Shuhang's soft spot.

Since he stepped on the road of cultivation, he was trying his best to give some advantages to his family members as well. But up until now, he was able to give them only a little bit of Spirit Green Tea.

"In that case, I'll go over and ask." Song Shuhang arrived next to the stall.

"Boss, how much is the spirit rice here?"

"The price is the same all over the world. A spirit stone of the First Stage for one packet of spirit rice. However, we sell wholesale here. Therefore, you have to order at least 100,000 packets of spirit rice." The owner of the stall was a middle-aged man wearing white clothes. His smile was simple and honest.

"What... 100,000 packets?" Song Shuhang took a deep breath through his nose.

However, he immediately understood the reason. The man before his eyes was used to doing business with sects and schools, and the quantity of spirit rice a small sect could consume probably numbered in tens of thousands of packets. Cultivators of the First

Stage needed to accumulate a lot of qi and blood, and their appetite was especially big.

Venerable White arrived next to Song Shuhang and said with a laugh, "Shuhang, do you lack spirit stones?"

"Senior, don't you know this already?" Song Shuhang said. All the spirit stones he had were used to buy spirit pearls. But even if he hadn't used them, the total number of spirit stones he would have after the conversion was... four spirit stones of the Fourth Stage. They were nowhere near enough to buy 100,000 packets of spirit rice.

"Forget it. I'll look around and see if there is a retail stall that sells spirit rice," Song Shuhang said.

"No one in the cultivators' street market sells spirit rice retail," Venerable White said with a smile. "If you want to buy retail, you would have to go to a loose cultivator. But the price will be high."

"..." Song Shuhang.

"It's fine. I'll lend you some money. After the conversion, the price is a spirit stone of the Sixth Stage," Venerable White said.

"If one only considers the debt to be of one spirit stone of the Sixth Stage, it doesn't seem too big."

After all, a spirit stone of the Sixth Stage and 100,000 spirit stones of the First Stage were two completely different concepts!

"However... it still won't do." Song Shuhang shook his head and said, "100,000 packets of spirit rice are too much. You simply can't finish eating them!"

He only wanted to give some of this spirit rice to Papa Song and Mama Song. At most, he would give another share to his relatives and friends he was on good terms with, as well as to his friends in the dormitory.

But 100,000 packets were just too much!

Therefore, he felt that it was better to purchase it from a loose cultivator at this point...

Chapter 477: Another spirit beast crystal

One packet of spirit rice was enough for Song Shuhang's family of three to eat for one month... therefore, 100,000 packets would last for 100,000 months. If one were to convert them into years, all those packets would last for more than 8000 years.

China had approximately a history of 5000 years. These 100,000 packets of spirit rice could allow his family to eat from the day China's history started up until now. Even then, they would still have a lot of rice left. At this pace, wouldn't it last for like hundred lifetimes?

After seeing that Song Shuhang was scared by this amount of 100,000 packets of spirit rice, the corner of the vendor's mouth twitched. Afterward, he laughed foolishly and said, "Cough, little brother. For Venerable White's sake, I can decrease the minimum number of packets you can order."

The minimum number of packets of spirit rice he would sell was usually 100,000. He wasn't too fond of selling it in small quantities and make so little profit... however, he also had to take into consideration whom he was dealing with! The opposite party was Venerable White, and if he could establish a good relationship with him, it would be completely worth it to decrease the minimum number of packets.

"Really? To what extent can it be decreased?" Song Shuhang asked happily.

"To 10,000 packets, I think?" The vendor of the spirit rice stall felt that he was already being quite generous. He decreased the amount by ten times in one go. According to his mentality, 10,000 packets was his bottom line. If he were to decrease even further, it would be like selling retail.

However, 10,000 packets were still too much for Song Shuhang.

At this time, Venerable White said, "Don't worry, Shuhang. You can gift some of this spirit rice to your relatives and friends. Otherwise, you can just resell the extra amount. Some loose cultivators or organizations established by loose cultivators are really in need of spirit rice. You can make quite a profit from it. Additionally, 10,000 packets cost only one spirit stone of the Fifth Stage, it's quite a reasonable price."

"So one can use it like that too!" Song Shuhang understood. But soon after, he still forced a smile and said, "However, 10,000 packets are still too much."

Also, he wasn't planning to have that much contact with other loose cultivators within a short period of time. Reselling spirit rice to unknown loose cultivators wasn't too suitable for the current him.

"In that case, little friend... how many packets would you like to buy?" The corner of stall vendor's mouth twitched.

"One... one... thousand?" Song Shuhang blinked his eyes.

At first, he wanted to say 'one hundred'. But after seeing the smile of the stall vendor twitch continuously, he decided to add another digit to his original statement.

A thousand packets of spirit rice? The vendor of the spirit rice stall didn't know what to say and was currently speechless. Was he really going to turn into a retail seller of spirit rice?

But after shooting a glance at the nearby Senior White, he clenched his teeth.

"Little Fellow Daoist... I'll treat you as a friend, and if you want 1000 packets, I'll give you 1000 packets!" The vendor of the spirit rice stall clenched his teeth and continued, "For a 1000 packets of spirit rice, it's one spirit stone of the Fourth Stage!"

"Senior White, I'll borrow a spirit stone of the Fourth Stage from you!" Song Shuhang said heroically.

Venerable White laughed and took out a spirit stone of the Fourth Stage, giving it to the stall vendor.

"Thanks for your patronage~ can you tell me the address where I should send the goods? After this session of the street market comes to an end, I'll send 1000 packets of spirit rice to your address," the stall vendor said as he tried to squeeze out a friendly and honest smile.

Song Shuhang pondered for a moment... Wait a moment, which address should I send these goods to?

1000 packets of spirit rice... I surely can't have them delivered to my house! They would literally fill the whole place!

"You don't have an address where you can send them?" Venerable White asked out of curiosity as he looked at Song Shuhang.

"Yes." Song Shuhang nodded.

"Let me see." Venerable White took out his mobile phone and sent a message in the Nine Provinces Number One Group. "Which fellow daoist has a clean and empty storehouse in Wenzhou City? I need a place to accommodate 1000 packets of spirit rice."

Very soon, a fellow daoist contacted Venerable White privately.

It was Fairy Firefly who had been recently muted. Therefore, she had no choice but to contact Venerable White through private means. "Senior White, I have an empty multi-storied building in Wenzhou. It should be enough to accommodate 1000 packets of spirit rice. I'll immediately send you the address."

Very soon, Fairy Firefly sent the address of the multi-storied building to Venerable White.

"Done," Venerable White said with a smile. Then, he wrote down the address of Fairy Firefly's empty multi-storied building on the form.

After making sure that the address was correct, the vendor of the

spirit rice stall said with an honest smile on his face, "It was a pleasure to do business with you~"

At the same time, he delivered them his business card.

Rather than that transaction of 1000 packets of spirit rice, delivering his business card to Venerable White was much more important.

As long as he delivered his business card to Senior White, he would be able to form some karma with him. Afterward, if Venerable White was in need of spirit rice or other similar things, he would think of this business card and contact him, making his business prosper.

"It was my pleasure." Venerable White smiled and put the business card away.

On the other hand, the real buyer, Song Shuhang, was completely ignored.



Now I owe Venerable White a spirit stone of the Fourth Stage! Song Shuhang thought to himself.

After they were done buying spirit rice...

"Come with me." Venerable White smiled and said to Song Shuhang and Soft Feather, "Now, I'll bring you to a certain place. There, you'll find things that are very suitable for you guys."

After saying this much, Venerable White brought the duo toward the center of the street market. Very soon, the three of them arrived in front of a stall.

However, there wasn't any person around the stall, and there were no items there, either.

"Eh? The stall is empty?" Venerable White gazed at the empty stall and slightly furrowed his brows. Then, he asked the vendor of a nearby stall, "Fellow Daoist, can you tell me where did the vendor

of this stall go?"

"Eh? Senior White, hello. As for that empty stall here... it's been empty all along, I think?" said the vendor of the nearby stall. From what he remembered, that stall had been empty from the beginning.

"Tsk, he escaped... so stingy," Venerable White muttered to himself.

Although it was unknown what had happened, it seemed that the vendor of the stall got scared by Venerable White and quickly fled after gathering his goods.

There are actually businessmen that are scared of their customers? Song Shuhang didn't know whether to laugh or cry.

Soon after, he shot a glance at the goods of the stall vendor that replied just now.

The goods of this stall were very variegated. There were weapons, armors, medicinal pills, talismans, and so on.

After glancing at all the goods, Song Shuhang's vision quickly fell onto a jewel.

He felt a burst of spiritual energy come from this jewel, and it was different than the pure spiritual energy inside spirit stones. The spiritual energy inside this jewel was mixed with the aura of animals.

This feeling again?

Aside from the different outward appearance, this jewel and the pearl hanging around that businesswoman's neck gave Song Shuhang the same feeling.

Song Shuhang pointed at the jewel and asked, "What is this thing?"

"It's a good thing," the stall vendor said with a warm smile. Then, he started explaining, "This thing is called 'spirit beast crystal'.

Whenever the life of a spirit beast is about to end, there is a small chance that a crystal will form inside its body, and the whole spiritual energy of the spirit beast will converge inside it. It's an excellent item."

"Yes, it's indeed an excellent item... to appreciate." Soft Feather's head popped out from behind Song Shuhang. Afterward, she said with a smile, "Although there is a bit of beast aura mixed within, the spiritual energy inside these spirit beast crystals is very pure and not too inferior compared to spirit stones. But it's regrettable that the spiritual energy inside spirit beast crystals can't be extracted, and one has no choice but to eat the crystal."

"Haha~" The stall vendor made a hollow laugh.

"How many spirit stones for it?" Venerable White asked.

"One spirit stone of the Fourth Stage," the stall vendor quickly replied.

"I'll lend it to you!" Venerable White stretched two fingers toward Song Shuhang and said, "Now, you owe me two spirit stones of the Fourth Stage."

Chapter 478: No problem, I'm in no way in a hurry!

There was not much difference between owing one spirit stone or two. In the end, he still owed something.

He would surely return these two spirit stones of the Fourth Stage in the future.

Therefore, Song Shuhang nodded and said, "Alright."

The stall vendor quickly delivered the spirit beast crystal to Song Shuhang and took the spirit stone of the Fourth Stage from Venerable White's hands.

The rarer a thing was, the more it was worth. But while spirit beast crystals were rare goods, they were quite useless and thus difficult to sell.

"Fellow Daoist, can I ask you to which spirit beast does this crystal belong to?" Song Shuhang asked as he held the jewel-like spirit beast crystal between his hands.

"It's a 'tiger crystal'. It's a spirit beast crystal that comes from a spirit beast that belongs to the family of tigers," the stall vendor said.

A tiger crystal? Why did this tiger crystal resonate with me, making me feel as though I had to get it at all costs?

Just as he was thinking, Song Shuhang took out the pearl he bought from the businesswoman earlier and asked, "Fellow Daoist, do you know to which spirit beast does this crystal belong to?"

This little fellow daoist likes collecting spirit beast crystals? Had I known earlier, I would have increased the price of the tiger crystal a little! No, I can't do that. Being greedy is bad...

The stall vendor took the precious pearl from Song Shuhang's hands and after examining it for a while, he said, "If I'm not

mistaken... this spirit beast crystal should belong to a spirit beast that comes from the family of turtles. The spirit beast crystals of spirit beasts of the snake and turtle category have the shape of a pearl. However, the aura mixed within this spirit beast crystal is more similar to that of a turtle."

"Thank you." Song Shuhang nodded and received his spirit beast crystal.

A tiger-type spirit beast crystal, and a turtle-type spirit beast crystal... why did they resonate with me?

What special relationship is there between me, turtles, and tigers?

Song Shuhang put in order his thoughts and made a list of the all his goods and cultivation techniques... then, he immediately thought of something... the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique>!

It was the only thing on his body that had something to do with 'beasts'.

It was a unique cultivation technique that could allow one to condense pseudo innate true qi after the birth. There were thirty-three different cultivation methods included in this technique, and Song Shuhang chose to practice the <Huge Whale's Technique> amongst them.

Aside from whales, tigers and turtles were also amongst the 33 beasts related to this technique.

Is the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique> the reason these two spirit beast crystals resonated with me?

* * *

Venerable White brought Song Shuhang and Soft Feather along and kept strolling through the street market.

"Senior White, are there other places that sell spirit beast crystals

in this street market?" Song Shuhang asked. He wanted to know whether or not his guess was correct.

If all the spirit beast crystals belonging to animals related to the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique> resonated with him, he would be 50% sure that his guess was correct.

And if he were to find spirit beast crystals of animals that weren't related to the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique>, he could have a try and see if they resonated with him. If they didn't, he would have definitive proof that his guess was correct.

"I think we'll find more if we keep strolling through the street market," Venerable White said with a smile. "Do you have something in mind?"

"Yeah... I think there might be a relationship between the spirit beast crystals and the cultivation technique Senior White taught me," Song Shuhang said in a low voice.

Venerable White thought for a moment.

Soon after, a circular golden rune flashed through his eyes... that golden rune was a section of the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique>.

At this time, Venerable White was analyzing that section of the technique.

After a short while, Venerable White faintly nodded. "It might be possible... let's keep looking around. We might find other spirit beast crystals."

After one hour and a half.

After the trio visited all the stalls once, they obtained a total of seven spirit beast crystals.

These spirit beast crystals were of the following types: rabbit, sheep, deer, dog, bear, horse, and crane.

Those sects specialized in raising spirit beasts would raise these types of beasts most of the time. Therefore, the most common and easily found spirit beast crystals in street markets were of these seven types.

If we were to add these seven spirit stones to the count as well, Song Shuhang now owed Senior White a total of nine spirit stones of the Fourth Stage. Little by little, his debt was slowly increasing...

Aside from these, Venerable White and Song Shuhang found other types of spirit beast crystals as well, like those belonging to bees and butterflies. These two types of spirit beasts were also largely raised by cultivators.

However, just as Song Shuhang expected, these two types of spirit beast crystals didn't resonate with him.

Butterflies and bees weren't amongst the thirty-three animals related to the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique>.

"With that, we are now sure that these spirit beast crystals are related to the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique>. Perhaps it's another method you can use to condense pseudo-innate true qi..." Venerable White said.

"?" Song Shuhang looked at Senior White in puzzlement. Since the beginning, the one in charge of developing the cultivation technique was Venerable White. Song Shuhang was just in charge of practicing it.

Earlier, Venerable White obtained the first two volumes of the technique from that person behind the organization of assassins, the Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Sect. After revising and improving it, he passed it onto Song Shuhang.

After practicing the Huge Whale Chapter of the technique, a needle-shaped stream of true qi had already condensed in Song Shuhang's dantian, standing upright right in the center. This

needle-shaped stream of true qi was the embryonic form of the pseudo innate true qi.

However, they didn't have any idea on how to turn this embryonic form of true qi into pseudo-innate true qi.

* * *

"Shuhang, do you remember those several assassins from the Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Sect? Each of them practiced the chapter related to a particular beast," Venerable White said with a smile.

Song Shuhang nodded. He remembered particularly well that Whale Eight who practiced the Huge Whale Chapter just like him. He had tears streaming down his face as he thought of the cruel and deadly hug of that man.

While he was experiencing Chu Chu's life in the dream, he also got a good taste of that deadly hug.

"However, there wasn't any embryonic form of true qi inside the bodies of those assassins, right?" Venerable White said with a laugh.

Song Shuhang nodded. He still remembered that when Venerable White mentioned the matter about the 'pseudo-innate true qi' to Whale Eight, the latter had a dumbfounded expression on his face. From the looks of it, he didn't know that the cultivation technique he was practicing could condense pseudo-innate true qi.

"The cultivation technique they were practicing was modified... just like the two volumes that the person behind the Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Sect gave us," Venerable White continued his explanation. "Those guys were being trained up as 'true qi seeds'."

Although the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique> had the words 'Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' in its name, one person couldn't practice all the thirty-three different chapters of the technique.

However, if they wanted to condense that stream of pseudo-innate true qi, they still needed to combine the true qi of the thirty-three beasts into one.

In ancient times, when the Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Sect was at its peak, they surely had some secret technique to let their disciples combine the true qi of the thirty-three beasts into one.

Perhaps they had thirty-three disciples cooperate and have the thirty-three types of cultivations unite in one body through a secret technique.

Or perhaps they relied on external tools to unite the true qi as one.

However, this ancient school had already declined, and the method to unite the true qi was also incomplete.

Thereupon, this person pulling strings behind the scenes thought of a way.

They trained thirty or so disciples and had them practice a chapter of the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique> each. However, these chapters had undergone a modification, and each of the disciples turned into a seed of the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique>. That person behind the scenes only needed to wait until the conditions were ripe to gobble down the 'origin true qi' inside their body.

At first, this was nothing but Venerable White's conjecture.

However, when that person behind the scenes ransomed their subordinates, they made a circle around all the captured subordinates before choosing the three to take away.

While they were making a circle around the subordinates, they quietly swallowed down the origin true qi inside the bodies of the subordinates.



However, that person behind the scenes didn't know that Venerable White had secretly tampered with the true qi inside the bodies of subordinates. Given the time, it should be just about time that the origin true qi they gobbled up starts showing problems.

Venerable White was now waiting for the opposite party to contact them again and seize the opportunity to get the complete version of the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique>, as well as the method to combine the pseudo-innate true qi.

* * *

But from the looks of it, these spirit beast crystals seemed to be the secret to merge the innate true qi into one...?

Perhaps these spirit beast crystals could substitute for those 'true qi seeds'?

If that was really the case, Song Shuhang could try to condense the 'innate true qi' once he had obtained the merging method and gathered the thirty-three different types of spirit beast crystals.

* * *

"In that case, should I try my best to collect as many spirit beast crystals as possible?" Song Shuhang had now nine spirit beast crystals. He still needed quite a lot to gather all thirty-three.

"Collecting as many spirit beast crystals as possible...? You have to condense the innate true qi inside your body before you reach the Third Stage Battle King Realm." Venerable White nodded and said, "After I'm done exploring those ancient ruins together with the other fellow daoists from the Nine Provinces Number One Group, I'll get the complete version of the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique> and study it. Therefore, Shuhang, you should take advantage of this period of time to gather the spirit beast crystals with all your might!"

"No problem!" Song Shuhang said as he clenched his fist.

"Next, let's take another look around and see which things might

come in handy during your one-month trip in space," Venerable White said as he narrowed his eyes.

"..." Song Shuhang.

"Senior, a month is just too much. We should make good use of our time. No, that wasn't it... what I meant was, how about reducing the time? For example, half a month..." Song Shuhang begged.

"A real man can't go back on his word." Venerable White turned his head around and said, "We agreed earlier that it would be one month, so it will be one month. Not a minute less."

Song Shuhang braced himself and asked, "Then, when will I have to go to space?"

Venerable White gave the thumbs up and said, "I'll send you there once this session of the street market is over! Don't worry, I've already developed a new type of disposable flying sword. After delivering you into space, it will automatically bring you back in one month. There won't be any problems!"

"Senior, is it possible to delay the trip by a few days?" Song Shuhang said hurriedly. "My ghost spirit is currently stuck inside the express delivery box of the ancestor of the Chu Family and doesn't want to come out. How about waiting until I deliver the express delivery box to the ancestor of the Chu Family together with Little Jiang?"

"So that was it!" Venerable White held his chin and said, "However, I'll head toward the ancient ruins together with the other fellow daoists as soon as the street market is over... and I have no idea how long it'll take to explore the ruins. It seems I won't be able to deliver you to space personally."

"There is absolutely no problem. I'm in no way in a hurry. Not even a little bit," Song Shuhang said excitedly... that was precisely what he wanted to hear!

"Alright, I'll need to change the plan then," Venerable White said.

He would now have to revise the method to deliver Song Shuhang into space...

Chapter 479: A new and refreshing feeling

The sun was setting.

The cultivators' street market finally came to an end. The whole event lasted for only one day, and many fellow daoists wished it could last more... however, it wasn't really a problem. Although the hand-guided tractor competition was over, the flying sword competition would start soon after.

Another large street market would be held after the end of the flying sword competition, and this one would last for a whole week. The fellow daoists that weren't completely satisfied with this session would have all the time in the world to buy things at the next one.

Venerable Tornado, who really liked to show off, was currently dealing with the last matters regarding the cultivators' street market. Venerable Tornado was the person in charge of this session of the cultivators' street market, and he had really enjoyed being in the limelight. As long as he had the opportunity to show off, he was ready to bear all kinds of responsibilities and burdens.

At this time, in the sky.

Venerable White was riding his flying sword, and behind him were following True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon, True Monarch Fallout, Great Master Profound Principle, Cave Lord Snow Wolf, Spirit Butterfly Island's Soft Feather... and True Monarch White Crane, who was so excited that it was on the verge of tears.

Aside from True Monarch White Crane, the others had managed to place amongst the first five in this session of the hand-guided tractor competition, and they were currently heading toward the ancient ruins together with Venerable White to explore them.

True Monarch White Crane was originally very disappointed that

it didn't make it to the first five. Its whole world and being had turned black and white after it was disqualified... alright, white cranes were actually black and white to begin with.

Anyway, just as True Monarch White Crane was depressed, Venerable White decided to give it an extra slot, allowing it to participate in the exploration of the ancient ruins. The reason for giving it this extra slot was that it helped Venerable White deal with that accident where Instructor Li Jr. turned into an astronaut.

True Monarch White Crane immediately regained its colors and was now beaming with joy.

'As expected, Senior White loves me!' True Monarch White Crane firmly believed it. While they were exploring the ancient ruins, it would seize the opportunity and deepen its relationship with Senior White. If the conditions were ripe, it would try to declare its feelings to Senior White once more while inside the ancient ruins!

Living people had to have goals. Otherwise, what was the difference between them and maggots?



Just before leaving, Venerable White gave a wooden box to Song Shuhang. "Shuhang, I'll leave this to you."

This box was the same as those gifts that turned all the seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group that received them into meteors that flew over here.

"Is this a disposable meteor sword 001 edition?" Song Shuhang asked as he held the wooden box in his hands. Was Senior White planning to use this gadget to deliver him to space?

"No, this is an ordinary 'Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique'. The wooden box is currently in a sealed state. After one month, the seal on the box will untie, and the Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique will bring you back to Earth,"

Venerable White said with a smile. "As for delivering you to space, I've contacted a fellow daoist of the Nine Provinces Number One Group... Fairy Firefly said she would make a trip to Wenzhou City during this period of time. At the time, she will conveniently deliver you to space."

Why do I feel that she will conveniently deliver me to Heaven instead~

Song Shuhang asked, "Will Fairy Firefly use a flying sword to deliver me to space?"

"I have no idea. But I know that Fairy Firefly practices a peculiar cultivation technique with very special properties. Perhaps you'll be able to enjoy a new and refreshing feeling at the time," Venerable White said.

"..." Song Shuhang.

What kind of new and refreshing feeling!? Song Shuhang felt quite anxious!



There was no such thing as a banquet that lasted forever.

After Venerable White left with the six chosen fellow daoists, the other seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group, Venerable White's friends, as well as the fellow daoists that had come to spectate the hand-guided tractor competition, left one after another.

Even the majority of the disciples of the Chu Family were escorted back to China with the cloud-shaped magical treasures.

The bustling surface of the sea returned to calm once more.

Only Guoguo and Yu Jiaojiao were left next to Song Shuhang.

Great Master Profound Principle followed Venerable White and went to explore the ancient ruins. Therefore, Guoguo was temporarily left to Song Shuhang.

Yu Jiaojiao was the same. Her father, True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon, placed first and also went to explore the ancient ruins. But there was another reason she wanted to stay beside Song Shuhang. She was looking for a certain webnovel author, planning to kidnap him and close him inside a small black room.

Aside from Guoguo and Yu Jiaojiao, Young Master Phoenix Slayer was also hiding in the surroundings, preparing to quietly take care of that black horse spirit.

"It's over!" Song Shuhang said as he looked at the now empty surface of the sea.

Next, he was planning to make a trip to the Chu Family together with Little Jiang. While at it, he would try to bring Gao Moumou and his other roommates back from the small island.



Song Shuhang carried Yu Jiaojiao and Guoguo and returned to Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman's small island first.

It was almost dusk.

The natives had lit a bonfire and were dancing around it.

At the same time, they were singing the alphabet song: "A, O, E, Y, U..."

The natives were dancing and vigorously trampling the ground while singing the alphabet song and shouting loudly random sentences.

No matter how one looked at the scene, it felt as though they were trying to curse someone.



Two hours later.

A huge and luxurious cruise ship approached the shore of the small island.

For Song Shuhang's sake, Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman decided to escort all the 'teachers' back home the very same day.

That oath about teaching illiterate people how to write and read had been fulfilled. Actually, as soon as the 'teachers' taught the natives proper Chinese characters instead of Seven Lives Talisman's badly written characters, the oath was already fulfilled.

Since the oath was fulfilled, the natives didn't have to keep studying the *«Analects of Confucius»*. At the same time, Gao Moumou and the other 'teachers' weren't needed anymore and could go home ahead of time.

All the 'teachers' were extremely excited and had tears streaming down their faces. After putting their things in order, they started to board the cruise ship.

The natives warmly danced around the bonfire to send off their teachers.

Amongst them, many shot a glance at their master, Joseph, with regretful expressions on their faces. Tears had started to well up in their eyes. After all, they still had to completely master the peerless martial technique, the *«Times are Calling»*!

How would they be able to take revenge without completely mastering the technique?!

Joseph was also thinking of staying on the island for some time to keep teaching the technique to the natives... but it was regrettable that everyone was leaving and he couldn't find any excuse to stay on the island.

Therefore, Joseph had no choice but to reluctantly part with his disciples. "If there is an opportunity in the future, I'll definitely come back!"

"Teacher must come back!" the native disciples called out in awkward Chinese.

Joseph's daughter, Ji Shuangxue, couldn't bear it anymore and

grasped her father, dragging him until the cabin of the cruise ship...

The luxurious cruise ship finally set out.

Sima Jiang was guarding the express delivery and looking outside the cabin. In his heart, he was praying that nothing unexpected would happen during the journey, hoping to deliver the express delivery box to Chu Kangbo without a hitch.



The cruise ship sped forward on the surface of the sea.

In the sky, a black cloud was closely following after the cruise ship.

Inside the black cloud, a black horse would quietly reveal half of its face and shoot a glance at the cruise ship from time to time.

"A little more... after the ship gets a little bit further away from the island, I'll be able to take action," the black horse spirit muttered to itself.



In the depths of the sea.

Ten figures completely covered in spikes sized up the cruise ship floating high up.

"Lock the 'mark'. No matter the cost, we can't let them escape! All the people that have been dyed by the blood of us sea urchin warriors will use their own blood to wash away our anger!"

Chapter 480: Father, I want 365 dao names

Song Shuhang chatted with his roommates for a long time. Afterward, night slowly started to fall, and each person returned to their room.

The moonlight passed through the circular window of the room and shone on Song Shuhang's body.

After completing his daily session of the ‹True Self Meditation Scripture›, Song Shuhang opened his eyes.

Next to him, the small monk was already sleeping.

Although the kid looked really cute at this time, he was a little Doudou in disguise and was very skilled at creating troubles. Therefore, Song Shuhang decided to bring him to his own room to avoid him causing trouble for the other passengers on the cruise ship.

Meanwhile, Yu Jiaojiao was lying face-down on the edge of the window and absorbing the essence of the moonlight. She was also painstakingly cultivating.

Song Shuhang stretched himself. After he reached the Second Stage, the time he needed to sleep had significantly decreased. The current him was already capable of sitting in meditation all night instead of sleeping.

After taking out his phone, he casually swiped on the screen and entered the Nine Provinces Number One Group.

Before entering the group chat, Song Shuhang changed his username to Virtuous Buddhist Sabersman.

In the Nine Provinces Number One Group.

Not long ago, Northern River's Loose Cultivator uploaded a complete video of the hand-guided tractor competition.

Therefore, the seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group

were currently discussing the 'hand-guided tractor competition'.

Consequently, they were chatting about the baboon-shaped Fellow Daoist Thrice Reckless.

Or about the kamikaze driver Fairy Dongfang.

But the thing that the contestants liked the most was that formation made of 10,000 talismans that allowed all those that passed through it to gain benefits.

As soon as they brought up that formation made of 10,000 talismans, Song Shuhang thought of something.

"Good evening, Seniors." Virtuous Buddhist Sabersman wrote in the group. "Can I know which senior guided me step by step and helped me break through the bottleneck of the Dragon Tail Dantian when the great formation entered into action?"

Medicine Master suddenly popped out and asked, "Virtuous Buddhist Sabersman? Is this a new fellow daoist?"

But given the speed of the reply... it was clear that it was Riverly Purple Mist using Medicine Master's account.

"Miss Purple Mist, it's me! Song Shuhang!" Virtuous Buddhist Sabersman replied.

Medicine Master: "Eh? Your previous name, Stressed by a Mountain of Books, was very pleasant to hear. Why did you change it?"

Virtuous Buddhist Sabersman: "Ahaha, this is the dao name I got the day before yesterday!"

Medicine Master: "Dao name? Pfff~ It's very suitable for you, Fellow Daoist Virtuous Buddhist Sabersman, ahahaha."

Miss Purple Mist wasn't too fond of comforting others.

Virtuous Buddhist Sabersman: "..."

"At this point, you could have named yourself Tyrannical Saber

or Peerless Saber. They're both much better than this Buddhist Sabersman thing," Miss Purple Mist said.

Virtuous Buddhist Sabersman: "...Tyrannical Saber Song One."

Medicine Master: "?"

"Tyrannical Saber Song One is also my dao name," Song Shuhang said.

Medicine Master: "..."

Medicine Master: "Did you decide to take two dao names? So that you can use one of them today and the other one the day after? You are really bored, aren't you?"

"Miss Purple Mist, actually, I have seven dao names," Virtuous Buddhist Sabersman said, quite embarrassed.

Medicine Master: "Ugh~ 🤮 Are you for real?"

"Yes, I have seven dao names in total. One for each day of the week," Song Shuhang replied.

"You win! I'll go offline and laugh for a while. PS: 🤮🤮🤮" Miss Purple Mist sent a few vomiting emojis and went offline to share this 'happy' news with Medicine Master.

❄ ❄ ❄

Song Shuhang asked in the group several times... however, none of the seniors there helped him with the bottleneck of the Dragon Tail Dantian when that formation made of 10,000 talismans entered into action.

Song Shuhang scratched his head in puzzlement.

If it wasn't a senior of the Nine Provinces Number One Group that helped him... who was that person that directly spoke in his mind and guided him step by step during the breaking through process?

That person didn't even leave their name behind after helping

him.

Was it possible that he met the Lei Feng of the world of cultivators?

As expected, there were still many good people in the world!



Then, Song Shuhang asked something else in the group. "Right. Seniors, I have another question. I was planning to collect a few spirit beast crystals in the coming days. Does any of you know where I can find them?"

Of the thirty-three types of spirit beast crystals required, Song Shuhang had only nine.

"Spirit beast crystals are flashy but lack substance. There shouldn't be anyone in the group that collects them," Northern River's Loose Cultivator replied.

Sun Splitting Halberd Guo Da: [Picture of a cute puppy].

Sun Splitting Halberd Guo Da: [Picture of the head of a dog being furiously rubbed].

After making his appearance and skillfully ridiculing himself, Sun Splitting Halberd Guo Da replied, "Actually, there should be several fellow daoists in the group with spirit beast crystals in their possession. For example, Cave Lord Snow Wolf. Aside from the monster wolves in his Snow Wolf Cave, he adopted many spirit beasts of the 'wolf' type. Therefore, he might have a few wolf-type spirit beast crystals in his hands. Moreover, there is also True Monarch Yellow Mountain. He has several large organizations raising spirit beasts under his control. He should also have some spirit beast crystals in his possession."

However, True Monarch Yellow Mountain was currently offline, while Cave Lord Snow Wolf was taking risks inside the ancient ruins together with Venerable White and wouldn't be online within a short period of time.

"Thank you, Senior Guo Da. In that case, I'll wait for Senior Yellow Mountain or Senior Snow Wolf to come online and ask them," Song Shuhang said.



After replying, Song Shuhang started to rummage through the group space.

Sometimes, the seniors of the group would list some missions inside the group space.

After completing such a mission, one could obtain all kinds of rewards.

...At this time, Song Shuhang was in desperate need of spirit stones. After all, he already owned Venerable White nine spirit stones of the Fourth Stage!

He had to make money to repay the debt!



The cruise ship got further and further away from the small island.

"Now is the time!" a black horse spirit in the sky shouted.

"Now is the time!" the sea urchin warriors in the depths of the sea said as they clenched their teeth.



In the meantime.

Venerable White brought along the fellow daoists that placed amongst the first five in the hand-guided tractor competition, as well as True Monarch White Crane, and headed toward the ancient ruins.

At this time, Venerable Spirit Butterfly was also traveling together with them.

Venerable Spirit Butterfly didn't expect that Soft Feather would

roll over so many contestants and place amongst the first five in this session of hand-guided tractor competition, qualifying for exploring the ancient ruins together with Venerable White.

Although ancient ruins were full of good things, the number of dangers was even higher!

Just the thought of Soft Feather entering that dangerous place was enough not to let Venerable Spirit Butterfly sleep for days.

However, he was also unwilling to prevent Soft Feather from exploring the ancient ruins. After all, she had fought hard to obtain this opportunity, and he didn't want to break her heart.

Ultimately, Venerable Spirit Butterfly shamelessly begged Venerable White to increase the quota of people that were going to explore the ancient ruins. At the same time, he told Liu Jianyi to return to the Spirit Butterfly Island and keep a watch on the general situation.

Along the way.

"Right, father. There is something I need to ask of you!" Soft Feather suddenly thought of something and her eyes lit up. Afterward, she stared at Venerable Spirit Butterfly with sparkling eyes.

Venerable Spirit Butterfly said with a gentle smile, "What's the matter?"

"Father, can you give me 365 dao names? Is that fine?" Soft Feather said earnestly.

Venerable Spirit Butterfly was dumbfounded. "What? How many dao names did you say?"

"365 dao names!" Soft Feather said with sparkling eyes. "I want a dao name for each day. So a total of 365 dao names for each of the 365 days of the year, no repetitions! The dao name 'Soft Feather' can be conveniently saved for those leap years of 366 days!"

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Lei_Feng

Chapter 481: A sea urchin warrior in the friend list of a monster hunter

"..." Venerable Spirit Butterfly.

365 dao names? What kind of joke was that? It wasn't the same as giving random names to pets... from where would he exactly get 365 dao names?

Dammit, who is the villain that badly influenced my daughter? Venerable Spirit Butterfly firmly believed that his beloved daughter would not come up with something like this on her own. She surely received someone's bad influence.

Don't let me discover who you are! Otherwise, it does not end here between the two of us! Venerable Spirit Butterfly was like a ferocious tiger and roared toward the sky.

With sparkling eyes, Soft Feather said again, "Father? Can I?"

Venerable Spirit Butterfly took a deep breath. After a short moment, he revealed a radiant smile and gave her a thumbs up. "It's fine. Regardless of how many dao names you want, your father will try to deal with it. Something like 365 dao names cannot stop me. When the time comes, each of the dao names I'll choose will have a profound meaning, and there won't be repetitions!"

"Father is the best!" Soft Feather said happily.

Venerable Spirit Butterfly had a gratified expression on his face.

"..." Cave Lord Snow Wolf.

"..." True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon.

"..." Great Master Profound Principle.

"..." True Monarch White Crane.

"Ahaha, is it a new trend to have more than one dao name?" True Monarch Fallout said.

From little friend Song Shuhang's seven dao names to Soft Feather's 366 dao names... which fellow daoist would try to fight for the title of 'fellow daoist with most dao names' next?

It would be rather amusing if each member of the Nine Provinces Number One Group had more than one dao name one day and took turns alternating them!

True Monarch Fallout was expectantly waiting for it to happen.



In the meantime.

In the depths of the sea beneath the luxurious cruise ship.

A total of sixteen sea urchin warriors quickly moved upward, chasing after the cruise ship.

"All those that have been dyed by the blood of a sea urchin warrior are enemies of all the sea urchin warriors in the world. Don't let them escape, catch up to them and kill them! The valiant sea urchin warriors fear nothing!" the leading sea urchin warrior said in a grave tone. His whole body was giving off a metallic luster. He was obviously a sea urchin warrior that had undergone a mutation. "We'll use the cruelest methods to kill them to appease the souls of our deceased clansmen in heaven!"

All the sea urchin warriors growled, their eyes bloodshot.

In the rear of this group of sixteen sea urchin warriors, a young sea urchin warrior took out his phone. It was obviously a custom-made mobile phone that could get signal in the depths of the sea and resist the water pressure. It was a product born from the fusion of magical techniques and technology.

The young sea urchin warrior unlocked the phone and swiped until reaching the window of an instant messaging app.

Afterward, he wrote something on the wall of his instant messaging app.

Today, we finally managed to lock onto the prey. There is a cruise ship ahead, and our prey is precisely on that ship. The time to hunt has finally come. This is my first time hunting, I'm so excited!

At the same time, the sea urchin warrior used the magically modified phone camera and aimed at the luxurious cruise ship, shooting two pictures.

After editing the content, he published both the pictures and the attached text on the wall of his instant messaging app.

"The valiant sea urchin warriors fear nothing!" The young sea urchin warrior put the phone away and rushed toward the cruise ship at full speed.

After killing the prey, he would trample its head with his foot and take a picture while assuming a dashing appearance to commemorate his first hunt!



At this time, on a small coral island a thousand meters toward the east of the luxurious cruise ship.

On the small coral island, twenty men with strange outfits were standing.

They were wearing apricot yellow sleeveless daoist robes.

Moreover, ten or so long talisman papers were hanging down from the shoulders of their robes. These talisman papers were full of incantations, and each of the talisman papers had from 25-30 talisman runes engraved on it. They could release the magical techniques concealed within as long as they tore the talisman papers down and activated them.

Not only that, but the naked arms of these men were also full of runic tattoos. Although tattoos were different from talismans, they had almost the same effect. As long as they poured true qi or spiritual energy inside, they could activate them and release the

magical techniques sealed within.

From their attires, it was possible to make out their identities... they were the same 'monster hunters' that had disappeared from the world of cultivators thousands of years ago.

They were different from other cultivators that attached great importance to practicing and becoming immortals. Rather than immortality, they were more interested in vanquishing demons and monsters.

According to their obtuse thinking, as long as they saw a monster—regardless if it were a good or a bad one—they would have to seize it. If the monster was evil, they would think of a way to kill it. If it was good, they would still seal it.

In other words, things such as monsters and demons were not allowed to exist in this world according to them!

"Have you discovered the traces of those vicious sea urchin monsters?" The person leading the monster hunters was a man from the northeastern provinces. He was tall and strong and had an awe-inspiring expression on his face.

"They should be around this stretch of sea. But the sea is so big, it's not easy to find them," a young man said as he took out his mobile phone, quickly swiping on it.

The account of this youth had the following ID: 'Mad Mental Hospital's Director'.

Then, there were several other strange and abnormal IDs in his friend list.

For example, East China Sea's Scaly Monster, Lake Hua's Crucian Carp Spirit, Northeast Region's Tiger Monster, Changbai Mountain's Flower Monster, Dragon King of the Well, Resentful Soul of the Toilet, and so on.

He had all sorts of monsters and spirits as friends.

Amongst them, there was also an ID that went by the name of 'Valiant Sea Urchin Warrior 8th Year, 59th Class, 32nd Number'.

To add so many strange guys as friends, this young monster hunter had paid a price that others couldn't even begin to imagine!

* * *

"Eh? Wait, there is something." A happy expression suddenly appeared on the face of the young monster hunter.

The message that 'Valiant Sea Urchin Warrior 8th Year, 59th Class, 32nd Number' published on his wall earlier was now displayed on the screen of his mobile phone.

The picture of a luxurious cruise ship was also attached to the message. According to what was written there, the sea urchin warriors were planning to attack the cruise ship and kill one of the passengers onboard.

This 'Valiant Sea Urchin Warrior 8th Year, 59th Class, 32nd Number' was precisely that young sea urchin warrior we encountered earlier below the surface of the sea.

To think that a day would come where a monster hunter had a 'sea urchin warrior' in his friend list...

Privacy was rather important nowadays, and one had to be careful about who they were adding as friends.

"The objective of the opposite party is a cruise ship? We have to move, we can't let these sea urchin monsters harm ordinary people," the tall and strong leader of the monster hunter said in a grave tone. "Let's go, and let's pray that monsters would disappear from the world!"

"Let's pray that monsters would disappear from the world!" all the monster hunters shouted as they joined their palms together in front of their chests.

In the next moment, the twenty monster hunters jumped down

from the coral island and stepped on the surface of the sea, rushing toward the luxurious cruise ship that was one kilometer away while running on the water.

All the twenty monster hunters were at least cultivators of the Second Stage True Master Realm!

They had been looking for the sea urchin warriors residing in this stretch of the sea for a very long time.

"Get the 'monster hunter space' ready. As soon as the sea urchin monsters make their appearance, we'll drag them into the monster hunter space!" the leader of the monster hunter shouted.

Chapter 482: The poisonous snake hiding in the dark

Yu Jiaojiao, who was lying face-down on the edge of the window, suddenly opened her eyes and said in a soft voice, "Fellow Daoist Shuhang, we have guests."

After shrinking up, Yu Jiaojiao still had the body of a fish and the legs of a human. However, she looked as lovely as before. At this time, she looked like one of those cute little fairies.

But if she were to assume her true form that was several meters long, things would take a scary turn...

We can agree that regardless of what we were talking about, it would be righteous and lovely as long as it was small and exquisite!

"I know." Song Shuhang gently pushed the door of the room open. He didn't want to disturb the soundly sleeping Guoguo.

At the same time Yu Jiaojiao induced the approaching sea urchin warriors, Song Shuhang also induced these uninvited guests.

It wasn't that Song Shuhang's senses had suddenly become as good as a cultivator's of the Fourth Stage like Yu Jiaojiao. The reason he induced those sea urchin warriors was the Mark of the Sea Urchin Slayer on his body.

When the sea urchin warriors used their innate ability to lock onto his coordinates, Song Shuhang was also able to faintly sense them as they were moving closer.

Yu Jiaojiao blinked her small eyes and said, "Do you need my help?"

"If Miss Jiaojiao wants to lend a hand, it would be truly great," Song Shuhang said with a smile. He wasn't one of those people that would needlessly suffer just to act cool.

He didn't know how strong these sea urchin warriors were. If Yu

Jiaojiao were to come with him, he would have a strong helper with him.

"Just call me Jiaojiao. It feels strange when you add that 'Miss'." Yu Jiaojiao giggled. Afterward, she jumped up from the windowsill and directly landed on Song Shuhang's head.

Soon after, she hid her small body within Song Shuhang's long hair.



Song Shuhang left the room and climbed up until reaching the sun deck of the cruise ship while evading the surveillance. Afterward, he glanced down toward the boundless sea.

Right at this time, a sound was transmitted from the surface of the sea.

Soon after, sixteen figures jumped up from the depths of the sea and tightly stuck to the cruise ship.

"The valiant sea urchin warriors fear nothing!" the sea urchin warriors lightly shouted and started to quickly climb toward the top of the cruise ship. The sea urchin warriors had the bloodline of the monster race. Therefore, ordinary people couldn't see them unless they wished to be seen.

While climbing up, they induced Song Shuhang's presence.

"The target is on the top of the cruise ship, kill them!" the leading sea urchin warriors whose body was giving off a metallic luster shouted.



Song Shuhang was currently occupying a commanding position and looking downward at the quickly climbing sea urchin warriors.

Yu Jiaojiao's voice was transmitted inside his ear. "Except for the strongest one, which is at the Third Stage Realm, the other ones

are all sea urchins of the Second Stage Realm."

After knowing the strength of these sea urchin warriors, Song Shuhang heaved a sigh of relief. If none of the sixteen sea urchin warriors was at the Fourth Stage, he didn't need to worry.

Song Shuhang got a bunch of talismans from Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman earlier. Even if he didn't have Yu Jiaojiao's help, he could use the talismans to take care of these sixteen sea urchin warriors.

"Can I trouble Miss Jiaojiao to take care of that sea urchin warrior of the Third Stage? I'll deal with the remaining ones." Song Shuhang took the treasured saber Broken Tyrant out of his size-reducing purse.

"Sure," Yu Jiaojiao said. "Moreover, just call me Jiaojiao."

Song Shuhang laughed. Since the sea urchin warriors were still climbing up, he quietly drew the rune of the Lightning Palm on his left hand. At the same time, he pinched a powerful sword talisman between his fingers.

He grabbed the treasured saber Broken Tyrant with his right hand and gently spun his wrist.

True qi poured into the saber, and the Flaming Saber was ready to slash out at any moment.

Now, he only needed to wait for the sea urchin warriors to enter the attack range of the Flaming Saber Technique. Afterward, Song Shuhang would let them have a good taste of roasted sea urchins.

"Wahahaha! The target wants to resist!" the sea urchin warriors looked at Song Shuhang and roared, "All the people that have been soaked with the blood of a sea urchin warrior are enemies of our sea urchin race! Fleeing is useless. No matter where you go, we'll still find you and kill you! Not only you, even your family members and the people related to you will be implicated. They'll also die at the hands of the sea urchin warriors! But if you obediently let us

cut your head off, we sea urchin warriors will forgive your family members!"

"..." Song Shuhang.

Can't they change their pre-prepared lines a bit?

Song Shuhang slightly raised the treasured saber Broken Tyrant and locked onto a sea urchin warrior of the Second Stage on the left side that was the second fastest one amongst the bunch.

The fastest one was that sea urchin warrior of the Third Stage, but Yu Jiaojiao would take care of him.

"A bit closer..." Song Shuhang muttered. His true qi was already in an active state, and the flames of the Flaming Saber Technique were ready to burn up at any moment.



Just as Song Shuhang's senses were heightened to the limit and he was ready to get into action, several figures approached at high speed from afar.

"Evildoers! Stop in your tracks!" the tall and stout leader of the monster hunters roared.

In the next moment, the stout man stretched out his hand and tore several talismans from his shoulder.

"Whizz, whizz, whizz!"

Afterward, the stout man hurled the various talismans toward the sea urchin warriors.

In the blink of an eye, the talismans surrounded the sea urchin warriors and linked together, turning into a golden square-shaped space that only cultivators could see. As a consequence, all the sea urchin warriors were now trapped inside the space.

This was the 'monster hunter space'. With the usage of a formation, it was possible to turn the space within the square into a battlefield. It was something monster hunters had devised to

prevent ordinary people from getting hurt while they were hunting monsters.

After trapping the sea urchin warriors inside the space, the twenty monster hunters cried out and barged into the golden space as well.

"..." Song Shuhang.

What's happening?

Are they trying to kill-steal?

"Eh? Those are monster hunters! Those guys are really troublesome to deal with," Yu Jiaojiao said.

At the same time, she further reduced the size of her body, completely hiding within Song Shuhang's hair.

She wasn't afraid of these monster hunters. After all, the strongest of these monster hunters was also only at the Third Stage Realm. On the other hand, Yu Jiaojiao had successfully crossed the tribulation and was now a monster of the Fourth Stage.

However, monster hunters were really troublesome. If it was possible not to get involved with them, it was better to do so. Therefore, she hid and weakened her aura to the utmost.

Song Shuhang gazed at that golden space attached to the cruise ship and said, "Should we also enter that golden space and take a look?"

"It's up to you. However, I won't come out since there are monster hunters around. These guys are really troublesome. If you attack the little ones, the bigger ones will come out. If you attack the bigger ones, those that are even bigger will come out as well! They are very annoying," Yu Jiaojiao said.

"In that case, hide well, Jiaojiao. I'm entering to take a look," Song Shuhang said.

After all, these sea urchin warriors had come here for him.



Song Shuhang got ready to enter that golden space.

But right at this time, a black horse leg suddenly appeared in the sky, ruthlessly trampling at him.

This leg belonged to that black horse spirit Young Master Phoenix Slayer mentioned earlier.

Earlier, they were too close to Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman's island. Since many powerful experts had converged there, the black horse spirit didn't dare to make its move.

But that now that the cruise ship was far away from the small island, the black horse spirit finally seized the opportunity to get into action.

It was a black horse spirit that had practiced until becoming capable of assuming human form. In other words, its strength was at least of the Fifth Stage Realm. Even if it was just a casual kick, it wasn't something that Song Shuhang could afford to meet head-on.

"A monster of the Fifth Stage?" Yu Jiaojiao's body inside Song Shuhang's hair suddenly tensed up...

Although there was only the difference of a realm between the Fourth and Fifth Stage, a Fourth Stage Innate had still true qi circulating inside their bodies. On the other hand, after Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperors had condensed their Golden Core, all the true qi inside their body would change into spiritual energy.

Even if Yu Jiaojiao were to give her all, she wouldn't be able to block this black horse spirit.

Right at this time, Song Shuhang suddenly called out, "Senior Phoenix Slayer!"

"Don't worry, I'm here." Young Master Phoenix Slayer's voice

echoed. At the same time, he appeared in front of that black horse spirit and pushed up his glasses. Afterward, he used a finger and poked toward the leg of the black horse spirit.

In the Fifth Stage Realm, a different number of dragon patterns on one's Golden or Monster Core could lead to a large difference in strength.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer was a monster with seven dragon patterns on his Monster Core.

On the other hand, the number of dragon patterns on the Monster Core of that black horse spirit wasn't high. It was the type that belonged to the bottom-class of the Fifth Stage.

After Young Master Phoenix Slayer poked at it with his finger, the black horse spirit was sent flying while in an upside-down position.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer slightly pushed his glasses up and disappeared. The next time he appeared, he was already next to the black horse spirit, raising his hand and getting ready to attack it.

The black horse spirit issued a long cry and was likewise unwilling to show weakness. It assumed human form and prepared to battle with Young Master Phoenix Slayer.



Song Shuhang carefully looked at the two powerful monsters of the Fifth Stage battle in the sky. With the corner of the eye, he also shot a look at what was happening inside the golden-colored monster hunter space.

Now then, were the black horse spirit and the sea urchin warriors working together? After all, they decided to attack him almost at the same time.

Song Shuhang was in deep thoughts while looking at the unfolding battles.

Right at this time, Yu Jiaojiao's voice suddenly echoed in his ears. "Shuhang, be careful!"

Just as Yu Jiaojiao reminded him, Song Shuhang turned around without hesitation and slashed out.

Raging flames started to burn on the blade of the saber, and the Flaming Saber Technique slashed behind him with a power that seemed to be capable of burning the heavens.

"Ding!" Song Shuhang's violent attack hit the opposite party.

Song Shuhang's blow forced the opposite party to show their face.

It was figure wearing ninja-like clothes and holding a small hammer in its hand... this hammer looked the same as those small hammers that people used in their daily lives.

"The <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique>!" Song Shuhang called out.

The moment he exchanged blows with the opposite party, he sensed a familiar feeling stemming from the true qi of the opposite party.

If he wasn't mistaken, the opposite party was practicing the Pig Chapter of the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique>.

From the looks of it, the other party seemed to have the strength of someone that had just entered the Third Stage.

Song Shuhang narrowed his eyes and said, "The mantis stalks the cicada while unaware of the oriole behind... as well as the poisonous snake hiding in the dark. What a dangerous situation!"

"..." The man wearing black clothes slightly retreated and closely watched Song Shuhang. Soon after, he said in a husky voice, "I didn't expect that you would also be practicing the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique>."

"Hehe." Song Shuhang gently laughed.

"Such being the case, I won't need to waste my time and strength," the man wearing black clothes said ferociously.

"Oh?" The corner of Song Shuhang's mouth rose.

"I'll gladly accept the 'origin true qi' in your body! Then, I'll catch you and exchange you for the antidote." The man wearing black clothes stretched out his hand toward Song Shuhang and made a grabbing motion.

After modifying the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique>, he could swallow the origin true qi from the bodies of other cultivators that had practiced the revised version of the technique through a secret method!

But contrary to his expectation, even after making the grabbing motion twice, he was unable to steal the origin true qi of the opposite party.

It wasn't all. Song Shuhang quickly dashed toward him, and the ball of lightning in his left hand that was currently emitting crackling sounds moved toward his head.

"Dammit!" The man wearing black clothes was now clear what had happened. The trick he left behind in the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique> was probably discovered and corrected by that powerful expert.

That expert quietly poisoned him when he went to his place to ransom his subordinates... what a sinister fellow!

Chapter 483: Why would I want to escape?

This man wearing black clothes was the mastermind behind the organization of assassins known as Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Sect. In other words, he was the same person that used the first two volumes of the ‹Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique› to ransom his subordinates that had been taken prisoner by Medicine Master.

He used the technique to ransom three of his men, and in the process, he quietly absorbed the origin true qi from the bodies of his other subordinates.

But after he ransomed his three subordinates and returned to his base, his body quickly started to show strange symptoms.

Vomiting, dizziness, incapability of controlling mental energy.

He often hallucinated while practicing, and was unable to maintain his true qi pure.

Moreover, he would often get sleepy. This forced him to sleep for more than ten hours each day. But that wasn't all... the most fearsome thing was that he continuously dreamt of being pregnant for the past few days.

The pain one felt while giving birth was unbearable; it was extremely painful! But what annoyed him the most was... that he was a man! Why the hell was he having these lifelike dreams about giving birth?!

After pondering for a while, he came to the conclusion that his current situation could only be explained with poisoning.

He suspected that that expert quietly poisoned him when he went to ransom his subordinates.

Due to the 'poison', the conditions of his body kept worsening. He felt weak from head to foot and was unable to muster his strength.

Although he was at the peak of the Third Stage, he was able to put forth the strength of someone that had just barely entered the Third Stage at this time.

Right now, the man wearing black clothes had only one thing in mind... catch Song Shuhang and exchange him for the antidote!

* * *

'The version of the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique> that this boy practices doesn't seem to have flaws... I'm unable to absorb his origin true qi. Such being the case...' The man in black clothes gritted his teeth and grasped the little hammer. 'I'll directly overpower him and capture him! Afterward, I'll use him to get the antidote from that expert!'

At this time, Song Shuhang had already arrived in front of the man and attacked him with the Lightning Palm.

"A puny Lightning Palm..." the man wearing black clothes said disdainfully, but just as he was halfway through his sentence..."...F*ck, this sinister fellow!"

He saw that Song Shuhang used the Lightning Palm as a cover and was also holding a glistening talisman in his hand.

He felt an aura that belonged to the Fourth Stage come from this talisman. If the technique concealed inside this powerful talisman that had the attack power of the Fourth Stage were to hit him directly, he would be seriously injured even if he were to survive.

The man wearing black clothes quickly stopped and put all his strength in his legs. His body swayed from side to side like a noodle and arrived behind Song Shuhang as though he was a snake.

Although he practiced the Pig Chapter of the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique>, he wasn't clumsy like one. On the contrary, he was as nimble as a snake.

The skill he used was excellent for short-range movements!

Song Shuhang's Lightning Palm hit nothing but air.

'He dodged!'

However, Song Shuhang didn't panic.

Moreover, he didn't use the sword talisman to attack the opposite party either. After all, the other party was only a cultivator of the Third Stage.

After his attack failed, Song Shuhang took back the sword talisman and quickly rolled to a side.

The ⟨Virtuous Man's Ten Thousand Mile Walk⟩ was an excellent footwork of the scholarly faction, and after it was practiced to the 'master level', even if a donkey were to use it to roll sluggishly, it would still look extremely cool and fast.

Song Shuhang continuously rolled and ultimately stood up, looking very elegant.

"Boy, you have good reflexes." The man wearing black clothes rotated the hammer and said coldly, "But you won't be able to escape."

Song Shuhang laughed and said, "Why would I want to escape?"

At this time, he was wearing magical clothes with high defense on his body, had the treasured saber Broken Tyrant in his hand, and had several talismans in his pocket as well... in short, he was armed to the teeth. Although he wasn't sure if he could defeat a cultivator of the Third Stage, it wasn't really a problem to stay alive.

With twenty armor talismans, as well as the defense of the emerald-green kasaya, that man wearing black clothes could only dream of defeating and capturing Song Shuhang.

Furthermore, although that black horse spirit in the sky was quite scary, Young Master Phoenix Slayer was stronger than it.

Additionally, although the sea urchin warriors were troublesome

fellows, the monster hunters surpassed them both in numbers and strength. Therefore, they wouldn't be a problem either for now.

Song Shuhang only had to stall this man wearing black clothes for a while. After Young Master Phoenix Slayer was done dealing with the black horse spirit, he would come here to catch this guy as well.

Moreover, Yu Jiaojiao was also hiding inside Song Shuhang's hair, and she was a monster of the Fourth Stage!

Why the hell would he want to escape?

"Hehe, I really want to see for how long you can keep spouting nonsense," the man wearing black clothes sneered and activated a sealing technique with his right hand. Soon after, a talisman paper appeared on the right palm.

I absolutely can't let this guy run.

I have to capture him as soon as possible... from the looks of it, the deadly poison inside my body is about to flare up again. I'm feeling sleepier and sleepier.

"Wind Binding Technique!" the man wearing black clothes lightly shouted.

Cultivators of the Third Stage and above already knew many magical techniques. As soon as he activated the magical technique, the yellow talisman paper started to emit a green light.

"Go!" The man wearing black clothes hurled the talisman paper. Halfway, it changed into green chains made of wind that shot toward Song Shuhang.

"A binding technique." Song Shuhang immediately raised the saber and chopped toward the green chains made of wind.

In the instant he slashed down, the chains unexpectedly followed the trajectory of the wind raised by the saber and dodged the

attack. Afterward, they latched onto Song Shuhang's body and tied him up.

"Caught you!" The man wearing black clothes grinned. Then, he pounced toward Song Shuhang while wielding his hammer.

But right at this time, the emerald-green kasaya on Song Shuhang's body slightly swelled on its own, breaking apart those chains of wind that were binding him.

The Wind Binding Technique was breached!

"This damned guy has a lot of treasures with him," the man wearing black clothes said with clenched teeth. In the next moment, he activated another technique. This time, he didn't use the Wind Binding Technique. Instead, he used a concealing technique.

In the next moment, his body quietly disappeared from Song Shuhang's field of vision, and even mental-energy-based detection techniques were unable to find his position.

"He even concealed himself now. He really thinks highly of me, but I'm just a cultivator of the Second Stage!

Anyway, it's better to shift the battlefield to somewhere else... we're currently on the cruise ship, and the destructive power of a cultivator of the Third Stage is too high and will damage the place," Song Shuhang muttered to himself.

His sight fell on the nearby 'monster hunter space' that was attached to the cruise ship.

There wasn't a more suitable battlefield than that place.

Thereupon, Song Shuhang seized the opportunity and jumped up, heading toward that 'monster hunter space' that the monster hunters had created.

But as said earlier, it was something that monster hunters created. Therefore, Song Shuhang wasn't sure if he could freely

enter the space.

But even if he were unable to barge into the monster hunter space, he could simply run to the sea.

Song Shuhang was good at swimming. Moreover, the sea was Yu Jiaojiao's domain!

"Bang!"

After Song Shuhang jumped downward, he stepped with his feet on the space the monster hunters had created, unable to get into it. He felt as though he was stepping on the surface of the earth when he stepped on the golden space.

As expected, only monster hunters could freely enter this particular space from the outside.

"In that case, let's shift the battlefield to the sea!" Song Shuhang didn't hesitate and jumped down toward the sea.

"Ding!"

Almost in the same instant Song Shuhang jumped toward the sea, a short blade stabbed in the place he was standing a second ago.

The man wearing black clothes was carrying a short blade in one hand and a hammer in the other when he became visible once more, coldly looking at Song Shuhang.

"Quite dangerous." Song Shuhang's body disappeared into the sea.

"You think you can run away through the water? Naive," the man wearing black clothes sneered and activated another seal, concealing his appearance once more.

"Jiaojiao, can you make your move?" Song Shuhang asked in a low voice.

"Let's go a bit deeper." Yu Jiaojiao giggled.

"Good, let's capture him at once," Song Shuhang said with a smile. At the same time, he took out his phone and scrolled until reaching Venerable White's number...

Chapter 484: If you don't need any of the above-mentioned things, please hang up

Venerable White still had a use for this man wearing black clothes. He wanted to obtain the complete version of the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique> from him, as well as some supplementary cultivation techniques related to it.

Therefore, Song Shuhang decided that he would give Venerable White a call after he had captured this man. He wanted to ask him how he should deal with him so as to avoid disrupting Senior White's plan. After all, Song Shuhang himself was the one that would benefit the most from this plan.

"Watch out, a surprise attack! It's coming from the left side, around your same height! Hehe, that guy is pretty fast!" Yu Jiaojiao's laughter was transmitted inside Song Shuhang's ear.

Song Shuhang quickly moved forward of two `<anno data-annotation-id="0a0fb3b6-e9d4-afe1-9e3c-2ddedd7c11a4" data-title="squares"> squares 1 </anno>` and used the treasured saber Broken Tyrant in his hands to chop toward the left side of the place he was standing in earlier.

"Ding!"

The saber and the hammer clashed against each other, and the silhouette of the man in black clothes became visible once more.

His concealing technique would be deactivated whenever he attacked.

Although he could become invisible after using the technique, traces of his passage would be left in the surrounding mass of water since they were currently underwater. Therefore, the effectiveness of the technique was greatly reduced.

"This damned guy is like a flea." The man wearing black clothes was continuously attacking Song Shuhang, but the latter was

continuously dodging. At this time, he was thoroughly enraged.

Even if he was poisoned, he was still a cultivator of the Third Stage. Unexpectedly, he was having trouble dealing with this cultivator of the Second Stage and wasn't able to take him down even after a while. If this story were to get out, he would become a laughing stock.

Such being the case, don't blame me for using vicious tactics!

"At first, I was just thinking of capturing you... but now, I'll crush both your arms and legs. Then, I want to see how you can run away!" Since they were inside the water, the mouth of the man in black clothes didn't move. His voice was directly transmitted into Song Shuhang's ears through the true qi.

In the next moment, the man wearing black clothes hurled the small hammer toward Song Shuhang. "Tempest Hammer!"

After the hammer was thrown, lightning completely covered its surface. One would surely not feel good if hit by this gadget.

At the same time, he held the short blade with both hands and shouted, "Wild Boar's Tooth!"

The huge illusion of a wild boar surrounded his body, and he shot toward Song Shuhang at full speed.

The Tempest Hammer was in the front, and the Wild Boar's Tooth was closely following behind.

This time, he truly wanted to cripple this flea-like guy.

"Hmm, hmm, hmm~" Song Shuhang had yet to learn the 'secret sound transmission technique' and was thus unable to speak under water.

However, Yu Jiaojiao, who was hiding in his hair, had already noticed his cry.

She drilled out of Song Shuhang's long hair and stretched out her lovely and small claw. The claw mimicked a handgun as Yu

Jiaojiao shouted, "Bang~"

In the next moment, the seawater started to surge, changing into a huge dragon head that dashed toward the Tempest Hammer and Wild Boar's Tooth!

The dragon head wasn't the result of a magical or monster technique. It was just the fruit of Yu Jiaojiao's innate ability to control water.

However, the volume of this dragon head was slightly big.

The twenty meters tall dragon head ruthlessly crashed into the Tempest Hammer... then, just like a train rolling over a bedbug, it smashed the small hammer covered by lightning to pieces.

The remaining strength of the dragon head didn't decrease in the least as it bumped into the man wearing black clothes.

The man wearing black clothes was shocked. How is this possible?! A cultivator of the Second Stage shouldn't be able to use such a powerful technique!

In the meantime, he decided to stop the Wild Boar's Tooth in its tracks and dodge the incoming water dragon first.

But just as he was preparing to dodge the attack, a burst of sleepiness caught him off-guard...

The depths of the sea were Yu Jiaojiao's territory. In there, all her attacks were strengthened, and even the simple attacks she used through her ability to control water had the strength of high-level magical techniques of the Fourth Stage.

"Boom..."

After the man wearing black clothes got hit by the dragon head, he was dragged to a distant place.

The short blade in his hands immediately broke.

Next, the skin on his arms and hands started cracking and his fingers weirdly twisted while fresh blood shot out.

"Aaaaaah!" the man wearing black clothes pitifully called out and started to foam at the mouth.

The magical clothes he was wearing continuously glittered. The clothes were automatically trying to protect their master, hoping to offset the killing power of the water dragon head.

But the strength of the dragon head was too high. The magical clothes of the man in black wouldn't resist for too long. After their defensive power was exhausted, the man himself would also be shredded to pieces.

Song Shuhang quickly took out his phone and opened the text messaging app, writing the following words: "Jiaojiao, don't kill him. I need him alive."

"I understand," Yu Jiaojiao replied... at the same time, a confused expression flashed through her small eyes.

The opposite party was a cultivator of the Third Stage, and although the strength of the move she used just now was pretty high, its speed wasn't that fast.

The other party could have easily stopped the Wild Boar's Tooth midway and dodge the attack by relying on their speed as a cultivator of the Third Stage! Why did that guy stupidly stand there and meet the water dragon head-on?

Although she was confused, Yu Jiaojiao still waved her claw and made the water dragon disappear.

At this time, the man wearing black clothes was covered with blood and bruises. Moreover, the seawater coming in contact with his wounds increased the pain by 1 point.

"Dammit! F*ck! F*ck!" The man wearing black clothes was extremely frustrated at this time.

When that water dragon shot toward him earlier, he could have indeed dodged it given his speed.

However... at the key moment, that sleepy feeling rushed up to his head.

That sleepy feeling was too sudden and strong. In the blink of an eye, his eyelids got very heavy, and he simply couldn't open his eyes.

Afterward... well, there was no afterward.

The water dragon mercilessly battered his body, almost shredding him to pieces.

I refuse to accept it! I refuse to accept it! the man wearing black clothes shouted inwardly. Soon after, the world before his eyes went black, and he lost consciousness.

After seeing that he was sinking downward like a corpse, Song Shuhang wrote on the mobile phone: "Is he dead?"

"He is not dead. He only fainted. This guy... seemed somewhat weak?" Yu Jiaojiao said. "Shuhang, let's catch him and return to the ship."

Song Shuhang nodded and put his phone away. Afterward, he swam over and grabbed the man wearing black clothes, beginning to swim toward the surface of the sea while carrying him on his shoulder.



On the surface of the sea.

The luxurious cruise ship was slowly proceeding toward its destination, and the people onboard were completely ignorant about the superhuman battle that was taking place right next to them.

Song Shuhang carried the man wearing black clothes on his shoulder and quietly climbed until reaching the top of the cruise

ship. Luckily, Yu Jiaojiao was there with him. With the waves pulling him along, he was able to catch up to the cruise ship by swimming.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer had yet to return. In the end, that black horse spirit was still a monster of the Fifth Stage and not so easy to defeat.

The golden space the monster hunters created was still there. The difference in strength between monster hunters and sea urchin warriors wasn't too high. Therefore, the two factions were probably still engaged in battle.

"I didn't expect that I would be the first one to take care of my opponent," Song Shuhang said with a smile.

At this time, a towel was delivered over to his position.

Song Shuhang turned his head around and saw the captain of the ship standing next to him. The captain smiled at him, and Song Shuhang could feel the strength of a Second Stage True Master from him after he sensed the fluctuations of true qi.

Song Shuhang gently smiled and took the towel.

As soon as he got on the ship, he discovered the presence of the captain of the ship. Of course, it was so easy because the other party wasn't trying to hide his presence in the first place.

This was Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman's private ship. Therefore, it wasn't strange that the captain was a cultivator.

"Mister Shuhang's strength is incredible, and it vastly surpassed my expectations... anyway, I'm the captain of the ship, Jiang Zhang." The captain of the ship faintly smiled and said, "When I realized that Mister Shuhang and that man wearing black clothes were fighting, I came out of the cabin to give you a helping hand. But I didn't think you would have already taken care of him by the time I came here."

By the time he came out, the battle was already over. Song

Shuhang was worthy of being Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman's friend. Although he was a cultivator of the Second Stage, he was incredibly powerful.

"Haha, I was just lucky. Moreover, there is something wrong with the state of this man wearing black clothes." Song Shuhang used the towel to dry his hair and said, "Captain Jiang, is there a durable room on the ship? I would like to lock up this guy there."

"Of course. Mister Shuhang, follow me." Captain Jiang showed the way.

Song Shuhang shot another look at the golden 'monster hunter space' and followed after Captain Jiang while dragging along that man wearing black clothes.



The man wearing black clothes woke up soon after. It wasn't that he had slept enough... the reason he woke up was the unbearable pain he felt all over his body.

As a matter of fact, he woke up soon after Song Shuhang brought him into the isolated room.

When he woke up, the man discovered that he was tied up like a rice dumpling and hanging from the ceiling, continuously spinning.

Two sailors had dressed up his wounds.

At this time, he was wearing only shorts... his ninja clothes and his other belongings were all orderly put on a side.

Those ninja clothes were a set of magical clothes with good defensive abilities. It was unfortunate that they were basically ruined after taking Yu Jiaojiao's attack head-on.

Additionally, there was a bottle of detoxifying pills, ten spirit stones of the Third Stage, and a dozen yellow talisman papers. These talisman papers were supplementary mediums used to

execute magical techniques. While executing the magical technique, they would allow the user to save a lot of true qi, spiritual energy, and mental energy.

Then, there was another item that was rather incompatible with the other cultivation-related goods. It was a golden chain. It looked like one of those fake golden chains worth 10 RMB you could find online, rough and thick.

But after a careful look, he discovered that there was an animal engraved on each section of the gold chain. There was a bull, a sheep, a horse, a donkey, a deer, a camel, a pig, a dog, a cat, and so on.

The gold chain had a total of thirty-three sections.

"These are the pictures of thirty-three beasts on it." Song Shuhang immediately understood. This golden chain was surely related to the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique>.

"Dammit!" The man wearing black clothes glared at Song Shuhang.

If not for the poison flaring up at the worst time possible, there was no way he would have been captured!

"Hehe." Song Shuhang smiled at the man wearing black clothes. Then, he stretched out his hand and took out his phone, dialing Venerable White's number.

He wanted to ask Venerable White how he should deal with this guy.

After he made the call, Venerable White's gentle voice echoed from the other end. "Hello, Fellow Daoist. Thank you for making a call to White's phone, but I'm currently busy exploring the ancient ruins. If it's something not too important and you want to leave a message, press 1. If it's something relatively important and you need to summon the long-distance projection of a clone, press 2. If it's something extremely important and you need to speak to the

phone owner, press 3. If you don't need anything of the above-mentioned things, please hang up."

"..." Song Shuhang.

'Did I dial the <anno data-annotation-id="2e68f078-98co-be07-6994-of9d448fd84b" data-title="10086"> 10086 2 </anno> ?'

After pondering for a moment, Song Shuhang thought of pressing the number 3. However, he didn't feel like disturbing Venerable White while he was exploring the ruins either...

In the end, Song Shuhang moved his finger on the number 2 and gently pressed it.

Chapter 485: I might as well try to give my cheat a go

After he pressed the number 2, a beam of light shot out of Song Shuhang's phone. After stopping in the air for a short moment, the beam quickly changed into Venerable White's 3D projection.

"Eh? It's you, Shuhang. Oh, right. It's Monday today. Fellow Daoist Virtuous Buddhist Sabersman, hello! Is there something you need of me?" Venerable White's projection asked.

Song Shuhang exclaimed, "[Black Technology] (http://fullmetalpanic.wikia.com/wiki/Black_Technology)!"

"It's not Black Technology. This is a mere fusion of the clone creating and projection creation techniques. It's something similar to a video call. It's not as complicated as you imagine it to be." Venerable White beckoned with his hand and added, "However, this illusory clone can be summoned for a limited amount of time. Therefore, if you have something to say, say it quickly."

"Senior White, I caught the man behind that organization of assassins, the Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Sect," Song Shuhang said as he pointed toward that man wearing black clothes hanging down from the ceiling.

Well... actually, he wasn't wearing black clothes anymore since they had been taken off.

"Eh? That guy unexpectedly came to look for you?" Venerable White laughed and said, "And here I thought he would look for Medicine Master."

Song Shuhang asked, "He was planning to kidnap me and go to Senior Medicine Master's place to get the antidote. Was he poisoned?"

"No. I'm too lazy to use something as troublesome as poison. I just tampered with the 'origin true qi' of his subordinates and

concealed several magical techniques within it. After that guy absorbed the origin true qi of his subordinates, the magical techniques hidden within it shifted to his body as well," Venerable White replied.

After hearing these words, the guy who was once wearing black clothes slowly turned around like an electric fan. He was currently dumbfounded. There is no antidote... there is no antidote...

Song Shuhang asked, "Senior White, how should I deal with this guy?"

"Let me see." Venerable White's projection arrived in front of the man who was once wearing black clothes. He glared at him with a serious expression on his face and pressed for an answer. "Hand over the complete version of the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique>, and the supplementary cultivation techniques as well. If you do that, I'll remove the magical techniques I hid inside the 'origin true qi'."

The eyes of the man flickered.

"Of course, don't even think about deceiving me with a fake technique... I can easily tell if it's real or fake," Venerable White also added.

The man who was once wearing clothes stayed silent for around ten seconds.

In the end, he sighed and said, "Remove the magical techniques concealed in the origin true qi inside my body first. Afterward, I'll give you everything you want."

"Hmm... that's not possible," Venerable White said.

"Why?" the man who was once wearing black clothes roared. "Are you making fun of me?!"

Venerable White said earnestly, "What you're seeing is just the projection of a clone. In other words, this is nothing but a video call. What do you expect me to do?"

The man who was once wearing black clothes was speechless.

"Hand over the complete version of the technique first. Then, I'll restore your origin true qi once I'm back. Don't worry, I always keep my word," Venerable White said.

The man in black closed his eyes and pondered... Only an idiot would believe this nonsense!

If he were to hand over all the cultivation techniques, he would lose the qualifications to bargain with the opposite party, allowing himself to be trampled upon. Therefore, he absolutely couldn't hand over the techniques!

At this time, Venerable White also added, "Of course, if you're unwilling to carry out the transaction, you don't really have to!"

The man wearing black clothes: 🙄

What's the meaning of this? Is it possible that this expert doesn't want the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique> anymore and wants to kill me directly?

"Shuhang, keep an eye on this guy for the time being. After I return from the ancient ruins, I'll get the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique> out of him," Venerable White said.

It wasn't difficult for a Seventh Stage Venerable to pry out the secrets of a cultivator of the Third Stage.

Song Shuhang nodded and said, "Senior, no problem."

"Then, let's see each other after I'm done exploring the ancient ruins." Venerable White's projection waved his hand and disappeared.

The man in black hanging from the ceiling heaved a sigh of relief. It seemed that the other party didn't want to kill him.

The two sailors finished dressing the wounds of the man and left the room.

Song Shuhang held his chin and stared at the man. His eyes didn't move in the slightest and continuously stared at the man who was once wearing black clothes.

After Song Shuhang started at him like that, the man in black felt somewhat uneasy. He felt that this man with black and shiny eyes had ill intentions and was about to do something strange to him.

Song Shuhang thought for a while and finally nodded. It seemed that he had made up his mind.

Then, he grasped a cup and took out his treasured saber Broken Tyrant. Afterward, he stretched out his hand and gently made a cut on his wrist.

Fresh blood gushed out and poured into the cup.

"Shuhang, what are you doing?" Yu Jiaojiao asked in puzzlement.

"I want to try something." Song Shuhang put away the treasured saber; the wound on his wrist quickly healed. At this time, the small cup was already half-filled with blood.

Song Shuhang grasped the cup and arrived in front of the man in black.

"Jiaojiao, can you give me a hand? I need to make this guy drink my blood," Song Shuhang said.

"Sure, but why are you making him drink your blood?" Yu Jiaojiao said as she lightly jumped, landing on the ground. Then, she magically changed her body and changed into the size of an adult.

She used one of her claws to hold the head of the man, and the other one to pinch his nose. "Come, make him drink!"

The man who was once wearing black clothes struggled with all his might, but there was nothing he could do against Yu Jiaojiao who was a monster of the Fourth Stage.

Song Shuhang completely poured the small cup of blood into the

mouth of the man in black.

"Now, it's my turn." Yu Jiaojiao giggled and patted the body of the man wearing black clothes.

Monster energy surged and forced the man to swallow the blood. Afterward, Yu Jiaojiao's monster energy kept revolving and allowed Song Shuhang's blood to spread through the entire body of the man wearing black clothes, not giving him the chance to spit it out.

"Ugh... you bastards, beep~ beep~" the man wearing black clothes cursed nonstop. He was sure that nothing good would happen after that youngster made him drink his blood. Maybe he was a poisonous man, and his blood was poisonous as well?

After making him drink the blood, Yu Jiaojiao squatted in front of the man wearing black clothes and carefully watched him.

But even after ten or so seconds, nothing happened to the man.

"Shuhang, what now?" Yu Jiaojiao asked.

Although they made him drink the blood, nothing happened...?

"What now? Hmm... Now, I should go to sleep!" Song Shuhang said earnestly.

"What?" Yu Jiaojiao felt that her train of thought just couldn't follow Song Shuhang's.

"I'm hoping to make a dream or something of the sort while sleeping," Song Shuhang continued.

He would have to take a look at what kind of dream he would make to know whether or not he had succeeded.

Song Shuhang's plan was very simple... he wanted to see whether or not he could trigger his ability to dream of other people's lives.

The last time, when he cut his wrist and added some of his blood to Chu Chu's medicinal paste, his blood seeped into Chu Chu's body through the medicine.

During the night of that very day, his dreamland skill was triggered, allowing him to become the person that understood Chu Chu the most in this world overnight.

Now that he had made the man wearing black clothes drink his blood, he should have established a connection between him and the other party.

If he could activate his dreamland skill and dream of the life experiences of the man wearing black clothes, he might find clues about the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique>.

However, he had no idea if this plan would work or not.

He wasn't too sure what he had to do to trigger his dreamland skill... however, he needed a 'connection' with the opposite party in order to dream about their life.

Curses, souls, blood, karma strings, and even the sprout of a green onion were things that had triggered his dreamland skill in the past.

Yu Jiaojiao blinked her eyes and said, "I have no idea what you're trying to do, but I wish you good luck nonetheless."

Then, she reduced the size of her body and drilled inside Song Shuhang's hair again.

"Thank you." Song Shuhang laughed. Then, he moved toward the edge of the window of the room and shot a look outside.

That space the monster hunters had created was still there.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer also had yet to return.

"I should wait some more time. I'll go to sleep after the matters of the sea urchin warriors and black horse spirit are taken care of," Song Shuhang muttered to himself.



Around two minutes later.

"Bang!"

The golden-colored monster hunter space burst open.

The twenty monster hunters were covered with blood, and each of them was more or less injured. However, no one of them had died.

As for the sixteen sea urchin warriors on the other side, they were all dead.

Monster hunters were very experienced when it came to dealing with monsters. If we added the fact that their teamwork was very good, their resulting strength was far greater than a simple addition.

Although the strength of the sea urchin warriors wasn't that lacking compared to the monster hunters, their lack of teamwork and a proper battle formation lead to their defeat.

The leader of the monster hunters was holding the body of the metallic sea urchin warrior with his hand and stabbing his stomach with his yin-yang blade.

At this time, the metallic sea urchin warrior had yet to die.

He opened his twitching mouth and said his last words, "Idiot... all the people that have been soaked with the blood of a sea urchin warrior... are enemies of our sea urchin race... fleeing is useless... no matter where you go... we'll still find you... and kill you...!"

"Ahahaha!" The tall and big monster hunter laughed aloud and said, "It's exactly what I'm hoping for! We, monster hunters, welcome you to take revenge! I'm not afraid of how many of you would come, I'm afraid that none would come! Ahahaha!"

Next, he twisted his yin-yang blade, thoroughly killing the metallic sea urchin warrior.

For monster hunters, there was nothing more joyous than monsters visiting them to take revenge. With that, they wouldn't

have to waste time looking for them all over the world.

The battle had finally come to an end.



Afterward, the monster hunters started to skillfully clean up the battlefield, gathering the blood of the sea urchin warriors and the treasures on their bodies.

Song Shuhang stood in front of the window.

Then, he saw the leader of the monster hunters search the body of the metallic sea urchin warrior for a while, taking out of his body two weird stone of the size of a palm.

As soon as he saw these strange stones, Song Shuhang's body reacted to them.

Did I just react to those stones?

Are those strange stones spirit beast crystals as well?

What a coincidence!

Song Shuhang touched his size-reducing purse. If those two strange stones were really part of the thirty-three types of spirit beast crystals he needed, he absolutely couldn't give them up.

The best option was to talk to the monster hunters and trade the stones for something.



Just as Song Shuhang was in deep thoughts, two figures fell from the sky.

The two figures were Young Master Phoenix Slayer and the black horse spirit.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer held down the black horse spirit and punched him continuously. The barrage of fists was like a torrential rain, and the black horse spirit had been hit until becoming muddleheaded.

"Boom..."

Young Master Phoenix Slayer and the black horse spirit fell on the stretch of sea next to the cruise ship.

When the twenty monster hunters saw this scene, their eyes immediately lit up. Their leader was particularly lively and shouted, "Evildoers!"

Song Shuhang, who was standing in a high a place, sighed and rubbed his brows.

Chapter 486: The Fiercely Kneeling on the Ground and Surrendering Technique

Each monster hunter had a fundamental rule ingrained in their mind... if they were to see a monster, they didn't have to be afraid and had to enter into action immediately!

They were as stubborn as a rock, and as soon as they saw a monster, they would immediately pounce on it as though they were high on drugs.

They wouldn't even bother looking at the difference in strength between the monster and themselves. From this point of view, they were somewhat similar to the sea urchin warriors.

Sometimes, the monster hunters could be really troublesome...

Both Young Master Phoenix Slayer and the black horse spirit are monsters! Would the monster hunters try to recklessly go after Senior Phoenix Slayer's head now?

Will this be the end of these monster hunters...?

Just as Song Shuhang was in deep thoughts, the twenty monster hunters ferociously pounced forward. Then, they went ahead and launched an attack against the black horse spirit that had been beaten senseless and was now lying on the ground.

The blinding radiance of runes, monster-vanquishing talismans, and magical techniques flashed again and again.

The black horse spirit had been just beaten by Young Master Phoenix Slayer until becoming muddleheaded. When that wave of monster-vanquishing talismans exploded on its body, it wished it was dead rather than alive.

However, the twenty monster hunters didn't attack Young Master Phoenix Slayer who was likewise a monster of the Fifth Stage. It almost felt as though they didn't notice that Young Master

Phoenix Slayer was a monster as well.

Is it possible that Senior Phoenix Slayer is very skilled in hiding his aura, and the monster hunters mistook him for a human? Song Shuhang thought to himself.

It that was the case, it was good as well. With that, there wouldn't be the need of a showdown between the monster hunters and Young Master Phoenix Slayer.



At this time, the black horse spirit was helplessly lying on the ground, unable to get up.

The tall and big monster hunter, who also happened to be the leader, cupped his hands and greeted Young Master Phoenix Slayer. "Senior, we were impolite earlier."

The other cultivator was taking care of the monster while they suddenly dashed headlong into action. It was basically the same as kill-stealing, a very rude behavior.

The corner of the Young Master Phoenix Slayer's mouth rose.

"Senior, since this evildoer has already been taken care of, we'll take our leave," the tall and big monster hunter added.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer nodded his head.

Under the lead of the tall and big monster hunter, the other monster hunters turned around as well, getting ready to leave.

Then, after taking two or three steps, they all turned their bodies around at the same time. Each person was holding a talisman in their hands and threw it toward Young Master Phoenix Slayer!

"Monster hunter space!" the tall and big monster hunter shouted.

The golden-colored 'monster hunter space' appeared once more and enveloped Young Master Phoenix Slayer.

"Evildoer, die! Wahahaha!" the monster hunters shouted as they

barged into the monster hunter space.

Even if the opposite party was a powerful monster of the Fifth Stage, they weren't afraid and decided to enter into action!

They'd just die at the worst!

Moreover, it wasn't like they didn't have any plan. Before making this trip, the leader of the monster hunters took with him a rare treasure of the monster hunter clan.

It was a powerful binding chain. Even if the opposite party was a monster of the Fifth Stage that could assume human form, there was a chance that this chain could block him.

As long as they managed to tie the monster up, they could do as they wished with him!

Song Shuhang, who was standing in an elevated place, face-palmed.

These monster hunters were really hopeless.

After a minute.

The golden monster hunter space was shattered to pieces.

"Hehe." Young Master Phoenix Slayer laughed complacently and pushed up his glasses. "Did you really think that a mere Monster Binding Chain is enough to stop me? Did you think that I'm like those ancient monsters living and cultivating deep in the mountains that don't keep up with the times?"

In the rear, the monster hunters were all lying on the ground unconscious. From time to time, electricity would flash on their bodies.

The fight had come to an end!

Song Shuhang leapt out of the room and used the ‹Virtuous Man's Ten Thousand Mile Walk›. After several leaps, he finally arrived next to Young Master Phoenix Slayer.

"Senior Phoenix Slayer, how should we deal with these monster hunters?"

"Get a small boat and throw them on it. Let them run their course. These guys are quite troublesome," Young Master Phoenix Slayer said as he waved his hand.

"Alright. In that case, I'll look for the captain of the ship and have him bring over a small boat," Song Shuhang replied. Afterward, he took out his phone and contacted the captain of the ship.



After a short moment, five sailors came over.

All the sailors were brimming with qi and blood energy. They were all cultivators of the First Stage with around two of their apertures opened. With their help, Song Shuhang carried the twenty monster hunters to the small boat and threw them inside.

Of course, Song Shuhang conveniently searched the bodies of the monster hunters before letting them go.

He found in total 200 spirit stones of the Second Stage, 15 spirit stones of the First Stage, and 20 bottles of medicinal paste for external injuries.

These monster hunters didn't have what kind of incredible treasure with them while carrying out the mission.

The best treasure they had, the Monster Binding Chain, had already been gladly accepted by Young Master Phoenix Slayer.

Aside from spirit stones and medicinal paste, there was also the blood of the sea urchin warriors. However, Song Shuhang wasn't interested in this sort of things.

But the most important things were those two strange stones.

When he took them in his hands, Song Shuhang confirmed that the stones were indeed spirit beast crystals.

Of the two stones, one strongly resonated with him. It was the whale-type spirit beast crystal.

From the feeling he got, the other one should be a shark-type spirit beast crystal. Both of the stones belonged to spirit beasts that lived in the sea.

After sweeping the monster hunters clean, the sailors gave the small boat a push, making the twenty monster hunters drift to a faraway place.

Song Shuhang returned to Young Master Phoenix Slayer's side with the spoils of war and said, "Senior Phoenix Slayer, the monster hunters had these items with them. Anyway... I wanted to buy these two spirit beast crystals from you, Senior."

"Spirit beast crystals? I have no use of these gadgets," Young Master Phoenix Slayer said. "You can keep them, and you can keep the rest as well!"

From Young Master Phoenix Slayer's viewpoint, these spirit stones of the First and Second Stage were probably no different than a few cents.

He didn't even bother accepting such a small number of spirit stones.

"In that case, I'll gladly accept," Song Shuhang said with a smile and accepted the spirit beast crystals. He urgently needed these crystals; therefore, he wouldn't stand on ceremony with the senior.

With the addition of these two spirit beast crystals, he had already gathered one-third of the total number of crystals.



Young Master Phoenix Slayer laughed and arrived in front of the

black horse spirit. "Stop lying on the ground and feigning death, get up! Those monster hunters only had the strength of the Second Stage Realm. The strength of the talismans they used to attack you can at most give you some bruises."

The black horse spirit forced a smile and opened its eyes. Afterward, it shot a look at Young Master Phoenix Slayer, faintly sighing.

Then, it stopped feigning death and got up. All the bones in its body made crackling sounds. Next, its body slightly bent, getting ready to perform some kind of action.

"Is it trying to fight back?" The corner of Young Master Phoenix Slayer's mouth rose.

The black horse spirit took a deep breath.

Then, it displayed a very special skill... it jumped high in the sky and fiercely knelt on the ground, almost hugging the ground.

"F*ck!" the nearby Song Shuhang cried out subconsciously.

Song Shuhang found this unique skill quite familiar. Moreover, he knew how to use it as well...

This technique was part of the '500 Ways to Surrender to a Human Cultivator You're Unable to Defeat', the 'Fiercely Kneeling on the Ground and Surrendering Technique'.

It was a type of very 'explosive' skill.

"Immortal, please forgive this small monster. Just now, this small monster was only joking. The small monster surrenders!" The black horse spirit sincerely surrendered.

Chapter 487: Actually, I'm a stallion spirit

You guessed it right. This 'Fiercely Kneeling on the Ground and Surrendering Technique' was one of the lost techniques that the mysterious monster organization never spread to the outside world.

After joining the monster organization and passing the test, an elder holding a thick 'secret book' would come over in order to pass down the secret techniques to the newcomers. The name of this set of techniques was '200 Must-have Skills for a Monster Spirit to Survive'.

Casting prejudice aside, Song Shuhang really appreciated that technique called 'Ultimate Seducing Skill of a Pretty Female Monster'. After all, it was very pleasing to the eye.

Additionally, that Divine Stealing Technique very interesting as well. If a cultivator of the Second Stage like Song Shuhang were to use it, there was a certain probability that he could steal some small items from a cultivator of the Third Stage. However, Shuhang didn't like this ability too much.

Wait, we got sidetracked...

Anyway, as soon as the black horse spirit used the 'Fiercely Kneeling on the Ground and Surrendering Technique', Song Shuhang understood where this monster came from... this horse spirit came from the same monster organization that once swindled and recruited Lady Onion. The name of that organization was 'All the Monsters of the World Should Unite and Become a Family'.

The objective of this black horse spirit should be Lady Onion...

However, I've been carefully hiding Lady Onion all along. How did this guy discover her?



After seeing the black horse spirit sincerely surrender, Young Master Phoenix Slayer was speechless.

At first, he'd thought that the black horse spirit would launch a fearsome counterattack, but little did he expect that the idiot would surrender in such a manner.

"Alright. Since you surrendered, it's time to spill the beans. Why were you following this little friend next to me and trying to harm him?" Young Master Phoenix Slayer asked.

The black horse spirit had been secretly following Song Shuhang before the start of the hand-guided tractor competition.

For this reason, Young Master Phoenix Slayer and Song Shuhang carried out a transaction. Young Master Phoenix Slayer would investigate the origins of the black horse spirit, while Song Shuhang would participate in the hand-guided tractor competition in his stead.

After hearing Young Master Phoenix Slayer's question, the black horse spirit raised its head and cautiously looked at Song Shuhang. Afterward, an embarrassed expression appeared on its black horse face.

Then, the black horse spirit started to explain, "Actually, I'm a stallion spirit, and I very much like to act like one. Recently, my mating season finally started. Therefore, I've been looking for a suitable partner."

After saying these words, the stallion spirit was especially embarrassed.

"Stallion spirit, did your spermatozoa rush to your head? Tsk, it seems that a leopard cannot change its spots. Hmm? Wait a moment!" Young Master Phoenix Slayer suddenly opened his eyes wide and, pointing at Song Shuhang, said, "Even if it was your mating season, why were you secretly following this little friend? Open your eyes wide and take a careful look! Although this little

friend seems delicate and pretty, he is a man!"

Song Shuhang quickly said, "Senior, wait a moment! If you put it that way, it might cause misunderstandings!"

"I obviously know that he is a man!" the stallion spirit called out.

"Why were you following him if you knew that he was a man? Are you perhaps a gay horse...?" Young Master Phoenix Slayer took a step backward while having a disgusted expression on his face. He wanted to put some distance between the stallion spirit and himself.

"It's not like this! You're misunderstanding me! In the capacity of a stallion spirit, my sexual orientation is absolutely normal!" the stallion spirit shouted and explained, "My objective isn't this fellow daoist... wait. Actually, he is indeed my objective... no, wait! Dammit, I mean, my objective is the female monster he is carrying with him!"

Young Master Phoenix Slayer turned around and looked at Song Shuhang. "A female monster?"

"Hehe. As expected, your objective was Lady Onion," Song Shuhang said as he touched his pocket. The enlightenment stone and Lady Onion were still there.

"Exactly. My objective is Lady Onion. Although I haven't seen her for several hundred years, I remember that she is a very attractive female monster," the stallion spirit said with a serious expression on his face. "Little Fellow Daoist, Lady Onion is a female monster with next to zero fighting strength and also a member of our organization. Therefore, I have to save her! This is the reason I was following you."

"..." Song Shuhang.

And after saving her, you plan to enjoy her for good, don't you?

"I'm very curious about something. How did you know that Lady Onion was with me?" Song Shuhang asked.

The stallion spirit paused and didn't speak.

After pondering for a long time, he mischievously winked at Song Shuhang and Young Master Phoenix Slayer, saying, "I can't tell you! This is a secret!"

"..." Song Shuhang.

At this time, he felt that he was on the verge of losing his cool...

"Speak clearly!" the nearby Young Master Phoenix Slayer said angrily. Then, he grabbed the Monster Binding Chain and ruthlessly whipped the stallion spirit.

"The Monster Binding Chain..." Song Shuhang had read about this item in the documents shared inside the Nine Provinces Number One Group. It was a unique magical treasure belonging to monster hunters, very useful in suppressing the members of the monster race. Even if it lightly touched a monster, it would leave burn scars on their bodies.

The stallion spirit immediately cried out in pain after being whipped, and a charred black scar appeared on his body.

Song Shuhang noticed that the Monster Binding Chain didn't affect Young Master Phoenix Slayer in the least even though he was holding it in his hands.

What was Young Master Phoenix Slayer's true body? It was unexpectedly immune to the effects of the Monster Binding Chain?

After being whipped twice, the stallion spirit spilled out everything with tears streaming down his face. "I found her due to the soul mark... a soul mark would appear on the bodies of the members of our organization after they learn the lost technique. While within a fixed range, the members of our organization can sense each other's presence. In the capacity of a monster of the Fifth Stage, I can sense Lady Onion's presence if she's within a range of 10 kilometers."

Song Shuhang held his chin and pondered. There was unexpectedly something like this on Lady Onion's body? In other words, if he were to bump into the members of the monster organization, they would immediately become aware of Lady Onion's presence...

From the looks of it, he had to find a way to isolate this soul mark so as to avoid others sensing it.

The stallion spirit clenched his teeth and said with an agonized face, "Little Fellow Daoist... what do you want in exchange for Lady Onion's freedom? State your conditions. As long as it's something I can do, I'll try my best to accomplish it. I'm a monster of the Fifth Stage, and regardless of the conditions you put forth, I won't disappoint you."

Song Shuhang shook his head and said, "I can't let her go."

Lady Onion was now growing on the enlightenment stone. Unless she had a way to separate herself from the stone, Song Shuhang couldn't absolutely let her go.

"Why?" the stallion spirit asked in return.

Song Shuhang replied, "There is no why. I just can't let her go within a short amount of time."

"Is it possible that you fell in love with Lady Onion?" the stallion spirit said in shock. "Little Fellow Daoist, humans and monsters cannot be happy together! Even the child born from the relationship would be a freak*! I advise you to quickly forget about your love for Lady Onion and look for a human female cultivator instead! As for Lady Onion, you can leave her in my care. Although I'm just a stallion spirit, I'm very good toward my women. Therefore, you don't have to worry."

(*freak: The term used is 人妖, and literally means human-monster. But it's widely used to refer to transvestite and perverts.)

"..." Song Shuhang.



Young Master Phoenix Slayer restrained the stallion spirit and temporarily locked him up.

In the meantime, the monster hunters slowly floated far away.

Song Shuhang returned to his room and closed his eyes, preparing to sleep.

"Shuhang, you have to have a good dream," Song Shuhang muttered to himself. It would depend on the quality of today's sleep whether or not he could enter the dreamland.

Chapter 488: The demodragon medicine

Young Master Phoenix Slayer restrained both the stallion spirit and the man wearing black clothes that was part of the Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Sect, locking up them in the rooms of the cruise ship.

On the other hand, the small boat on which the monster hunters were lying drifted afar. The monster hunters onboard were all safe and sound. Therefore, they would wake up in a while and there wasn't the danger that the boat would capsize.

Song Shuhang adjusted his mood and closed his eyes.

After a short moment, he fell asleep.

Would he be able to enter the dreamland?

Song Shuhang was looking forward to it. If he could successfully enter the dreamland, it meant that he had started to comprehend this powerful innate skill of his.

After a short period of time, Song Shuhang started dreaming.

In the dream... he had changed into a horse!

But why did he turn into a horse and not into the man wearing black clothes? There was something very wrong with this dream!

On the left side, Su Clan's Sixteen was walking alongside him with a cool expression on her face.

On the right side, Soft Feather was brightly smiling while holding a steamed stuffed bun. She looked very charming while was taking small bites of the steamed stuffed bun.

Song Shuhang turned his head around and discovered that Yu Jiaojiao was following behind him. At this time, she was as big as the palm of a hand and was continuously leaping forward, looking very cute.

Song Shuhang discovered that there was someone sitting on his

body as well. However, he couldn't tell who it was from his viewpoint.

Not too far in front of him, Venerable White, True Monarch Yellow Mountain, Northern River's Loose Cultivator, Thrice Reckless Mad Saber, and the other seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group were gathered together and chatting about something.

One often dreamt during the night about what they experienced during the day.

Since Song Shuhang met that stallion spirit earlier, he turned into a horse while dreaming...

As expected, the dreamland skill wasn't so easy to trigger!

It was regrettable that he spilled all that blood for nothing.

Song Shuhang faintly sighed.



When he woke the next day, a new day had already started.

The cruise ship was still slowly proceeding forward, and it was unknown how long it would take to reach China.

Song Shuhang took out his mobile phone and looked at the date.

July 23rd, Tuesday.

Today's dao name was Tyrannical Saber Song One.

While at it, Song Shuhang changed his username on the instant messaging app to 'Tyrannical Saber Song One'.

A new day, a new dao name... at the time, I'll see which of the seven dao names receives the highest evaluation and choose that, Song Shuhang thought to himself.

Afterward, he opened the Nine Provinces Number One Group.

Several pages of chat logs had appeared in the group during the night.

Treasure Forging Heavenly Mansion's Yang Xian: "Did Venerable White already take those guys inside the ruins? I quite envy them. As long as they manage to survive the calamity, they'll obtain many benefits."

Everyone knew that although the people close to Venerable White would often find themselves in mortal danger, they would obtain great benefits as long as they managed to survive.

"From what I know, Venerable Spirit Butterfly entered the ruins together with Venerable White. With Senior Spirit Butterfly there, their life and safety should be guaranteed," Northern River's Loose Cultivator said with a laugh.

"I really envy them! If there is a hand-guided tractor competition the next time, remember to invite me!" Fairy Firefly said. "Right. Senior Northern River, you are about to advance in realm, right?"

Northern River's Loose Cultivator: "I'm waiting for that Immortal Master Copper Trigram. I want to beat him senseless during the battle on the summit of the forbidden city and seize the opportunity to break through."

Fairy Firefly: "I wish Senior Northern River a speedy success."

At this time, a member that Song Shuhang had never seen since the day he was added to the group suddenly popped out.

Scholar Xian Gong: "Good morning, Fellow Daoists! Did you hear any news concerning demodragons lately? Please tell me if you have."

This ID was quite familiar!

Sun Splitting Halberd Guo Da: "Demodragons? Senior Xian Gong, do you need some of the materials found on the bodies of demodragons?"

"Yes, I quickly need to prepare a medicine!" Scholar Xian Gong replied. " ***@Northern River's Loose Cultivator,*** Northern River, do you have any insider information?"

"Senior Xian Gong, I was just about to contact a friend that works at the cosmic demon surveillance center. I'll ask him to take a look and inform me if anything happens. Demodragons rarely appeared in the past few years, and even if they appeared, they were relatively low-level," Northern River's Loose Cultivator said. "Actually, we just killed a blood demon that had the strength of the Sixth Stage in the past few days,ahaha."

Demodragons were also a type of cosmic demons, and were even stronger than blood demons.

Moreover, they were different from other cosmic demons that would occasionally leave behind treasures or precious materials after their deaths. Demodragons were famous for being poor wretches. If one could get a few spirit stones after killing them, it was already a very good thing.

However... although demodragons didn't leave treasures behind, their bodies were treasures themselves.

The blood of demodragons was the main material for several medicinal pills and medicine manufactured in the world of cultivators, and their dragon skin could be used to manufacture high-quality magical clothes.

Scholar Xian Gong: "I wanted to prepare some 'demodragon medicine' to increase my physical strength. For these past years, I've been recovering from the wounds that the nuclear explosion left on my body. After I managed to recover from the injuries with great difficulty, I discovered that my mental energy had increased too quickly and my body was unable to keep up. Therefore, I need some 'demodragon medicine' to increase the strength of my body. Otherwise, a weaker physique might negatively influence me while trying to break through to the Seventh Stage Venerable Realm."

Song Shuhang immediately remembered who this Scholar Xian Gong was.

***\[Advice on how to choose your closing up location—don't let

Scholar Xian Gong's tragedy repeat once more!\]**

Scholar Xian Gong was that awesome senior that suffered the effects of the strongest weapon of mankind to date... he was directly hit by a nuclear bomb and still managed to survive.

From the looks of it, this senior was planning to break through to the Seventh Stage Venerable Realm. In other words, his current realm was that of a Sixth Stage True Monarch.

"The demodragon medicine, huh. It's a very good thing. Senior Xian Gong, do you have the formula of the medicine?" Northern River's Loose Cultivator asked with a smile. "If Medicine Master were to discover that you have the formula of the medicine in your possession, he would throw away his shame and immediately run up to your place."

Scholar Xian Gong: "Hehe, a disciple of mine got a hold of this formula while he was taking risks outside a long time ago. If you hadn't reminded me, I would have almost forgotten about it. **@Medicine Master,** send me a message when you're online."

He needed Medicine Master's help to analyze the formula of the 'demodragon medicine'.

Northern River's Loose Cultivator: "Senior Xian Gong, my friend said that there is no news of demodragons descending. He said that he'd keep it in mind and notify us if there is anything about demodragons."

Scholar Xian Gong: "Got it. Thank your friend on my behalf. Northern River, after you advance in realm, I'll give you a big congratulatory gift."

Northern River's Loose Cultivator: "Senior, you're too polite. However, I quite like the idea."

* * *

"Demodragon... demodragon medicine..." Song Shuhang casually opened the documents shared in the Nine Provinces Number One

Group and scrolled through the material related to 'cosmic demons'.

Just as Song Shuhang was looking at the material related to cosmic demons, a friend sent him a message.

The ID of this friend was 'Mad Mental Hospital's Director'. It was someone that Song Shuhang had added while he was playing games back then.

"Eh? You're Stressed by a Mountain of Books! How come you changed your name? If not for your familiar avatar, I would have removed you from the friend list! 😏" Mad Mental Hospital's Director said as he sent a smiling emoji.

"Ahaha, I'm planning to change name every day. When the time comes, I'll choose the one that sounds better," Song Shuhang replied.

"You're truly an amusing fellow," Mad Mental Hospital's Director said. "However, I feel that the name 'Tyrannical Saber Song One' is a bit awkward to pronounce. I feel that it would flow much better if you were to change it to 'Thrice Song Tyrannical Saber' instead."

"..." Song Shuhang.

Dammit, do you really think that I won't flip the table?! (╯'▏
)╯┌─┐

Chapter 489: The secret of the golden chain

"Don't mention Thrice Song again and we can still be friends," Song Shuhang replied.

He didn't want to have any relationship with Thrice Reckless Mad Saber's rule of not committing the same mistake more than three times and this dao name called 'Thrice Song'.

Mad Mental Hospital's Director: "Then, how about Song Four or Song Five?"

"I'd be grateful if you could just put an end to this topic," Song Shuhang replied. Afterward, he resolutely changed the subject. "How come I didn't see you online playing games recently?"

"I graduated from school and started working. I don't have much time to play games nowadays." Mad Mental Hospital's Director sighed with emotion and said, "Moreover, I've been trying to find a way to change this old illness of mine."

"What illness?" Song Shuhang asked.

"It's a rather bad illness," Mad Mental Hospital's Director said. "How can I explain it... let's make an example. When a man sees a very attractive woman, he would want to do her, right?"

Song Shuhang said, "...Are you a stallion whose spermatozoa rushed to its head?"

"It's just an example!" Mad Mental Hospital's Director quickly replied.

Song Shuhang said, "Alright. Although sperm might have rushed to your head, it's not too strange for a man to lust after a beautiful woman after seeing her."

Mad Mental Hospital's Director sighed with emotion and said, "The problem is that my illness doesn't stop at this..."

Song Shuhang sent a question mark: "?"

"Due to this illness of mine, whenever the thought of 'doing' the beautiful woman pops up in my mind, my body automatically moves toward her in order to bang her," Mad Mental Hospital's Director said.

"..." Song Shuhang said, " 110 1 operator? Can I report a crime? There is this scary pervert upstairs! Please, arrest him!"

"Like I said earlier, it was just an example! An example!" Mad Mental Hospital's Director said.

Song Shuhang said, "You're using such abnormal and scary examples. I think that it's still better to report you to the authorities."

"Stop! If you stop with this stuff about reporting me to the 110, we can be still friends," Mad Mental Hospital's Director said helplessly.

Song Shuhang: "Ahahaha."

"Moreover, I would like very much to get rid of this illness that makes my body move on its own!" Mad Mental Hospital's Director sighed with emotion.

"There are two solutions," Song Shuhang suggested. "The first one is to have a strong will."

Mad Mental Hospital's Director: "If will alone could solve this problem, I wouldn't be so sad!"

"The second method is to have you castrated! If the source of your lust is cut off, you cannot commit the crime even if you want to! Ahahaha!" Song Shuhang said evilly.

Mad Mental Hospital's Director: "..."

After a short period of time, he replied in a serious tone, "Perhaps this is the way."

This time, it was Song Shuhang's turn to be speechless.

"Hey, hey, hey. Direction, you don't have to take it to heart!"

Song Shuhang quickly said. "I don't want you to turn into China's last court eunuch due to my joke!"

"F*ck off. Who said that I wanted to be a court eunuch? I only said that eliminating the problem at the root might be the solution," Mad Mental Hospital's Director said. "Anyway, I have to go now since a senior called me. It's quite troublesome after you start working. You can't really control your life anymore."

"Go, go!" Song Shuhang said with a smile.



On the surface of the boundless sea, twenty men were squeezed into a small boat.

It was precisely that group of twenty monster hunters.

Amongst them, a young monster hunter put his phone away and muttered to himself, "Eliminate the problem at the root... but how can monster hunters get rid of this impulse that rushes up to their heads as soon as they see a monster?"

"What are you talking about?" the big and tall leader of the monster hunters said with a smile as he patted the shoulder of the young monster hunter.

"Leader, it's nothing. Anyway, the opposite party even stole our Monster Binding Chain. Is there really no problem?" the young monster hunter asked.

"Don't worry. It was just a Monster Binding Chain, nothing too important. Moreover, the chain can help us lock the position of that monster." The team leader clenched his fist and said, "There is bound to be a day when we'll catch him and seal him!"

The corner of the young monster hunter's mouth twitched.



Song Shuhang put his phone away and went to wash his face and rinse his mouth. Afterward, he went to wake up Guoguo.

"Senior Brother Shuhang, good morning," Guoguo said as he rubbed his eyes.

"Wash your face and rinse your mouth. In a while, we'll go to eat breakfast. Then, don't forget about your practice and morning buddhist scriptures," Song Shuhang said with a smile.

"Yes." Guoguo stood up and ran to wash his face. He was always together with Song Shuhang lately, and his cultivation speed had increased by leaps and bounds due to the effects of the enlightenment stone.

Yu Jiaojiao jumped from the windowsill and directly landed on Song Shuhang's shoulder. She was likewise benefitting from the effects of the enlightenment stone. Therefore, she quite liked staying close to Song Shuhang.

"When will we reach China?" Yu Jiaojiao asked.

Song Shuhang said, "I don't know, either. However, this cruise ship is something that Senior Seven Lives Talisman prepared. Therefore, its speed should be faster than other cruise ships."

"Let's quickly get back to China and kidnap that author so that we can have him write the plot of the movie," Yu Jiaojiao said excitedly.

Song Shuhang said with a smile, "Ahaha, sure."

After saying this much, Song Shuhang shot a glance at the several items lying on the bedside cupboard. Those were the items he found on the body of that man wearing black clothes.

He stretched out his hand and grabbed that thick golden chain. The more he looked at it, the more he felt that it was the chain of a dog coated with gold.

"Right. Shuhang, did you succeed yesterday?" Yu Jiaojiao asked. She remembered that Song Shuhang made that man wearing black clothes drink his blood and went to sleep in order to activate some kind of technique.

"I failed, and I wasted that cup of blood for nothing," Song Shuhang said gloomily. He was unable to enter the dreamland and ended up dreaming about himself turning into a horse instead.

Yu Jiaojiao asked, "In that case, do you want to interrogate that man again today?"

"Yeah, I might as well... but let's look for Senior Phoenix Slayer first and see if he has the means to make that man speak," Song Shuhang said.



After breakfast, Guoguo went to practice and started chanting the morning buddhist scriptures.

On the other hand, Young Master Phoenix Slayer was still sitting in meditation and practicing. Song Shuhang didn't want to disturb him and decided to wait for him to finish his practice before interrogating that man wearing black clothes again...

At this time, Song Shuhang was together with his several roommates, lying on the top of the cruise ship and bathing in the sun.

"Although we didn't manage to get to the resort island, our trip still turned out to be pretty exciting," Tubo said as he sighed with emotion. First the airplane accident, then the island of natives where the population was trying to learn Chinese, and now this super-luxurious cruise ship. They experienced a lot of things in the past few days.

Gao Moumou, who was lying down together with his girlfriend, said listlessly, "I would be even happier if so many third wheels weren't in the way."

"Ahaha... anyway, I didn't even have the opportunity to put into practice the plan I prepared for that date with Miss Lu," Zhuge Zhongyang said. The reason he invited everyone to go on this trip was precisely the date with Miss Lu, but he didn't expect that so

many unexpected things would happen in the middle.

Song Shuhang turned his head around with a smile and said, "There are still a few days left until the cruise ship reaches China. You should make the best use of your time and ask Miss Lu out."

"Good idea," Zhuge Zhongyang said as he held his chin. Afterward, he pulled Gao Moumou away in order to arrange the plan for the date.

Gao Moumou turned toward Song Shuhang and ferociously glared at him.



Song Shuhang stretched himself and fiddled with the golden chain in his hands. This golden chain was surely related to the Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Sect. But how could he uncover the secret of the chain?

Should he try to drip some blood on it to become its master?

Or perhaps he should throw it into fire, submerge it underwater, or bury it in the earth?

"Shuhang, when did you get that thick golden chain?" a nearby Tubo said with a smile after he saw the chain in Song Shuhang's hands. Since when had Song Shuhang's tastes become so strange? He unexpectedly went ahead and bought a golden dog chain...

"I got it yesterday. It's beautiful, isn't it?" Song Shuhang said jokingly.

"Hmm... it really suits you!" Tubo said with a smile. "Why don't you try it out? I feel that it would be rather amusing if you were to wear it."

"Wear it?" Song Shuhang held the gold chain, lost in thoughts.

After he got his hand on the chain, he didn't try to wear it. Since the outward appearance of the chain was rather unsightly, he felt that it wouldn't look good on him.

After pondering for a moment, Song Shuhang quietly used his little finger to alert Yu Jiaojiao who was hiding in his hair.

Then, he cautiously put the chain around his neck... perhaps wearing the chain was the method to uncover its secrets?

However, it was very dangerous to casually wear a cultivation-related item around one's neck.

Therefore, he alerted Yu Jiaojiao and hinted her to give him a hand in case something unexpected happened. With that, if the golden chain acted strangely, Yu Jiaojiao would immediately help him.

Song Shuhang wore the golden chain.

But unfortunately, there was no reaction.

Song Shuhang secretly heaved a sigh of relief, but he was still a little disappointed.

"Pfff~" The nearby Tubo burst out in laughter. "You really wore it!"

"It doesn't look good?" Song Shuhang raised his brows.

Tubo said, "It doesn't suit you in the least! I feel that it might suit you only if you were ten times fatter!"

"That's quite unfortunate. I wouldn't be able to become fatter even if I wanted to," Song Shuhang said as he stretched out his hand, getting ready to take off the golden chain.

Then, just as he grabbed the golden chain and raised it level with his eyes, his hand suddenly stiffened.

When he looked at the golden chain from this angle, he discovered that the links of the chain, where pictures of the animals were engraved, emitted a weak radiance after the sunlight shone on them.

The radiance these pictures emitted seemed to have the ability to hypnotize the onlooker. It made one unable to move their eyes

away. But if they stared at the pictures, they felt as though their whole consciousness would be sucked inside.

Song Shuhang found this feeling rather familiar.

When he'd shot a glance at the secret book containing the 〈Basic Buddhist Fist Technique〉 back then, he got the same feeling!

It was possible to rely on the combination of pictures and writing to create a low-level illusion that would help in passing down the technique.

This golden chain likewise used pictures, the sunlight, and a specific angle to create a simple illusion. However, Song Shuhang's mental energy was currently too strong, and he wouldn't be easily influenced by such an illusion.

Interesting!

The corner of Song Shuhang's mouth rose. He took off the golden chain and patted Tubo's shoulder. "Tubo, thank you! After we return to China, I'll treat you to a sumptuous meal. At the time, you would be able to eat whatever you want without the need to stand on ceremony!"

Afterward, he swaggered away toward his room while holding the golden chain, leaving behind a dumbfounded Tubo.

Chapter 490: The Whale Swallowing Technique!

"Guoguo has yet to return?" Song Shuhang asked after entering the room. There were no traces of the small monk.

Yu Jiaojiao replied, "He should still be chanting his morning buddhist scriptures. Being a buddhist is slightly troublesome, but their willpower will turn out to be very strong in the future."

"So that's how it was." Song Shuhang nodded.

Afterward, he wore the golden chain once more and said, "Jiaojiao, I've discovered the secret of this chain. Now, I'll try to sink into the illusion on my own. Can you give me a hand if something unexpected happens?"

Yu Jiaojiao replied, "Sure, leave it to me."

Song Shuhang raised the golden chain to his eye level, and when the sunlight shooting through the window shone on it, something about the chain changed again.

The thirty-three animal pictures on the chain started emitting a gentle radiance, and the lines the animals were made of started to sway from side to side like waves.

Song Shuhang stared at the animal pictures and slowly rotated the golden chain clockwise, carefully looking at each picture.

When he reached the picture of the 'whale', the lines on the golden chain swayed even more fiercely.

As expected, there is a connection with the Huge Whale Chapter of the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique> that I practice...

Now then, how can I sink into the illusory technique concealed within these pictures?

Back then, he was able to enter the illusion of the <Basic Buddhist

Fist Technique》due to the combinations of the pictures and chant of the technique. Moreover, he was just an ordinary person, and the amount of mental energy he possessed was very low. This allowed him to be easily influenced by the illusion.

But now, he was already a cultivator of the Second Stage Realm, and his mental energy was hundreds of times stronger than before. As if that wasn't enough, the golden chain didn't have any chant associated to it... could he successfully sink into the illusion by relying on the Huge Whale Chapter of the 《Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique》alone?

Song Shuhang had no way to tell, but he still decided to give it a try.



Around three minutes later, Song Shuhang's eyes lost focus.

He had managed to successfully sink into the illusory technique concealed within the pictures of the golden chain.

Although what he was doing was rather risky, it was still within the range of what Song Shuhang could accept. Moreover, he secretly liked the excitement that braving dangers brought along.

Inside the illusion.

A huge ocean full of waves appeared before Song Shuhang's eyes.

Amidst the waves, a huge whale was spraying water like a fountain.

"This feeling... it seems that I'm inside one of those spaces where cultivation techniques are passed down?" Song Shuhang muttered to himself. This space was the same as the one he entered when he learned the 《Basic Buddhist Fist Technique》.

Now then, how is this huge whale going to pass down the technique?

"Whooo~" the huge whale issued a strange cry.

Soon after, it turned its head around and looked at Song Shuhang.

Was it about to pass down the technique to Shuhang?

"The password!" the huge whale said in a grave tone.

"Eh?" Song Shuhang lightly called out.

"The password!" the whale roared once more.

Song Shuhang pondered for a moment and casually said, "1 2 3 4 5?"

"The password is incorrect. The process of passing down the technique failed," the huge whale cried out. Soon after, the surrounding space slightly shook, and Song Shuhang was catapulted out of the illusion.

* * *

"You are back from the illusion?" Yu Jiaojiao asked.

"Yes." Song Shuhang nodded. Just as he expected, that space where the technique was passed down was a type of low-level illusory technique concealed within the golden chain.

It only had the ability to pass down the technique and did not possess any killing power. Therefore, even if he got the password wrong, he was just thrown out of the illusion. It didn't injure him or anything of the like.

"Did you obtain something?" Yu Jiaojiao asked.

"Just like I guessed, the pictures engraved on the golden chain are the key to learn the technique. Earlier, I managed to successfully enter the illusion," Song Shuhang replied.

Yu Jiaojiao asked, "Did you manage to obtain what you wanted?"

"No. There were some security measures inside the illusory space where the technique was being passed down. One needs to know the correct password in order to learn the technique... and

unfortunately, we don't know what the password is," Song Shuhang said as he shrugged his shoulders.

Yu Jiaojiao smiled and said, "Therefore, you want to go to that man wearing black clothes and interrogate him."

"Exactly," Song Shuhang said and nodded.

After stretching himself, he stood up and decided to see if Young Master Phoenix Slayer had finished practicing yet.

But as soon as he stood up, Song Shuhang felt his head become somewhat heavy.

His vision became blurry, and he felt as though stars were dancing before his eyes.

"Is it because I didn't eat enough lately?" Song Shuhang muttered to himself.

No, that's not it. I ate quite well recently. Moreover, I ate a large number of natural treasures as well.

Song Shuhang closed his eyes and rubbed his temples.

But when he closed his eyes... two scenes flashed before his eyes.

He suddenly discovered that he was standing amidst a stretch of ruins, shivering and trembling.

For some reason, his heart started to ache as soon as he witnessed this scene.

At this time, he was standing amidst the remains of a huge celestial palace. However, there were no traces of battle in the surrounding area. It felt as though a power so strong that words alone were not enough to describe it had instantly destroyed this magnificent celestial palace.

Afterward, another scene flashed before his eyes.

It was the bloody palm of a hand.

On the palm were written the words 'Beloved Dog 43B' and

drawn the picture of a golden chain.

Song Shuhang faintly sighed. Was this the password required in the illusory space?

But at this time, he was unable to cheer up.

The sight of the ruins of the celestial palace completely wrecked his mood.



The two scenes were very strange. Moreover, they flashed by before his eyes in the instant he lowered his head.

"So, it seems I managed to obtain what I needed," Song Shuhang muttered to himself.

"What?" Yu Jiaojiao exclaimed.

"It's nothing. I've discovered something rather interesting," Song Shuhang said with a smile. "Jiaojiao, I'll try to sink into the illusion of the golden chain again."

After saying this much, Song Shuhang wore the golden chain once more.

He moved the chain until reaching the picture of the whale and relaxed. Afterward, he coordinated with the picture and got ready to enter the illusion.

Three minutes later, he managed to enter the illusory space once more.

Mighty waves were surging, and a huge whale was spraying water.

"Whooo~" the huge whale cried out strangely. "The password!"

"Beloved Dog 43B!" Song Shuhang replied.

"The password is correct," the huge whale said.

In the next moment, the whale entered into action.

It jumped upward and came out of the water, starting to prance about in the sky.

If one were to consider the huge whale as a stream of 'true qi' and the sea below as the dantian, they would notice that what they were seeing was a type of true qi revolving method. It was precisely the method to revolve one's true qi included in the Whale Chapter of the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique>.

However, the method to revolve the true qi of the Huge Whale Chapter he possessed was incomplete!

The <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique> had a set of supplementary techniques, just like the <Basic Buddhist Fist Technique> had the <Immovable Body of the Buddha> as a complementary technique. Only when the two of them were united, was it possible to obtain the real cultivation technique.

And the supplementary cultivation technique of the Huge Whale Chapter was precisely the <Whale Swallowing Technique>!

Chapter 491: Please, can you not mention these disgusting things while I'm eating?

The Whale Swallowing Technique sounded quite cool from the name.

However, the technique did nothing else except for strengthening one's teeth, stomach, and digestive system.

Moreover, the Whale Swallowing Technique didn't even allow one to eat everything. It only allowed the user to eat one thing... spirit beast crystals.

Song Shuhang understood it as soon as he learned the technique. The Whale Swallowing Technique was the supplementary technique of the Huge Whale Chapter to merge the pseudo-innate true qi inside his body.

After eating the spirit beast crystals, the embryonic form of pseudo-innate true qi inside his body would merge with the origin true qi of the thirty-three spirit beasts, giving birth to a type of 'origin true qi' that was infinitely close to real 'innate true qi'.

Aside from the <Whale Swallowing Technique>, the heritage still contained the first four cultivation techniques of the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique>. These four cultivation techniques were enough to let one reach the Fourth Stage 'Innate' Realm.

And the Fourth Stage Innate Realm just happened to be the realm where one could bring into full display the power of that 'pseudo innate true qi'.



Song Shuhang came out of the illusory space generated by the golden chain once more.

After he regained his senses, he discovered that Yu Jiaojiao and

Guoguo were looking at him with worried expressions.

Guoguo even passed him a hot towel.

"?" Song Shuhang was confused.

Guoguo said, "Senior Brother Shuhang, wipe yourself with this towel. Just now, you suddenly started crying and screaming, you looked very grieved. Elder Sister Jiaojiao and I felt sad just by looking at you."

Song Shuhang wiped his face and discovered that it was full of tears... was it possible that he was so heartbroken after seeing the scene of the destroyed celestial palace that he started crying?

Song Shuhang quickly took the towel from the small monk and wiped the tears off his face.

Now then, why did I start crying after seeing the picture of that celestial palace?

Were those ruins the base of the Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Sect? Or perhaps it was the palace of another influence?

At this time, Yu Jiaojiao asked, "Shuhang, did you obtain something this time?"

Song Shuhang nodded, very satisfied, and said, "Yes. Just now, I managed to obtain the complete version of the cultivation technique I practice, as well as a quite good supplementary cultivation technique."

After saying this much, he put the hot towel down and took the shark-type spirit beast crystal out of his size-reducing purse.

Yu Jiaojiao's small eyes swiveled as she asked, "Is this supplementary cultivation technique related to spirit beast crystals?"

Spirit beast crystals were quite famous in the world of cultivators. After all, the spiritual energy inside wasn't inferior to that of spirit stones. But due to their special structure, there was

no way to extract the spiritual energy within.

Song Shuhang nodded and said, "Yes! That supplementary cultivation technique has the ability to let one absorb spirit beast crystals."

Guoguo and Yu Jiaojiao curiously looked at Song Shuhang. They wanted to know how Song Shuhang was going to make use of these spirit beast crystal with the new cultivation technique he learned.

Song Shuhang held the shark-type spirit beast crystal between his fingers. But soon after, a perplexed expression appeared on his face.

According to the description of the <Whale Swallowing Technique>, his teeth would change after using the technique, becoming capable of biting to pieces the spirit beast crystal, and his stomach and digestive system would be able to completely digest the bits of the spirit beast crystal. Moreover, the technique allowed to perfectly guide all the energy within the spirit beast crystal to the dantian.

After the spiritual energy within the spirit beast crystal converged in the dantian, the total quantity of his true qi would increase. Additionally, the stream of spirit beast origin energy would merge with the embryonic form of his 'pseudo-innate true qi'.

After eating the thirty-three different types of spirit beast crystals, the embryonic form of his pseudo-innate true qi would change, becoming whole.

In that case... here was the question. How was he supposed to eat the spirit beast crystal?

Was he supposed to eat it raw?

Or should he add some salt or soy sauce? Or sugar instead?

"What is Senior Brother Shuhang doing?" Guoguo asked in puzzlement.

Yu Jiaojiao said in a grave tone, "Don't be impatient. Perhaps he's using that mysterious cultivation technique and trying to absorb the energy within the spirit beast crystal."

Guoguo nodded his head, his expression one of excitement.

Then, under Guoguo and Yu Jiaojiao's gaze, Song Shuhang wiped the spirit beast crystal and put it in his mouth, taking a bite of it.

"..." Guoguo.

"..." Yu Jiaojiao.

"..." Song Shuhang.

Painful, painful, painful! My teeth almost broke!

"This <Whale Swallowing Technique> can only harden the teeth a bit. It won't allow one to directly bite through spirit beast crystals!" Song Shuhang said as he covered his mouth.

But very soon, he realized what was going on. In the end, he had just obtained the <Whale Swallowing Technique>, and he was at most at the beginner level in regards to this technique.

It was too soon to directly eat spirit beast crystals.

From the looks of it, he had to practice the <Whale Swallowing Technique> a lot and reach at least the intermediate level before being able to eat spirit beast crystals.

However, this cultivation technique wasn't easy to practice!

To practice it, he had to continuously bite spirit beast crystals.

If seniors unaware of the situation were to see him grinding spirit beast crystals with his teeth every day, they would probably think that he had gone mad or something.

"From the looks of it, I'll have to use an unconventional method." Song Shuhang's eyes changed as he said, "Let's go, let's look for Senior Phoenix Slayer!"

Yu Jiaojiao and Guoguo blinked their eyes at the same time, their

expressions those of confusion.



Young Master Phoenix Slayer concluded his meditation and opened his eyes.

"A new day has begun!" Young Master Phoenix Slayer said as he stretched himself.

The early hours of the morning were the best to plan things. Therefore, he really liked this period of time.

At this time, someone knocked on the door.

"Come in," said Young Master Phoenix Slayer.

The door was pushed open and Song Shuhang, Guoguo, and Yu Jiaojiao entered the room hurriedly.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer looked at the three in confusion and said, "Did you need something from me?"

Song Shuhang immediately said, "Senior Phoenix Slayer, can you use again that technique that swapped our bodies?"

Young Master Phoenix Slayer blinked his eyes and said, "Why?"

"Senior, I need to borrow your CPU to run a program," Song Shuhang replied.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer replied, "Speak clearly!"

"Senior, I need to borrow your body to practice a cultivation technique. That technique is very useful to me," Song Shuhang replied honestly.

The corner of Young Master Phoenix Slayer's mouth twitched.



But in the end, Young Master Phoenix Slayer still used his innate skill to swap bodies with Song Shuhang. "This is the last time! Don't even think of taking advantage of me all the times!"

"Senior Phoenix Slayer, you're really the best monster ever!" Song Shuhang said gratefully. "However, can I pay you the next time to borrow your body?"

Young Master Phoenix Slayer bellowed, "You can forget about it!"

From the looks of it, there seemed to be no hope~ it was truly regrettable~

"I'll say it beforehand. This time, it can be considered a fair deal. The process of swapping bodies is a type of training for me as well," Young Master Phoenix Slayer said.

After saying this much, he took off his glasses and stared at Song Shuhang with his strange eyes. In the next moment, their bodies were swapped.

That familiar delay of three seconds was also back!

There wasn't much time. Therefore, Song Shuhang quickly used Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body to practice the ⟨Whale Swallowing Technique⟩.

Just like that time with the ⟨Inverted Scale Saber Technique⟩, hundreds of inspirations, as well as basic knowledge of more than seventy swallowing and teeth strengthening techniques, suddenly popped up in his mind as soon as he finished practicing the ⟨Whale Swallowing Technique⟩ the fourth time. From the looks of it, Young Master Phoenix Slayer was very knowledgeable when it came to training one's teeth. Did he learn these techniques when he was fighting against Doudou and couldn't assume human form yet?

The ⟨Whale Swallowing Technique⟩ was a supplementary cultivation technique of the Second Stage rank, and it was quite easy to practice it with Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body who was at the Fifth Stage Realm.

Meanwhile, Young Master Phoenix Slayer's consciousness

entered Song Shuhang's body.

With this innate skill, Young Master Phoenix Slayer could forcefully enter other people's bodies with his consciousness. For example, he controlled Doudou's body and made him shout stuff like 'Mr. Yellow Mountain is my loyal little dog' back then.

He could even make the consciousness of other people enter his body, just like he did with Song Shuhang before, allowing him to control his body.

Or he could make the two parties directly swap bodies like he did at this time.

Song Shuhang borrowed Young Master Phoenix Slayer's body to practice the ⟨Whale Swallowing Technique⟩ and the ⟨Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique⟩. On the other hand, Young Master Phoenix Slayer borrowed Song Shuhang's body to train this innate skill of his that could allow him to swap bodies.

If the two parties swapped their bodies willingly, Young Master Phoenix Slayer would obtain twice the results with half the effort while training his innate skill.

However, the so-called 'fair deal' was just Young Master Phoenix Slayer helping Song Shuhang one last time for Doudou's sake.

Or did you really think that his CPU was there for public use and everyone could borrow it?



When Young Master Phoenix Slayer relieved his 'body swapping' innate skill, Song Shuhang's ⟨Whale Swallowing Technique⟩ had already reached the master level.

Then, he once again took out the shark-type spirit beast crystal and started wiping it.

Afterward, he asked, "Anyone here has some ketchup?"

"I have it." Guoguo handed over some ketchup to Song Shuhang,

as well as two pieces of white bread. "I just finished meditating, and I didn't have the time to eat breakfast yet."

Song Shuhang replied, "Thank you, Guoguo."

Afterward, Shuhang added some ketchup to the spirit beast crystal and used the 〈Whale Swallowing Technique〉 once more.

When he used the 〈Whale Swallowing Technique〉 this time, Song Shuhang felt his teeth becoming as hard as godly weapons. It shouldn't be a problem for the current him to bite a steel knife to pieces.

In the worst case, he could now go to the streets and perform in variety shows.

"Crack~" Song Shuhang took a bite of the spirit beast crystal.

The incredibly hard spirit beast crystal was bitten to pieces.

"Nom, nom, nom..."

"Gulp~"

"It tastes a little strange, and it smells like fish," Song Shuhang muttered to himself.

Guoguo said, "He really ate it."

Yu Jiaojiao said, "That was quite awesome."

Young Master Phoenix Slayer said, "Can you really digest that thing after eating it? Won't you get diarrhea if you can't digest the pieces of the spirit beast crystal?"

"..." Song Shuhang said, "Senior Phoenix Slayer, can you not mention these disgusting things while I'm eating?"

"..." Young Master Phoenix Slayer.

As he was speaking, Song Shuhang completely gobbled up the spirit beast crystal. It took him only three bites.

This shark-type spirit beast crystal came from a shark-type spirit beast of the Third Stage. In other words, it was equivalent to a

spirit stone of the Third Stage.

The spiritual energy within the spirit beast crystal was a bit too much for the current Song Shuhang. For a moment, he felt as though his dantian was going to explode.

Luckily, his dantian had been strengthened by Senior White's 'Qi Storage Expanding Technique', and its capacity was much higher than that of an ordinary cultivator of the Second Stage.

Song Shuhang didn't dare to be careless and sat down on the spot. He closed his eyes and started to operate the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique>, guiding the huge amount of spiritual energy inside his dantian.

At the same time, he guided the shark-type origin true qi within the spirit beast crystal as well, merging it with the embryonic form of the pseudo-innate true qi in his dantian.

The illusory picture of a tiny shark appeared next to the needle-shaped embryonic form of the pseudo-innate true qi, moving all around it.

Chapter 492: I'm not the one in the wrong, the world is!

"Senior Brother Shuhang, what's the matter?"

Young Master Phoenix Slayer replied, "It seems he ate too much."

"There are some things that you can't eat carelessly," Yu Jiaojiao added.

Guoguo somewhat understood and nodded his head.



After half an hour, Song Shuhang was completely exhausted as he opened his eyes. At this time, a green radiance would often flash through his eyes.

Although it was difficult, in the end he managed to convert all the spiritual energy inside the spirit beast crystal into true qi.

At this time, both his Sea of Qi Dantian and Dragon Tail Dantian were completely full. If another stream of true qi were to pour inside them, Song Shuhang felt that they would explode.

Currently, there was the projection of a shark-type spirit beast next to the embryonic form of his pseudo-innate true qi, as well as a spirit pattern above it.

At the same time, Song Shuhang felt the area between his eyebrows swell as well. His mental energy had also increased due to the spirit beast crystal.

Song Shuhang's mental energy was already higher than an ordinary cultivator's of the Second Stage. Now that his mental energy had also sharply increased, he felt as though his head was going to explode too.

"My mental energy is approaching the maximum limit the body can withstand," Song Shuhang muttered to himself.

As he was speaking, that green radiance kept flashing through his eyes from time to time. It was a sign that his mental energy had increased suddenly, making him unable to control it properly.

The body, true qi, and mental energy of a cultivator were all connected.

Only if one had a strong body would they be able to accommodate a lot of true qi and mental energy.

A high level of mental energy meant a high control over one's true qi. The stronger the mental energy, the better could a cultivator control their true qi or spiritual energy, avoiding unnecessary waste of energy.

Since Song Shuhang advanced too quickly recently, both his true qi and mental energy had already reached the limit.

On the other hand, his body wasn't able to keep up with the rest and ended up hindering his cultivation.

If an ordinary cultivator were to become aware of this situation, they would be truly envious! After all, ordinary cultivators advanced step by step, and it usually took them years to break through a small realm.

As a consequence, their body was much more powerful than their true qi, spiritual energy, and mental energy. Therefore, there was almost no cultivator that worried about their true qi and mental energy being stronger than their body.

Therefore... Song Shuhang was currently worrying about a rather good thing!

Song Shuhang took out some body tempering liquid and drank it.

The body tempering liquid didn't have that much of an effect on his body anymore. However, he still had quite a bit of it with him. Therefore, he thought of drinking it as a tonic.

"I have to practice the fist and saber technique some more in

order to further strengthen my body."

Although it was a good thing, it was still quite worrisome.

If his body couldn't keep up and his true qi and mental energy were to increase again... he would explode and die! Quite scary, wasn't it?

He was going to explode for real!



"Eh? Where are Guoguo and Senior Phoenix Slayer?" After relieving the technique, Song Shuhang discovered that only Yu Jiaojiao was left in the room. She was sitting in meditation on his shoulder, performing breathing exercises.

"They went to interrogate the black horse spirit and the man in black clothes. I stayed behind to keep an eye on you," Yu Jiaojiao said softly.

Before they gained the ability to assume human form, the cultivation speed of monster cultivators was several times slower compared to human cultivators.

Therefore, Yu Jiaojiao didn't waste time and freeloadered the enlightenment stone whenever she was close to Song Shuhang. Only by practicing under the effects of the enlightenment stone could she quickly catch up to human cultivators.

"In that case, let's go there as well." Song Shuhang got up from the ground and headed toward the interrogation room.



Inside the interrogation room.

The man wearing black clothes was hanging from the ceiling as before. Young Master Phoenix Slayer didn't torture him but told the small monk to sit in front of him and recite his religious texts.

Additionally, Young Master Phoenix Slayer told Guoguo that he had to preach to this man both in the morning and in the evening

from today until the day they reached China.

This was the so-called 'leading a wicked man toward the correct path'.

Guoguo happily accepted the duty. Leading wicked men toward the correct path seemed something a senior monk would do. Therefore, the small monk really liked the idea.

Guoguo had been enthusiastically chanting religious texts in front of the man in black for already half an hour. Given how excited he was, it wasn't a problem to go on for the whole morning.



On a side, Young Master Phoenix Slayer arranged a soundproof barrier and started to madly whip the stallion spirit.

After it was whipped, the stallion spirit screamed in pain again and again.

After he got tired of whipping the stallion spirit, Young Master Phoenix Slayer took a short break.

"Fellow Daoist, what crime have I committed? You have to give me an explanation!" the stallion spirit said with teary eyes.

After he entered the room, Young Master Phoenix Slayer took the Monster Binding Chain and started to ruthlessly whip the stallion spirit. He didn't even press him for an answer or told him what kind of mistake he had committed. He just started to whip him.

The stallion spirit said bitterly, "I know I was wrong, and I won't go after Lady Onion anymore, and I won't disturb that little fellow daoist either. Is that fine?"

"Hmm." Young Master Phoenix Slayer drank some water to moisten his throat and grabbed the Monster Binding Chain, violently whipping the stallion spirit once more.

The stallion spirit called out in pain again; his body was covered with bruises at this time.

"Fellow Daoist... don't... ah... stop... ah... stop~ I beg you to give me an explanation! Aaaah! ...Just tell me how I can make up to you!" the stallion spirit cried out.

"I haven't thought about how you can compensate yet." Young Master Phoenix Slayer stopped and drank some water.

The stallion spirit bellowed, "Then, why do you keep whipping me!"

"Because you're a stallion," Young Master Phoenix Slayer said coldly.

The stallion spirit was dumbfounded. "What?"

Young Master Phoenix Slayer pushed up his glasses, and his lenses refracted rays of death. "Stallions are truly detestable creatures. The number of monsters in the world is already low. According to the latest statistics of the Monster Race Alliance, the number of male monsters in the world is already five times higher than female monsters! In other words, amongst five male monsters, four won't be able to marry a female monster! And you still dared to act like a stallion! Don't you know that if you stallions keep doing your stallion things, there will be five male monsters that won't be able to marry?!"

The stallion spirit bent his head and said, "So, is that supposed to be my fault?"

"..." Young Master Phoenix Slayer.

"Whip, whip, whip~" A session of brutal whipping followed.

The stallion spirit cried out in pain once again, looking particularly pitiful.

"I'm not the one in the wrong!" the stallion spirit roared. "Is being a stallion a mistake now? I was just a stallion that became a monster; it was something that happened in accordance with the rules of heaven and earth! Therefore, I'm not the one in the wrong, the one in the wrong is this cruel world! This very world that

allowed men to outnumber women is the root of all evil!"

Young Master Phoenix Slayer was dumbfounded. He felt that what the stallion spirit said was quite reasonable... therefore, he whipped him with even more strength!

When Song Shuhang and Yu Jiaojiao entered the interrogation room, they saw Young Master Phoenix Slayer brutally whipping the stallion spirit.

Both of them shivered after seeing the scene.

Afterward, Song Shuhang's bright eyes and Yu Jiaojiao's small and adorable eyes met. The two nodded their heads in unison. Later, they should absolutely avoid making Young Master Phoenix Slayer angry.

He was simply too terrifying!



Song Shuhang and Yu Jiaojiao arrived in the front of that man wearing black clothes.

The man wearing black clothes seemed extremely tired as he raised his head, looking at Song Shuhang with his dim and spiritless eyes.

However, a complacent expression appeared on his face as soon as he saw Song Shuhang.

"Little kid, do you really think that these puny buddhist scriptures can break my will? Naive. My will is as strong as iron! Don't even think about obtaining anything from me before getting removing these magical techniques concealed within my origin true qi!" the man wearing black clothes said hoarsely.

Song Shuhang deeply gazed at the man wearing black clothes. Soon after, he told him the password. "Beloved Dog 43B."

After saying this much, he turned his body around and headed toward the black horse spirit.

The man wearing black clothes was dumbfounded, and a shocked expression appeared on his face.

"Impossible! This is impossible! How do you know the password?!" the man wearing black clothes bellowed as his body rotated while hanging from the ceiling.

How was it possible for that kid to know the password?

If he knew the password... did it mean that he had uncovered the secret of the golden chain as well? If that was the case, he had lost the possibility to bargain back and forth with the other party!

"Benefactor, do not be quickly provoked in your spirit, for anger resides in the lap of fools," the small monk said with a serious expression on his face.

"Fool your beep, beep, beep~ Moreover, that isn't even from a buddhist scripture. It's a sentence from the Bible!" the man wearing black clothes bellowed.

"Eh? Is that so? If that's the case, forgive me. I've been studying famous books belonging to all kinds of religions recently. Therefore, my memory might be a bit messy. However, even if it's not part of buddhism, the saying is still quite reasonable. One must always keep their calm, getting angry is harmful to the body," Guoguo said with a serious expression.

"Bastard, go to hell! You other bastard, from where did you obtain that password?! Dammit, f*ck, f*ck, f*ck~" the man wearing black clothes roared once more.

"Benefactor, cursing is also wrong. If you keep cursing, this lowly monk would have to bring you to a temple," Guoguo said as he frowned.

"Beep, beep, beep~ F*ck! F*ck!" That willpower that the man wearing black clothes was so proud of had disappeared without a trace.

Guoguo stood up and patted the body of the man wearing black

clothes, making him spin.

He started to spin faster and faster, even surpassing the speed of an electric fan.

"Uwaaah~" The cursing of the man turned into a pitiful cry.

In the meanwhile, Song Shuhang arrived next to Young Master Phoenix Slayer and the stallion spirit.

The eyes of the stallion spirit immediately lit as he shouted, "Little Fellow Daoist, save me! I'll never dare to have an idea of Lady Onion ever again! From now on, I'll always keep a distance of five kilometers from you~ Aaaaah~ Additionally, I'll give you a horse dragon as a compensation! Please, save me!"

Young Master Phoenix Slayer sneered and struck as fast as lightning with the Monster Binding Chain.

"Horse dragon?" Song Shuhang blinked his eyes.

"Aaaaah~ How can I explain it... after all, I'm a sort of king amongst horses~ aaaaah~ and I have a group of monster horses under my command. Amongst them, there is a horse dragon with the bloodline of a flood dragon, and it can cross most of China within one day. It's truly dashing!" the stallion spirit called out.

Song Shuhang shrugged his shoulders and said, "It's unfortunate, but I already have something better."

After carrying out the transaction with Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman, he obtained a beautiful silver dragon puppet. It was a puppet that could fly at supersonic speed. If he needed something to ride, the silver dragon puppet was more than enough.

"Then, what do you want? How can I compensate you! Tell me something! Stop whipping me!" the stallion spirit called out.

It really felt as though he was asking for a beating.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer stopped the Monster Binding Chain

and drank another mouthful of water to moisten his throat.

Chapter 493: The horse dragon isn't actually a horse

"In that case, let's chat about the compensation matter." Song Shuhang sat down and tried to think of what he needed the most at this time. "Do you have spirit beast crystals?"

"Yes, yes. I have many of them," the stallion spirit replied hastily.

Other than being a stallion spirit, he was also a horse king. Aside from monster horses, there were also several horse, donkey, and camel-type spirit beasts under his command.

As the spirit beasts passed away, they left behind many spirit beast crystals. After all, one couldn't absorb the energy inside spirit beast crystals as they could do with spirit stones. Therefore, they accumulated little by little and piled up.

"Which types do you have?" Song Shuhang asked.

"I have horse, donkey, and camel-type spirit beast crystals. I only have these three types, but the quantity is very large," the stallion spirit said as he squeezed out a smile on his horse face.

"Then, give me a bunch of spirit beast crystals of each type," Song Shuhang said. He already had a horse-type spirit beast crystal, but he happened to lack the donkey and camel types. Anyway, the Whale Swallowing Technique wasn't limited to the thirty-three animals of the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique>. Song Shuhang could make use of all types of spirit beast crystals and absorb them like spirit stones.

"Sure. I'll give you a bunch of each type." Although he didn't know how much Song Shuhang meant by 'a bunch', the stallion spirit had several of them in stock and could take out more than 200 spirit beast crystals of each type.

Of course, he wouldn't take out so many. At most, he would take out 100 of each type.

Although he could only pile up these things and appreciate them without being able to absorb them, they were still glistening crystals full of spiritual energy, very pleasing to the eye.

"It's settled then," Song Shuhang said and nodded.

The stallion spirit was dumbfounded. Soon after, he said excitedly, "Little Fellow Daoist, is that really enough as a compensation?"

"Yes, I only need spirit beast crystals, after all," Song Shuhang replied.

The eyes of the stallion spirit started to tear up as he said, "You're a really good person~"

"Hehe." Song Shuhang smiled shyly and said to Young Master Phoenix Slayer, "I'll leave the rest of this compensation matter to you, Senior Phoenix Slayer. After all, I'm not too knowledgeable when it comes to the treasures of the world of cultivators. Moreover, you're the one that captured the stallion spirit in the first place."

"Right, it's my turn now." Young Master Phoenix Slayer pushed his glasses up, and rays of wisdom were refracted from each of the lenses.

The stallion spirit immediately broke out in a cold sweat.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer sat in front of the stallion spirit and stuck up his long legs, saying, "Do you have thousand mile fruits?"

The thousand mile fruit was a spirit fruit that could strengthen both the legs and footwork of a cultivator. It was something often associated to horse-type spirit and monster beasts.

"I have some," the stallion spirit replied. Thousand mile fruits were something very important for horse-type monster and spirit beasts!

"Give me a ton of them," Young Master Phoenix Slayer said as he pushed up his glasses.

"You might as well just kill me!" The stallion spirit gave Young Master Phoenix Slayer a supercilious look. What do you take thousand mile fruits for? Apples? Going as far as to use 'tons' to calculate the quantity...

Young Master Phoenix Slayer brandished the Monster Binding Chain and ruthlessly whipped the stallion spirit.

The stallion spirit continuously cried out in pain.

The corner of Song Shuhang's eyes twitched... he felt that Young Master Phoenix Slayer was just trying to find excuses to whip this stallion spirit.

"Ten fruits... I can give you ten fruits at most!" the stallion spirit shouted. "If you want more, you won't obtain them even if you kill me!"

Young Master Phoenix Slayer replied, "Alright, ten it is."

After saying this much, he turned his head toward Song Shuhang and said, "Ten thousand mile fruits, note it down. If you eat these fruits raw, they can strengthen your legs and sharply increase the efficacy of your footwork. At the time, we'll divide them half-and-half."

"Thank you, Senior." Song Shuhang took out his phone and noted everything down.

"Then, give me two of those horse dragon spirit beasts as well," Young Master Phoenix Slayer continued.

The stallion spirit clenched his teeth and said, "Fine."

"Moreover, they have to be completely white and not black or zebra-striped. If it's something you gave birth to, I'd feel disgusted by it," Young Master Phoenix Slayer added.

The stallion spirit clenched his teeth once more and squeezed out

the word 'fine'.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer finally said, "Then, seeing your pitiful appearance, I don't think you have what other good things. Just give me 10,000 spirit stones of the Fifth Stage, and we can call it a day."

The stallion spirit gave Young Master Phoenix Slayer another supercilious look, looking the same as a dead salted fish. "Just take my life instead! I don't have spirit stones!"

The corner of Young Master Phoenix Slayer's eyes twitched. He picked up the Monster Binding Chain and whipped the stallion spirit again.

The stallion spirit called out in pain again and said, "I don't have spirit stones! Aaah~ I really don't have them! All the spirit stones we have are immediately used up! My clan is so big, we don't have extra spirit stones lying around!"

"You're even poorer than what I thought." Young Master Phoenix Slayer put away the Monster Binding Chain somewhat disgruntled and said, "Contact your subordinates and have them deliver the items to China's dock. At the time, we'll hand you over in exchange for the goods."

The stallion spirit clenched his teeth and said, "Give me back my phone, I'll return it after making the call."

Song Shuhang blinked his eyes... weren't the subordinates of the stallion spirit all horses? Except for the stallion spirit himself, none of them was at the Fifth Stage. So they couldn't assume human form, right?

How were they going to answer the phone? With their hooves?

"Alright, this stallion spirit has been taken care of," Young Master Phoenix Slayer said as he pointed his finger toward that man wearing black clothes that was continuously cursing. "How should we deal with that guy?"

Song Shuhang replied, "Let's send him to Medicine Master's place after we reach China. Afterward, we'll wait for Venerable White's return and let him deal with him."

"Medicine Master's place? Then, leave him to me. It just so happens that I have to make a trip there to ask Medicine Master to prepare me a medicinal pill," Young Master Phoenix Slayer said.

"In that case, I'll trouble Senior Phoenix Slayer!"

"You're welcome, it's really nothing." Young Master Phoenix Slayer pushed his glasses up, and his lenses refracted rays of death.

The man wearing black clothes felt a cold feeling spreading all over his body and immediately stopped cursing.



Two days later.

July 25th, Thursday.

Weather: Clear.

Dao name: Baijing Street's Traveling Sabersman.

Baijing Street's Traveling Sabersman was today's dao name.

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman's luxurious cruise ship finally arrived at Shanghai City's dock.

At first, Song Shuhang thought of letting the cruise ship directly approach Wenzhou City's shore... but since the subordinates of the stallion spirit were in Shanghai City, they had no choice but to head there.

"We're back to China, we're finally back!" The passengers on the ship were extremely excited after getting back to China.

Some of them hugged each other and cried.

The nearby people shot weird looks at this group of passengers.

Afterward, they said goodbye to each other and dispersed.

They used all kinds of means of transportation and hastily left, returning home.

Gao Moumou, Tubo, and the others thought of going to the airport first to see if there was a flight they could take to go home.

"Shuhang, aren't you coming back with us?" Gao Moumou asked.

"I have to accompany my friend to a place and take care of a small matter. Everything is fine, you don't have to worry. Let's talk on the phone once we get back home," Song Shuhang said with a smile.

The nearby Young Master Phoenix Slayer gently smiled at Gao Moumou and the others.

"In that case, pay attention to your safety," Gao Moumou said as he waved his hand.

Since Song Shuhang still had some matters to take care of, Gao Moumou and the others headed toward the airport first.

* * *

Along the way, Gao Moumou asked, "Now then, who was that friend of Song Shuhang? Have any of you seen him before?"

Tubo replied, "I haven't seen him before. However, it seems that Song Shuhang befriended all kinds of people lately. Even the master of the island was his friend. I'm really curious as to how the two of them became friends."

Zhuge Yue said, "Didn't you feel that Song Shuhang's friend was very cute? I really wanted to pet him."

"..." Gao Moumou.

Tubo replied, "Cute? No, I don't think so."

He was completely unable to associate that man wearing eyeglasses and continuously refracting rays of wisdom with the word 'cute'.

"You guys don't know how to appreciate things! He was obviously very cute," Zhuge Yue muttered to herself.



Carrying the big delivery box on his shoulders, Sima Jiang said to Song Shuhang, "Shuhang, I also better get going. I have to contact the Fengshou Express Delivery and have this express delivery box delivered to the client."

Next to him were those two disciples of the Chu Family. They were also planning to head back together with Sima Jiang.

"Little Jiang, don't be impatient." Song Shuhang waved his hand and said, "Wait for me. I'm familiar with that old man from the Chu Family and just happen to need his help with something. We can proceed together in a little while, alright?"

"Sure." Sima Jiang nodded. If he could travel together with Song Shuhang, he could improve their friendship.

"In that case, wait here for a moment, Little Jiang. My friend and I are going to pick up a few things, and we'll set out as soon as we return," Song Shuhang said with a smile.



Song Shuhang and Young Master Phoenix Slayer entered one of the storehouses of the dock.

In there, several men wearing black suits and with cool expressions on their faces were defending the storehouse. It was already quite hot today, and after seeing their clothes, one felt even hotter.

"Eh? Those are humans!" Song Shuhang exclaimed. He thought that all the subordinates of the stallion spirit would be horses.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer lifted two of the big boxes and asked, "Is everything in there?"

"Yes, everything is in there. Please check the goods," the man in a

black suit said as he opened several big boxes.

In the first batch were 300 spirit beast crystals of the horse, donkey, and camel types. All of them had been 'carefully' chosen and were spirit beast crystals produced by spirit beasts of the Second Stage rank.

Only the batch of camel-type spirit beast crystals had some crystals of the Third Stage rank. It was because the quantity of camel-type spirit beasts was scarce, and it was not possible to gather so many low-level crystals of the Second Stage rank. Therefore, they had no choice but to use precious spirit beast crystals of the Third Stage to make up the numbers.

Then, there was a small box that contained ten fist-sized golden-purple fruits that resembled green jujubes. These gadgets were precisely those thousand mile fruits. There was no need to refine them into medicinal pills, one would obtain the best results after eating them raw.

The last two boxes should contain those two horse dragons.

The two boxes weren't too big, and it didn't seem that they would be able to hold something of the size of a grown-up horse.

"Did that guy deliver us two foals?" Song Shuhang guessed. When the opposite party delivered them spirit beast crystals, they 'carefully' selected low-level crystals of the Second Stage rank.

Given his 'meticulous' nature, did that stallion spirit really give them two foals instead of horse dragons?

"If he really gave us two foals, I'll whip him to death," Young Master Phoenix Slayer sneered.

In the next moment, he opened the boxes.

As soon as he opened the box, the fishy smell of seawater blew in his face.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer pushed up his glasses, and rays of

death flashed through his lenses. "Ah? Did he unexpectedly dare to play word games with me?"

Young Master Phoenix Slayer opened the box that he himself had brought here. Inside the box was the stallion spirit that was now tied up like a rice dumpling.

"Hmm, hmm, hmm!" the stallion spirit cried out.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer took out the Monster Binding Chain and ruthlessly whipped him...

"Aaaah~ so painful~ aaaah! Nooo~ aaaah~ stop~" the stallion spirit screamed in pain again and again.

Chapter 494: So cold, get me out of here!

Song Shuhang moved closer and shot a glance at the boxes. The two boxes were full of seawater, and inside were two... seahorses.

"..." Song Shuhang.

No wonder Young Master Phoenix Slayer became so angry. That stallion spirit really deserved a good beating! He unexpectedly tricked them by playing with words!

Of course, the seahorses in the boxes weren't ordinary ones.

They had a very large build, and even without counting their curled up tails, their body was at least one and a half meter long. Moreover, there were four small claws growing on their abdominal area, as well as a single horn growing on top of their heads. They were indeed 'horse' dragons with the bloodline of a flood dragon.

"Stop whipping me~ I'll die if you keep hitting me~ Aaaah~ I had no choice but to have those two seahorse dragons delivered here~ After all, you said that you didn't want horse dragons with my bloodline~ But all the horse dragons under my command, aside from the females, which have already become my wives, have my bloodline! I'm a great stallion, after all~" The stallion spirit was rolling all over the ground as he was being whipped.

"..." Song Shuhang.

This was a true stallion, someone capable of creating a clan by himself.

"Are you telling me that there isn't another male amongst this group of horse dragons aside from your wives that hasn't your bloodline?" Young Master Phoenix Slayer sneered.

The stallion spirit said shyly, "There really isn't one. I just recently subdued this community of horse dragons... and I expelled all the male horse dragons, leaving behind only the female ones."

"..." Young Master Phoenix Slayer.

This stallion spirit with sperm inside his head really needed to be whipped to death!

"Moreover, those seahorse dragons are also quite powerful! Although their body is small, they have the bloodline of a flood dragon. They are very strong and can easily carry two people at the same time. Additionally, due to them possessing the bloodline of a flood dragon, aside from land, they can speed through the sky as well!" the stallion spirit added.

It sounded quite cool.

Song Shuhang imagined himself riding a one and a half meter long seahorse dragon... madly dashing about on land just like an adult riding the wooden horse toy of a small kid. The scene was truly dazzling to the eyes.

In the next moment, Young Master Phoenix Slayer turned his head around and said to Song Shuhang, "Shuhang, do you want these seahorse dragons?"

Song Shuhang fiercely shook his head. Even an ordinary white horse spirit beast was better than these two seahorse dragons.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer sighed and said, "In that case... just exchange them with ordinary white horse spirit beasts, alright?"

But right at this time, Yu Jiaojiao secretly pulled Song Shuhang's hair.

Her small eyes were almost imploring Song Shuhang as she asked, "Fellow Daoist Shuhang, can you accept these two seahorses?"

These two seahorses were spirit beasts that possessed the bloodline of a flood dragon.

And Yu Jiaojiao was a 'mermaid' that possessed the bloodline of a flood dragon.

Song Shuhang's black and shiny eyes met Yu Jiaojiao's small and lovely eyes. In the end, he heaved a sigh and said, "Alright. Senior Phoenix Slayer, my seahorse dragon can stay behind."

"Haha." Young Master Phoenix Slayer looked at Yu Jiaojiao and smiled, saying, "Fine. Jiaojiao, you can have mine too."

"Thank you, Senior Phoenix Slayer. Thank you, Fellow Daoist Shuhang," Yu Jiaojiao said happily.

Thereupon... the transaction was finally completed!

Song Shuhang put the spirit beast crystals in the 'size-reducing purse' and gave the ten thousand mile fruits to Young Master Phoenix Slayer.

During this transaction, he obtained the spirit beast crystals, as well as those two seahorse dragons due to Yu Jiaojiao. Therefore, he couldn't accept the thousand mile fruits too.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer smiled and took five of the fruits, pushing the other five back toward Song Shuhang. "These thousand mile fruits aren't really that effective on me anymore. Since you asked me to deal with the compensation thing, I decided to take five of them as a price of going through the trouble. Anyway, since the matter is settled, let's part ways here, little friend Shuhang."

After saying this much, Young Master Phoenix Slayer lifted the other box that had the 'man wearing black clothes' inside and rode his flying sword, heading toward Medicine Master's place.



Song Shuhang lifted the two boxes with the seahorse dragons and nodded at the stallion spirit and his subordinates. "Such being the case, I'll also take my leave, Fellow Daoist Stallion Spirit. Let's hope not to see each other again."

"Wait, wait a moment!" The stallion spirit stretched out his twitching hand and shouted, "Remove these restrictions from my

body first!"

The restrictive techniques that Young Master Phoenix Slayer used on the body of the stallion spirit were still effective.

"Restrictions? Oh, you don't have to worry about that. The restrictions will automatically disappear after two days." Song Shuhang smiled and waved his hand, saying, "Let's hope not to see each other again."

"Let's hope not to see each other ever again!" The stallion spirit bitterly waved his hand as well.



In the meantime.

Sima Jiang brought into full play his capabilities and quickly fetched a cross-country vehicle from the Shanghai City branch of the Fengshou Express Delivery.

Afterward, Song Shuhang, the two disciples of the Chu Family, and Sima Jiang headed toward the territory of the Chu Family all together.

The road was very long, and since they were in a hurry, Sima Jiang and the disciples of the Chu Family took turns driving. With that, they didn't have to stop the vehicle.

After almost 11 hours of driving, the group finally arrived in that small village on the periphery of the territory of the Chu Family.

Since Sima Jiang was just an ordinary man, the disciples of the Chu Family wouldn't bring him to the inner part of their clan.

The ancestor of the Chu Family, Chu Kangbo, had already received the news and was waiting in the small village to receive the express delivery.



The express delivery was successfully delivered.

Now that his duty was completed, Sima Jiang bid farewell to the others.

Just before parting ways, Chu Kangbo gave him two small bottles. It was a medicinal juice with spiritual energy mixed within. If an average man were to drink it, it would slightly strengthen their constitution. The effects were almost the same as the Spirit Green Tea.

After taking the two bottles, Sima Jiang brightly smiled. Then, he bid farewell to Song Shuhang as well and finally drove his vehicle away.

The ancestor of the Chu Family caressed the big box with his slightly shivering hand. This express delivery was something that his friend Li Tiansu, the loose cultivator of the Fifth Stage, sent him before his death.

"Senior Chu, this express delivery box is something that Daoist Priest Li Tiansu sent, right?" Song Shuhang asked.

Song Shuhang had come to this conclusion after listening to Sima Jiang's description, as well as seeing that his ghost spirit didn't want to come out of the box after entering it. After pondering for a while, he came to the conclusion that the only possibility was that it was related to Li Tiansu.

"Yes, it's something that my friend sent over." The ancestor of the Chu Family deeply sighed.

He didn't expect that while he was in secluded meditation, healing his wounds, his old friend would die. The world of cultivators was merciless... sometimes, while one was in secluded meditation, the outside world would greatly change, or things would remain unchanged, but the people would be no more.

Song Shuhang nodded his head and thought, So it was really like this.

He glanced at the box, and he could still feel the presence of the

ghost spirit coming from in there. He even tried to summon it back, but the ghost spirit didn't come out and kept saying it felt very cold.

Next, the ancestor of the Chu Family started to open the express delivery box.

The express delivery was a big box with a lot of runes and formations engraved on it... it looked like a sealing formation. Soon after, a burst of cold air was transmitted from within the box.

It wasn't normal cold. The nearby disciples of the Chu Family fiercely trembled and retreated by a step or two.

"Those that are of the Second Stage or below, get out of here," Chu Kangbo said.

At the same time, he shot a glance at Song Shuhang. It seemed that Song Shuhang was waiting for him to open the box.

He was unable to guess Song Shuhang's intentions... if Song Shuhang wanted to steal the contents of the box, he had plenty of opportunities along the way...

But now, the express delivery was already in his hands, and he was a cultivator of the Fifth Stage. Even a hundred Song Shuhangs wouldn't be able to snatch the express delivery box away from him.

Was it possible that he was just curious about the contents of the box?

Chu Kangbo took a deep breath and stretched out his hand, opening the box.

In the next moment, the ice coffin emitting all that cold finally appeared before their eyes.

The cold was truly terrifying, and a layer of ice had already started forming on the hand Chu Kangbo used to open the box.

A layer of ice covered his hand even though he was a cultivator of

the Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor that should be technically immune to cold and heat! Even the palm of his hand was frozen stiff when he touched the box.

Chu Kangbo faintly sighed.

He immediately guessed the contents of the box... the one inside the box was the daughter of his dead friend!

He knew that Li Tiansu had a daughter affected by a strange disease. Her body was constantly emitting a strange cold, and in critical times, it could even freeze her up.

Even a Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor such as Li Tiansu was unable to find a cure to this strange disease. For the sake of his daughter, he even sold his entire property.

His beloved daughter was the only person that Li Tiansu was unable to let go of during his life.

If an incredibly talented person like Fellow Daoist Li was unable to find a cure to this disease, what can someone like me do? Chu Kangbo laughed at himself in his heart.

But given his great friendship with Li Tiansu and the fact that Li Tiansu entrusted his daughter to him before dying, he would do his best to take care of her.

If there was an opportunity to cure Li Tiansu's daughter, he would seize it even if he had to use all his property in exchange. Money was just a worldly thing, and as long as the people were still there, they could slowly earn those spirit stones back.

* * *

Song Shuhang looked at the ice coffin, and a familiar feeling welled up in his heart.

There was a little girl with white hair inside the chunk of ice.

Her long hair was worn in a braided pigtail and reached until her shoulders. Moreover, she was wearing a heavy overcoat that was

tightly wrapping her body, making her look like a ball.

"Li Yinzhu," Song Shuhang blurted out these words.

The person inside the ice coffin was Li Tiansu's daughter, Li Yinzhu.

Originally, Li Yinzhu had already grown up into a beautiful woman. But due to this strange disease of her, her body continuously shrank and was currently as big as that of a three years old girl.

So that's how it was. No wonder the express delivery box was emitting all that cold, and no wonder the ghost spirit was clinging to the express delivery box, not willing to come out.

Eh? Wait a moment!

Song Shuhang quickly noticed that there was a protruding section on the originally rectangular ice coffin, and the ghost spirit was currently stranded in that protruding chunk of ice.

'Get me out of here~ it's so cold~' the ghost spirit continuously transmitted this thought to Song Shuhang.

It wasn't that it didn't want to leave... it was unable to do so!

Song Shuhang didn't know whether to laugh or cry.

"Senior Chu, since you have opened the express delivery, I'll retrieve my ghost spirit," Song Shuhang said after turning toward Chu Kangbo and cupping his hands.

At this time, Chu Kangbo had already noticed that ghost spirit identical to Song Shuhang stranded in that protruding piece of ice on the ice coffin.

So this was Song Shuhang's aim. He was waiting for him to open the express delivery box so that he could retrieve his ghost spirit... however, why did the ghost spirit enter the express delivery box?

Song Shuhang grabbed the treasured saber Broken Tyrant and gently cut off the protruding piece of the ice.

Although the piece of ice was easily cut off, a light layer of ice had already started forming on the blade of the saber.

This cold is truly terrifying, Song Shuhang thought to himself.

But just as he was preparing to take the saber back, something unexpected happened. A layer of flames started to burn on Broken Tyrant's blade...

Chapter 495: The white-haired girl inside the ice coffin

"The Flaming Saber Technique?" Song Shuhang said in puzzlement.

No, that wasn't it! After all, he didn't even use the Flaming Saber Technique!

The nearby Chu Kangbo asked impatiently, "Little friend, what are you doing?"

Song Shuhang replied, "I'm not doing anything!"

Just as he was speaking, the flames on the treasured saber Broken Tyrant grew even stronger. The flames burning on the saber carried traces of the 'majesty of heaven' within them.

"The flames of tribulation!" Song Shuhang finally understood what was going on.

These flames didn't belong to the Flaming Saber Technique; they were the flames of the heavenly tribulation!

Song Shuhang quickly raised the treasured saber Broken Tyrant, trying to separate it from the ice coffin.

The flames of tribulation were something very dangerous. How terrible would it be if he were to carelessly injure Li Yinzhu who was within the chunk of ice?

But when Song Shuhang put strength in his arm to move the treasured saber Broken Tyrant away, the blade didn't budge.

The ice coffin was like a magnet, firmly attracting the blazing blade. Song Shuhang was unable to move the saber away from the chunk of ice with his strength of the Second Stage.

"What's the matter?" Chu Kangbo quickly dashed forward and supported Song Shuhang's arm, activating his spiritual energy in

order to give him a hand.

But as soon as Chu Kangbo used his spiritual energy, the flames of tribulation on the treasured saber Broken Tyrant started to burn even more fiercely, just as though someone had sprinkled some oil on them.

Song Shuhang and Chu Kangbo let go of the blade at the same time so as to avoid getting hurt by the flames.

"Did the flames of tribulation stay behind from the last time?" Song Shuhang muttered to himself.

The sect master of the Moon Saber Sect, Ba Qianjun, was the previous owner of the treasured saber Broken Tyrant. He was a cultivator of the Fourth Stage that had been injured by the flames of tribulation. In the end, he was burned to ashes with one gentle wave of Song Shuhang's Three Stars Fire Controlling Fan. His body, magical clothes, and token of authority were all thoroughly burned by the flames of tribulation.

At the time, Broken Tyrant happened to be in Ba Qianjun's hands and was likewise burned by the flames of tribulation. When Song Shuhang picked the treasured saber back then, it was completely charred black.

However, he didn't expect that there would be still remnants of those flames left within Broken Tyrant. They finally flared up after being stimulated by the cold emitting from the ice coffin.

The blazing flames covered the entire surface of the ice coffin.

It was a very bad situation. If the flames of tribulation were allowed to keep burning, they might burn down the whole ice coffin.

Song Shuhang clenched his teeth and stretched out his hand once more, trying to grab the treasured saber Broken Tyrant. The handle of the saber wasn't engulfed by the flames yet. Therefore, he could grab it.

Chu Kangbo frowned and said, "Little friend, be careful. The flames of tribulation aren't to be taken lightly."

However, just as Song Shuhang stretched out his hand toward the treasured saber Broken Tyrant, the flames of tribulation suddenly died out as though they had exhausted their strength.

Song Shuhang grabbed the saber. With the disappearance of flames of tribulation, the ice coffin wasn't 'attracting' Broken Tyrant anymore. Therefore, he was able to easily lift up the saber.

As for the ice coffin, only the external layer of ice had been burned by the flames, changing into water that started flowing down. The interior was still as hard as iron and quietly emitting cold. The flames of tribulation hadn't harmed Li Yinzhu inside the ice coffin.

Song Shuhang heaved a sigh of relief.



After making sure that nothing had happened to the ice coffin, Song Shuhang turned toward Chu Kangbo and cupped his hands. "Senior Chu, the express delivery has been delivered, and I have retrieved my ghost spirit as well. Therefore, I'll take my leave."

Mama Song and the others were still worried about the plane crash. Therefore, it was better if he returned home as soon as possible to reassure them.

At the same time, Song Shuhang activated his true qi to melt that chunk of ice trapping the ghost spirit. Now that the piece of ice had been separated from Li Yinzhu's ice coffin, it had lost the support of that chilly cold, becoming a very ordinary piece of ice. It immediately melted under the effects of Song Shuhang's true qi.

After getting out of the piece of ice, the ghost spirit trembled for a little while and quickly drilled inside Song Shuhang's Sea of Qi Dantian, not willing to come out. After Song Shuhang advanced to the Second Stage Realm, the ghost spirit had two places where it

could stay. One was the Heart Aperture, the other the Sea of Qi Dantian.

"Little friend, wait a moment!" Chu Kangbo said hastily at this time. "Since little friend is already here, you might as well make a trip to the Chu Family together with me. I'll give you the map of that forbidden area, as well as the information about the part that Fellow Daoist Li and I explored together."

That forbidden area was the place where Li Tiansu lost his life.

Chu Kangbo secretly shot a glance at Li Yinzhu who was currently sealed within the ice. Perhaps the cure to save his dead friend's daughter was precisely inside that forbidden area.

If that senior called White and this little friend before his eyes could find the cure to Li Yinzhu's disease inside that forbidden area, his dead friend's last descendant might be able to survive.

"Alright." Song Shuhang nodded.

Since he was already here, he might as well take the map of the forbidden area with him.

Who knew, Senior White might even reduce the time he had to stay in space if he were to bring him the map of the forbidden area?

He had to keep a positive mindset!

Just as Song Shuhang was chatting with Chu Kangbo, his phone suddenly rang.

As he took the phone out, he discovered that it was True Monarch Yellow Mountain calling him.

True Monarch Yellow Mountain finally remembered about me? Song Shuhang had tears streaming down his face. Even now, he was unable to take the kasaya off his body.

True Monarch Yellow Mountain's gentle voice was transmitted

from the other end. "Hello, little friend Shuhang?"

"True Monarch, I've been waiting for your call for several days already," Song Shuhang said.

"Cough,ahaha. Little Doudou, this rascal, had been causing a ruckus for the past few days. Hehe, it took me a lot of effort to subdue him." True Monarch Yellow Mountain sounded incredibly pleased with himself as he was speaking.

He didn't turn Doudou into a dog meat hotpot, right?

"Cough. Anyway, I've managed to obtain the password to your kasaya. I'll send you the photo now, be sure to accept it. In that case, goodbye~" True Monarch Yellow Mountain hang up the phone after saying this much. He seemed quite busy with something...

Soon after, Song Shuhang received a picture.

Above it was described how to take off the kasaya.

Afterward, Song Shuhang started to press on the kasaya according to the instructions on the picture.

"Whoosh~" At last, that damnable kasaya came off.

After the kasaya came off, Song Shuhang heaved a sigh of relief and felt as though a huge burden had been lifted from his chest.



Chu Kangbo silently waited for Song Shuhang to take off the kasaya and said, "Little friend, please follow me to the Chu Family."

Song Shuhang put the kasaya over his hand and said, "Senior Chu, please lead the way."

Chu Kangbo stretched out his hand and used his spiritual energy to carefully lift the ice coffin, placing it on a small the cart that was prepared beforehand, preparing to bring it back to the Chu Family.

In the next moment, the ice coffin was picked up by the spiritual energy and gently placed on the small cart.

"Crack!" But just as it was placed down, the whole ice coffin faintly shook.

Soon after, Chu Kangbo and Song Shuhang discovered that there was a crack on the surface of the ice coffin. Next, more and more cracks started to appear on it, covering it like a cobweb.

Song Shuhang said, "It has nothing to do with me, right?"

Chu Kangbo also said at the same time, "I placed it down very lightly!"

"Crack, crack, crack..."

The whole ice coffin broke to pieces.

* * *

"Is it possible that Li Yinzhu regained consciousness?" Song Shuhang guessed. The cold emitting from Li Tiansu's daughter's body wasn't always in an 'active' state.

After flaring up for a certain period of time, the cold would quiet down for some time. While the cold was in a dormant state, Li Yinzhu could act like a normal girl. The only thing was that the temperature of her body was a bit low, and she was particularly sensitive to cold.

Now then, was it possible that the cold her body was emitting entered into a dormant state?

"It's very likely," Chu Kangbo said and nodded. He also had some understanding of Li Tiansu's daughter's disease.

* * *

Actually, it was just like the two had guessed. The fearsome cold emitting from the ice coffin started to weaken, and the whole ice coffin changed into an ordinary chunk of ice.

Very soon, the ice coffin crumbled, revealing the ball-shaped white-haired girl wearing heavy clothes inside.

Li Yinzhu's whole body was shivering as she came out of the ice. There were still several shards of ice in her hair and on her body in general.

When she opened her eyes... they discovered that not only her hair, but her eyelashes and pupils had also changed into a silvery-white color.

She looked like a doll, delicate and lovely.

Each time Li Yinzhu's disease flared up, her body would emit cold from a minimum of seven, eight days to a maximum of several months. Afterward, the cold inside her body would automatically enter a dormant state, letting her have some free time in which she could act like normal people did. But this time, her condition was too critical. When her disease flared up, it directly created an ice coffin around her body. Since her father, Li Tiansu, was worried about her safety, he sealed the whole coffin.

Then, as soon as the seal was removed, the cold inside her body weakened, allowing her to come out of the ice coffin.

"Uh~ uh~" Li Yinzhu, who was shrinking into a ball, weakly cried.



As soon as Song Shuhang saw the trembling little girl, a sad feeling welled up in his heart. It wasn't really his good-person attribute flaring up again...

It was because he experienced Li Tiansu's life in the dreamland. He saw him getting married and raising up his daughter. Therefore, it was quite normal that he would feel this way after seeing Li Yinzhu trembling.

"Do you have a towel?" Song Shuhang quickly asked.

One of the nearby disciples of the Chu Family brought over a big towel.

Song Shuhang took a step forward and hugged the trembling Li Yinzhu, using the towel to carefully wipe away the pieces of ice from her hair, face, and neck. His actions were flawless and very skilled, as though he had done this thousands of times.

At the same time, Song Shuhang frowned and looked at the clothes she was wearing.

These clothes were probably 'magical clothes' with some magical technique attached to them, and they should be capable of automatically warming their master.

But now, it was likely that they had already lost the ability to keep their master warm. They had been eroded by the cold inside Li Yinzhu's body and were sealed inside the ice for a long time; they were currently as cold as ice.

The first thing to do was to change her clothes.

Song Shuhang took out his emerald-green kasaya and used it to wrap Li Yinzhu. Then, he turned his head toward Chu Kangbo and said, "Senior Chu, can you have some female disciple of the Chu Family wipe the body of this girl and change her clothes into something warmer?"

Chu Kangbo nodded and told two female disciples to take Li Yinzhu and change her clothes.

The two female disciples took a step forward and stretched out their hands, planning to take Li Yinzhu from Song Shuhang's embrace.

However, Li Yinzhu suddenly opened her eyes wide, and a terrified expression appeared on her face. She tightly grabbed Song Shuhang and hid behind him, starting to shiver even more.

The two female disciples of the Chu Family were somewhat embarrassed as they forced a smile.

Song Shuhang's heart moved when he saw the little girl grabbing his clothes. Then, he shot a glance at the ancient bronze ring on his finger. Was it possible that the ring was the reason Li Yinzhu unconsciously approached him?

Chapter 496: People mustn't be judged by their appearances

Did Li Yinzhu approach me due to the ancient bronze ring I'm wearing? After all, there should be Daoist Priest Li Tiansu's aura on it...

Song Shuhang gently patted Li Yinzhu and said softly, "You don't need to be afraid. Those two elder sisters will just help you change your clothes."

After hearing his words, Li Yinzhu nodded while still trembling. Then, she cautiously headed toward the two female disciples of the Chu Family in front of her.

The female disciples of the Chu Family smiled and picked Li Yinzhu up, bringing her to a nearby room to bathe her and change her clothes.

Song Shuhang heaved a sigh of relief. He felt that Li Yinzhu's state of mind was quite strange at this time.

From what he remembered, Li Yinzhu should already be a grown-up girl.

The first time her strange disease manifested, she was already over twenty years old. Afterward, Li Tiansu sold all his property while trying to find a cure for her disease, and this likewise happened over the span of several years.

But now, no matter if we were talking about her outward appearance or behavior, they weren't any different from those of a three or four years old girl.

Was it possible that her mental age had also regressed to that of a child alongside her body?



"Haha, little friend Shuhang, you seem very good at dealing with

kids," the ancestor of the Chu Family, Chu Kangbo, said with a smile. Then, he shot a glance at the small monk that was closely following behind Song Shuhang.

After returning to China, Guoguo didn't return to the Faraway Wandering Temple but decided to keep following Song Shuhang and wait for Senior Brother Three Realms to come over to pick him up.

After seeing that the ancestor of the Chu Family was looking at him, Guoguo joined his palms together and politely greeted him.

Chu Kangbo smiled and returned the courtesy.

Song Shuhang forced a smile... he was good at dealing with kids? Was it possible that he was innately popular with kids? And that the small monk Guoguo, the pekingese Doudou, Soft Feather, Sixteen, and Yu Jiaojiao were attracted to him due to this innate ability of his?

While they were chatting, the two female disciples of the Chu Family had already brought Li Yinzhu out.

They washed her up and combed her hair. At this time, she was wearing her hair down. Her long, thick, silvery-white hair was scattered behind her back, looking very beautiful.

What ruined this state of perfection was the fact that she was wearing an emerald-green kasaya over her heavy sweater, looking quite strange.

When she saw Song Shuhang, Li Yinzhu quickly ran toward him. Afterward, she took her small hands out of the kasaya and tightly grabbed Song Shuhang's clothes, not willing to let go.

When his body came in contact with the kasaya Li Yinzhu was wearing, Song Shuhang exclaimed, "So hot?"

The emerald-green kasaya had the ability to adjust its temperature automatically. Therefore, when it discovered that the temperature of Li Yinzhu's body was too low, it continuously

increased its temperature. At this time, it was scalding hot just like those heaters used in the cold winters to warm oneself up.

After hearing Song Shuhang mumbling to himself, Li Yinzhu looked at him in puzzlement.

"It's nothing." Song Shuhang gently patted her head. Such a temperature wasn't really a problem for the current Song Shuhang.

Right at this time, the ancestor of the Chu Family, Chu Kangbo, said, "Little friend, please follow me."

Chu Kangbo showed the way while Song Shuhang and Guoguo closely followed behind.

Guoguo often glanced at Li Yinzhu. He was rather curious about this girl that had suddenly come out of a chunk of ice. He was told that children were born from rocks, but it was his first time witnessing someone born from ice.



In the territory of the Chu Family.

Song Shuhang was sitting on a sofa. Guoguo was sitting on his left, Li Yinzhu on his right, and Yu Jiaojiao on his shoulder.

The emerald-green kasaya that Li Yinzhu was wearing had already been returned to Song Shuhang. The ancestor of the Chu Family had prepared some small and exquisite magical clothes for women for her.

In the end, the ancestor of the Chu Family was still a Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor. When he was young, he explored a lot of ruins together with Li Tiansu and gathered a lot of treasures. These small magical clothes were nothing for him.

Afterward, Chu Kangbo recorded the map of the forbidden area—as well as the information about the area he and Li Tiansu explored back then—on a long scroll, giving it to Song Shuhang.

Chu Kangbo didn't really want to step inside that forbidden area again.

He wasn't even able to see the front gate of the forbidden area when he was heavily injured and had to nurse his wounds for several years. As if that wasn't enough, his friend Li Tiansu also lost his life in there. From this alone, it was pretty clear that a Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor wasn't strong enough to explore those ancient ruins.

"Little friend, here is the position of the forbidden area, as well as the position of the formations located on the periphery of the area. However, many years have passed, and I'm unsure what kind of changes took place on the periphery of the forbidden area. Therefore, you can only use the information about the area that Fellow Daoist Li and I explored as a reference and nothing more," Chu Kangbo said.

"Thank you, Senior," Song Shuhang said and reassured him, "Moreover, you can be at ease. If we find the cure to Li Yinzhu's disease inside the forbidden area, we'll try our best to retrieve it."

After hearing these words, Chu Kangbo felt relieved.

Afterward, the two still discussed for a while.

Hearing about Chu Kangbo's experiences from when he was young and taking risks outside benefitted Song Shuhang quite a lot.

Afterward, the two exchanged phone numbers. If Song Shuhang's trip to the forbidden area were to produce good results, he could now contact Chu Kangbo directly.



"Senior Chu, I have still some matters to deal with, so I'll head home first. Let's hope to meet each other again!" Song Shuhang said to Chu Kangbo after cupping his hands.

"Let's hope to meet each other again." Chu Kangbo got up and

prepared to see Song Shuhang off.

After reaching the open space outside, Song Shuhang took out the 'silver dragon puppet' from his size-reducing purse.

When Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman gave him the silver dragon puppet, there was already a spirit stone of the Third Stage loaded inside. The spirit stone was enough to let the silvery dragon puppet fly for a long time.

Song Shuhang was pretty lucky that there was already a spirit stone loaded inside the puppet. Otherwise, a poor wretch like him that didn't even have half a spirit stone would only have been able to use the silver dragon puppet as a mere ornamental object.

When he saw the silver dragon puppet, Guoguo exclaimed in surprise and immediately jumped on its back. Although he was usually trying to act all serious, he was unable to restrain his childish nature after seeing something he truly liked.

Song Shuhang gently patted the head of Li Yinzhu, who was pulling still his clothes, and said, "Be a good girl and go back with Senior Chu. After a little while, I'll come to see you again, alright?"

Li Yinzhu blinked her eyes, and a confused expression appeared on her face. Her hands were still tightly holding onto Song Shuhang's clothes, unwilling to let go.

Yu Jiaojiao, who was sitting on Song Shuhang's shoulder, said with a smile, "Hehe, she is really attached to you, Shuhang."

"The reason should be this ring I'm wearing on my finger. It has an aura that she finds familiar," Song Shuhang said as he stroked the ancient bronze ring on his finger.

The Flaming Saber Technique, a healing spell, and a spirit gathering formation of the Third Stage were engraved on this ring... for the current Song Shuhang, it was a hard-to-come-by treasure.

The Flaming Saber Technique attached to this ring had saved

Song Shuhang's life several times when he was in danger. The healing spell was even more valuable. After all, it was something that could literally save one's life.

But after pondering for a moment, Song Shuhang decided to take the ring off his finger.

Then, he squatted down and grabbed Li Yinzhu's small hand, putting the ring in her palm. It was something that belonged to her father, and it was better to return it to her both from an emotional and logical point of view. It was the same as returning the ring to the rightful owner.

"Goodbye, and take care of yourself," Song Shuhang said to her in a gentle tone.

Li Yinzhu's silver eyes closely stared at the ring in her palm. She stood in place and didn't move in the slightest.

Chu Kangbo moved forward and gently patted Li Yinzhu's head, picking her up and holding her in his arms.

"Senior Chu, goodbye." Song Shuhang jumped on the back of the silver dragon puppet and cupped his hands. The eyes of the silver dragon emitted a golden radiance. Afterward, it gently flapped its huge wings and soared into the sky...

The disciples of the Chu Family looked at the puppet with envious expressions. They found the flying puppet rather cool. Unfortunately, let alone this puppet that could fly in the sky, even a puppet that could only run on land was too expensive for them. If they had enough money to purchase such a puppet, they'd better use it to buy cultivation resources instead.

"Let's go back," Chu Kangbo said.

In his embrace, Li Yinzhu was still staring at the ring. It was unknown what she was thinking.

Chu Kangbo gently patted the daughter of his deceased friend and said, "From today onward, we'll live together."

He would treat Li Yinzhu as his own daughter and diligently teach and train her.

If they were to get rid of the cold in her body someday in the future, he would finally be able to repay the debt he owed to his deceased friend.

* * *

Just as Chu Kangbo took five or six steps with Li Yinzhu in his embrace, the latter suddenly opened her mouth and said one word, "Out."

Soon after, a small spherical object flew out of her mouth.

It was a sword orb!

A sword orb was an object made of thin, thread-like sharp blades entwined into a small sphere. As long as one poured their true qi or spiritual energy inside, the sword orb would change into a sharp and long sword. Alternatively, it could attack the enemy in the shape of an orb as well.

It was very difficult to forge a sword orb. For this reason, the value of a sword orb was from five to ten times higher than an ordinary flying sword of the same rank.

After the sword orb flew out of Li Yinzhu's mouth, it swelled while midair, turning into a sword light.

Chu Kangbo was dumbfounded and exclaimed, "A sword riding technique!"

Then, Li Yinzhu broke free from his embrace and lightly jumped, landing on the sword light. Next, her small body cautiously lay down on the sword light, just like a lovely little animal.

"Whizz!"

The sword light flew away and quickly disappeared at the horizon... from the direction, it seemed she was headed toward Song Shuhang.

"Fourth Stage Innate Realm..." Chu Kangbo forced a smile.

He had judged the situation incorrectly! The daughter of his old friend was actually a cultivator of the Fourth Stage Innate Realm!

She was so young, but she already had the strength of the Fourth Stage rank!

But after carefully thinking about it, it wasn't this strange. Li Tiansu sold his whole property to find a cure for the disease of his daughter, ending up with a heavy debt. Moreover, he risked his life to explore innumerable secret realms and ruins, and all the resources he obtained were dumped on Li Yinzhu's body.

The number of natural resources was huge, and although most of them were used to resist the cold inside her body, the effect of the remaining small part was enough to push Li Yinzhu's strength to the Fourth Stage Innate Realm.

After pondering for a moment, Chu Kangbo took out his mobile phone and called Song Shuhang.

Very soon, Song Shuhang picked up the phone.

"Eh? Senior Chu, is something the matter?" Song Shuhang asked in puzzlement. Did he forget something in the Chu Family?

Somewhat embarrassed, Chu Kangbo said, "Little friend Song, Yinzhu is flying toward your position."

"What? She is flying over here? How is she flying exactly?" Song Shuhang asked.

Chu Kangbo replied, "With a flying sword."

"Fourth Stage Innate Realm...?" Song Shuhang was dumbstruck.

Chu Kangbo replied, "Indeed, Fourth Stage Innate Realm..."

"..." Song Shuhang.

Is everyone so talented nowadays? It took the seniors hundreds of years to advance to the Fourth Stage Innate Realm!

Chapter 497: Hello, I'm looking for Baijing Street's Sabersman

But now, Soft Feather was on the verge of reaching this realm while in her twenties. Su Clan's Sixteen, who was only slightly older than Soft Feather, had already tried to break through to it. Yu Jiaojiao, who was currently sitting on his shoulder, wasn't that much older than Sixteen if we were to convert her age into that of humans, and she was already at the Fourth Stage Innate Realm.

It seemed that this era was going to be full of natural talents!

At this time, Chu Kangbo's voice transmitted from the other end again. "Therefore, is it alright if I trouble little friend Song to help me take care of the daughter of my friend for a few days? I'll immediately send over two disciples of the Chu Family that will be in charge of Li Yinzhu's daily necessities. I guarantee that it won't cause little friend Song any additional trouble."

Chu Kangbo could see that Li Yinzhu wanted to follow Song Shuhang... Was it something similar to the chick coming out of the egg and considering the first person it saw as its mother?

But regardless of the reason, Li Yinzhu didn't seem to intend to leave Song Shuhang's side for the time being. In that case, he might as well send two disciples of the Chu Family along to take care of Li Yinzhu. With that, she would be able to stay close to Song Shuhang without causing him too much trouble. After finding a way to solve the situation, he would bring her back.

As for the people in charge of taking care of Li Yinzhu, Chu Kangbo already had someone suitable in mind... the most talented girl of the Chu Family, Chu Chu.

Given her talent, it would be a waste to keep her in the Chu Family. Such being the case, it was better to have her leave with little friend Song Shuhang. Perhaps she would chance upon some

fortuitous encounters.

As for the other candidate, he just needed to find someone dependable and competent, and it was settled.



Song Shuhang shot a glance at Guoguo who was happily screaming while riding on the back of the silver dragon puppet. There wasn't that much of a difference between taking care of one child or two.

"Senior Chu, it's fine. I can help you look after Li Yinzhu. However... I might have to go on a trip to a very distant place in a short while. Therefore, it's better if the disciples you want to send over to take care of her rush here within two days," Song Shuhang replied.

"Two days? No problem. Little friend, send me your address. I guarantee you that the disciples of the Chu Family will be at your place before tomorrow's sunset." Chu Kangbo patted his chest and reassured Song Shuhang. At the same time, he also thoughtlessly asked, "Little friend Song Shuhang, where are you heading exactly? Do you need any help with your journey?"

"Ah... it's a very far, far place." Song Shuhang raised his head and looked at the starry sky, saying, "Senior Chu, thank you for your consideration, but Senior White has already made the necessary arrangements for this long trip. I just need to go over, and that's it."

"I see. In that case, be careful on the road." Chu Kangbo could sense that Song Shuhang's tone was a bit strange. Therefore, he wasn't sure how to reply and could only wish him good luck.



After hanging up the phone, Song Shuhang discovered that there was a sword light quickly approaching the silver dragon from behind, its speed incredibly fast. It was at least twice as fast as the

silver dragon puppet.

At this time, the white-haired Li Yinzhu was lying down on the surface of the sword light, resembling a cute, little animal. Her eyes immediately lit up as soon as they met with Song Shuhang's.

The speed of her flying sword became even faster, and she arrived next to Song Shuhang in an instant.

Afterward, Li Yinzhu jumped with all her strength and pounced toward Song Shuhang's silver dragon puppet.

This dangerous action almost made Song Shuhang's heart jump out of his chest. He quickly stretched his hands out to grab the mischievous brat.

Luckily, Li Yinzhu could freely control her momentum. Therefore, when she pounced forward and arrived in front of Song Shuhang's body, her momentum had already reduced to the minimum. This allowed Song Shuhang to catch her and gently hold her in his arms.

The nearby sword light started to shrink, changing into a small orb that flew next to Li Yinzhu's body. Afterward, she slightly opened her mouth and swallowed the sword orb.

"Hehe." Li Yinzhu grabbed the corner of Song Shuhang's clothes and laughed complacently.

Song Shuhang didn't know whether to laugh or cry as he gently patted Li Yinzhu's head.

The nearby Guoguo opened his eyes wide in disbelief. This little girl that seemed even younger than him could unexpectedly ride a flying sword! Guoguo's view of the world had somewhat crumbled. But very soon, he clenched his teeth and steeled his heart... It must be because I didn't practice enough recently. I must practice much harder from now on.

Li Yinzhu had unknowingly motivated the small monk to practice even harder.



After grabbing Song Shuhang's clothes, Li Yinzhu stretched out her small hand and handed out the ancient bronze ring to Song Shuhang.

"You want to give it to me?" Song Shuhang said with a smile.

"Hmm." Li Yinzhu gently nodded her head.

Song Shuhang shook his head and said softly, "This is something that belonged to your father. I just returned it to the rightful owner. Now, this ring belongs to you."

Li Yinzhu kept raising her small hand as she stared at Song Shuhang with her silvery eyes.

Song Shuhang felt a bit embarrassed with Li Yinzhu staring at him like that. In the end, he had no choice but to take the ancient bronze ring once more...

From the looks of it, Li Yinzhu didn't approach me due to the ancient bronze ring...

But if the ring isn't the reason, why did she approach me?

Then, Song Shuhang immediately thought of the ghost spirit inside his body. When he was contracting the ghost spirit back then, the latter absorbed a small portion of the energy Li Tiansu left behind before disappearing.

Perhaps Song Shuhang had now some of Li Tiansu's aura on his body, and it was the reason Li Yinzhu approached him.

Forget it. Regardless of the reason, he would carry her home first. After all, Mama Song really liked kids. Therefore, she should like this adorable girl.

Oh, right. One couldn't forget the serious-looking Guoguo.



Wenzhou City, Baijing Street. Song Shuhang's home.

Mama Song was sitting on the sofa and eating watermelon seeds while watching Korean dramas.

Papa Song was lying on the sofa, resting with his eyes closed.

According to today's news report, the people that had ended up on the deserted island after the plane crash had been already delivered to Shanghai City by the cruise ship of that mysterious nouveau riche. All the passengers were currently on their way home.

Therefore, Papa Song applied for leave today, and Mama Song prepared a good meal very early. Now, they were waiting for Song Shuhang to return home.

"Ding dong~"

The sound of the doorbell echoed in the room.

"Is Shuhang finally back?" Papa Song immediately sprang to his feet; his actions were so quick that they hardly resembled those of someone of his age. Immediately after, he rushed toward the door with quick steps and opened it.

"Boy, you have finally returned... eh?" Halfway through his speech, Papa Song saw the person standing in front of the door and became speechless.

The person standing before his eyes wasn't Song Shuhang but a woman with a tall and slender figure.

Her having a tall and slender figure wasn't strange, what was strange were the clothes she was wearing. She was wearing one of those ancient red skirts, and it felt as though she was a fairy maiden that had come out of a historical movie.

It was quite hot during this period. Other than it looking strange, didn't she feel hot and stuffy with these clothes on?

"Hello, may I ask who you are?" Papa Song asked.

The woman wearing that ancient red skirt blinked her eyes and

asked, "Excuse me, is this little friend Stressed by a Mountain of Books' home?"

In the instant she smiled, a very strong attraction spread from her body, and Papa Song's body uncontrollably moved in her direction... of course, it's not what you're thinking! Papa Song wasn't attracted by her beauty but was literally 'attracted' toward her, just like a piece of iron attracted by a magnet. Papa Song felt that he was unable to stand up firmly.

"Stressed by a Mountain of Books? What's that?" Papa Song was confused. At the same time, he felt as though his center of gravity had become a bit unstable and quickly leaned back.

"Oh? Wait a moment. Today is a different day." The woman wearing the ancient red skirt took out her phone and gently swiped on its surface. Soon after, she raised her head and said earnestly, "Is this Baijing Street's Traveling Sabersman's home?"

"Baijing Street's Traveling Sabersman? What the hell is that?" Papa Song rubbed his temples. Recently, these youngsters liked to have fun in strange and bizarre ways. His train of thought just couldn't keep up with theirs. "But this street is indeed called Baijing."

"Oh, wait a moment... I forgot something very important." The woman wearing the ancient red skirt swiped on the phone once more and started to quickly type something.

In the Nine Provinces Number One Group.

Fairy Firefly: "It's very urgent! I need to ask something to the fellow daoists online. What's Baijing Street's Traveling Sabersman's full name? I can't recall it."

Vice-Island Master Tian Tianwei: "Who is Baijing Street's Traveling Sabersman?"

Dongfang Snow: "Is it a new fellow daoist that was just added to the group?"

Fairy Firefly: "No! I'm talking about that fellow daoist with seven names that's using a different one each day!"

Dongfang Snow: "Oh~ you meant Fellow Daoist Seven Days!"

Dharma King Creation: "What the hell is this Fellow Daoist Seven Days? That little friend is just changing name each day, and that's it."

Northern River's Loose Cultivator: "Fellow Daoist Seven Days... this dao name is quite good. I like it! Moreover, Fairy Firefly, Baijing Street's Traveling Sabersman's full name is 'Song Shuhang'. Anyway, why are you asking this?"

Fairy Firefly: "I just went to his place, and I think I met his father. However, I just couldn't recall to mind Baijing Street's Traveling Sabersman's full name! Anyway, I got it now! Many thanks, Northern River! 🙏"

Northern River's Loose Cultivator: "..."

Fairy Firefly switched the phone off and raised her head once more, saying to Papa Song, "Hello, is this little friend Song Shuhang's home?"

"Oh, so you are Song Shuhang's friend!" Papa Song nodded his head. At the same time, he shot a glance at Fairy Firefly. She was a very attractive woman, and if we were talking about makings and appearance, she was comparable to that Miss Yu Rouzi from the previous time; both had their merits. The only thing was that her strange behavior and clothing.

What the hell was that name just now, Baijing Street's Traveling Sabersman...

Wait a moment... is it possible that it's that cosplay and role-playing thing that youngsters like nowadays?

Papa Song didn't expect that Song Shuhang liked such things.

"Please, come in. Shuhang should be on his way back home from

Shanghai City. He should arrive today. Did you need something from him since you were looking for him?" Papa Song warmly received the guest.

"Yes. Song Shuhang orderer a special product recently. The product has already arrived in Wenzhou City and was temporarily delivered to my place. I've heard that he was coming home. Therefore, I decided to come here to meet him personally and see if he had the time to move some of the merchandise," Fairy Firefly said with a smile.

The thousand bags of spirit rice Song Shuhang ordered had already arrived in Wenzhou City and had been stored inside Fairy Firefly's empty multi-storied building. Moreover, Fairy Firefly had been entrusted by Venerable White to send Song Shuhang to space.

She hadn't used this method to deliver people to space for a very long time. Therefore, she was starting to get restless, itching to enter into action.

Fairy Firefly had already prepared a full set of astronaut equipment for Song Shuhang.

Now, she only had to wait for Song Shuhang to return home, move some of the spirit rice, and say goodbye to his family before shooting him into space.

Papa Song sighed and asked, "Special product? What kind of special product did he order this time? That boy..."

Chapter 498: The Flaming Saber Technique, eat it while it's still warm!

"It's white rice, and its taste is quite good. Since it was a hard to come by opportunity, little friend Song Shuhang ordered quite a lot of it," Fairy Firefly said with a smile.

In the instant she smiled, her body started to emit that gravitational attraction once more.

Papa Song, who was leading the way, felt his body become heavy, just as though he was walking against the wind. He had to spend a great deal of effort to take each step.

What's happening? My body seems to have become quite weak nowadays... Papa Song thought to himself. I'll ask my wife to prepare me some tonic tonight to recover my strength.

After hearing that Song Shuhang had purchased some white rice, Papa Song didn't inquire further... and it was a good thing that he didn't. Otherwise, if he were to discover that Song Shuhang ordered a thousand packets of rice in one go, he would surely curse him and label him as a wastrel. Then, he would look for something to beat him up.

In the rear, after discovering Papa Song's difficulties, Fairy Firefly immediately stopped smiling. The gravitational attraction spreading from her body likewise disappeared.

Papa Song suddenly felt his body become lighter and was somewhat confused as to what was happening.

After taking a few steps, Papa Song asked, "Right. Miss, how should I address you?"

Up until now, he had yet to ask the name of this girl wearing an ancient red skirt.

"You can just call me Liu Ying 1, I guess," Fairy Firefly said with a

smile.

"Liu Ying, huh? It's a very good name," Papa Song continued. "Since you're Song Shuhang's friend, you don't really need to act like a stranger and can just call me Uncle Song."

Fairy Firefly was speechless and somewhat embarrassed.

After all, she wasn't like those shameless people that would call a youngster in his forties 'uncle' just to appear young! Her actual age was enough to let her end up in the first pages of the Song Family's list of ancestors.

Papa Song enthusiastically led Fairy Firefly into the living room. After seeing that there was a guest, Mama Song quickly went to prepare a cup of 'Spirit Green Tea'.

Song Shuhang had reminded them earlier that they could put at most two tea leaves in one cup of Spirit Green Tea.

Fairy Firefly took the cup, looked at the two lonely tea leaves drifting on the surface and didn't know whether to laugh or cry.

Although it had been a long time since she met ordinary people, Fairy Firefly had a lot of experience due to her age. Therefore, he was able to quickly get on the same wavelength as Mama Song and Papa Song.

The three people started to laugh and chat.

...Ahaha, by the way, how come little friend Shuhang isn't home yet?

If they kept chatting, it would be difficult for her to avoid referring to Papa Song as 'Uncle Song'. It was simply too embarrassing. Fairy Firefly got goosebumps just at the thought of such a scene.



In the meantime.

Song Shuhang was still riding on the silver dragon puppet.

However, he didn't directly head in Wenzhou City's direction. He first made a turn and headed toward the smelted cave.

He headed toward the same smelted cave that was once She Lan's dwelling.

When Song Shuhang entered the dreamland the last time and dreamt of She Lan's life experiences, he got ahold of two important pieces of information.

The first one was that She Lan explored the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue together with his companions.

The second one was that there was a double-layered wall in the depths of the smelted cave, and behind this double-layered wall was concealed an exquisite wooden puppet that was probably related to the Jet-Black Sect and the mastermind behind She Lan. Therefore, Song Shuhang took this matter to heart.

That exquisite wooden puppet had managed to conceal itself in the depths of the smelted cave before She Lan, who had been just transformed into a puppet, regained his senses.

At first, Song Shuhang was planning to return to the cave together with a senior.

But now, a cultivator of the Fourth Stage Innate Realm such as Yu Jiaojiao was sitting on his shoulder. Li Yinzhu, another cultivator of the Fourth Stage Innate Realm, was also together with him. Therefore, he might as well try to explore the cave now.

In addition to these two cultivators of the Fourth Stage Realm, Song Shuhang still had Guoguo, a mascot of the First Stage Mortality Transcender Realm, as well as two seahorse-type spirit beasts with the bloodline of a flood dragon. At this time, they were unexpectedly lying down next to Li Yinzhu's body and blowing bubbles with their mouths.

It seemed that the two seahorses really liked the cold air spreading from Li Yinzhu's body.

On the other hand, Li Yinzhu also seemed to really like the seahorses. If one were to look carefully, they would see that there was some drool flowing out from the corners of her mouth...



After they arrived in the airspace of the smelted cave, the silver puppet dragon slowly descended.

On the back of the dragon, Song Shuhang's face was deathly pale.

After his craving for riding the silver dragon puppet like a dragon knight was satisfied and the adrenaline rush was over, Song Shuhang acrophobia resurfaced once more. When he saw that the houses below were only of the size of small black dots, Song Shuhang felt his legs becoming somewhat soft.

It was something that had nothing to do with willpower. After all, Song Shuhang's willpower was very strong, but acrophobia was a fearsome symptom that even his willpower couldn't overcome.

According to Song Shuhang's guess, he might be able to get rid of his acrophobia after learning how to ride a flying sword since he wouldn't have to worry about falling from the sky anymore.

Luckily, the back of the silver dragon puppet was somewhat bigger than the layer of light of disposable flying swords and had a special saddle for flying and reins that one could grab.

With that, Song Shuhang was able to keep the fear under control and slowly descend.

"Later, I will ask if one of the seniors can install a windshield on this silver dragon puppet," Song Shuhang muttered to himself. Since there was nothing around while he was flying in the middle of the sky, Song Shuhang felt particularly anxious.



The silver dragon puppet slowly descended and got inside the cave from the entrance Venerable White created when he fell

down.

Guoguo jumped down from the back of the dragon and curiously looked all around, asking, "What is this place?"

Inside the smelted cave, the surrounding four walls were charred black.

The aftermath of the bodies of the black dragon puppet and She Lan exploding was still clearly visible before their eyes. On the other hand, the place where the blood pond was located had been destroyed by Venerable Spirit Butterfly.

At this time, the blood pond had dried up, and all the runes inside the smelted cave had been moved away by Venerable Spirit Butterfly. Those runes were related to the 'teleporting formation' and were thus very helpful towards Venerable Spirit Butterfly's research.

Song Shuhang replied, "This is the immortal cave of a deceased cultivator. Be careful, we are heading toward the inner part."

Li Yinzhu tightly grabbed Song Shuhang's clothes and closely followed behind him.

Guoguo was also closely following behind Li Yinzhu.

The two seahorses didn't have any fighting strength. Therefore, Song Shuhang left them next to the silver dragon puppet. The silver dragon was currently in an active state, and Song Shuhang only needed a word to make it take off. After all, that wooden puppet hiding in the depths of the smelted cave was somewhat strange. Song Shuhang had no choice but to prepare some countermeasures.

Very soon, Song Shuhang's group arrived in the inner part of the cave.

Originally, there were many 'skin puppets' and other puppet

parts lying in here. Later, Song Shuhang, Soft Feather, and Liu Jianyi destroyed everything.

The surroundings were likewise charred black. Those were the traces left behind by a large fire.

Song Shuhang carefully looked around and discovered that no one had been here recently.

"Jiaojiao, get ready. In a while, I'll destroy that layer of stone. There is a strange human-like puppet concealed behind the layer of stone that might be related to the Jet-Black Sect," Song Shuhang said.

At the same time, he took out the emerald-green kasaya and put it on. The kasaya itself had an incredibly strong defense, and it could be activated as well for an even stronger defense. If it were possible to turn it into a daoist robe, Song Shuhang would have been even happier.

Yu Jiaojiao nodded and said, "No problem. I'll prepare a powerful defensive shield, as well as a substitution technique."

Li Yinzhu didn't need Song Shuhang's reminder. She slightly opened her mouth and the sword orb flew out, hovering next to her body and maintaining a state of alertness.

"In that case, I'm going in." Song Shuhang grasped the treasured saber Broken Tyrant and arrived in front of the layer of stone that was concealing the exquisite wooden puppet in his dream.

Song Shuhang operated his true qi according to the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique>. With that, Song Shuhang's each and every action was accompanied by the cry of a huge whale. In this state, Song Shuhang could burst forth a power that was comparable to that of a huge whale.

Soon after, Song Shuhang held the treasured saber Broken Tyrant in his hand and spun his wrist.

Then, he visualized in his mind Scarlet Heaven's heaven burning

saber intent.

"Flaming Saber Technique!"

Bright flames started to burn, and Song Shuhang violently slashed out, sending the saber qi toward the layer of stone.

Song Shuhang's knowledge of basic saber techniques had sharply increased while practicing the <Inverted Scale Saber Technique> with Young Master Phoenix Slayer's CPU.

The higher one's knowledge in regards to basic saber techniques was, the higher would be their comprehension in regards to saber techniques. When he used the Flaming Saber Technique this time, the saber intent within was much more powerful.

The power of the saber intent and the Flaming Saber Technique complemented each other!

This slash of the Flaming Saber Technique was much bigger in size than the one Song Shuhang unleashed during the fight on the Grievance Settling Platform. The blazing saber qi that streaked across the air was almost four meters long!

This attack of the Flaming Saber Technique should be enough to destroy that layer of stone, right? Song Shuhang thought to himself.



In the instant the saber qi of the Flaming Saber Technique slashed out, a figure suddenly flashed past Song Shuhang's body, positioning itself in front of the layer of stone!

While facing the blazing saber qi, the figure spread its arms and opened its small mouth. Its long silvery hair was fluttering in the wind... the figure was unexpectedly Li Yinzhu!

"Yinzhu? What are you doing!" Song Shuhang bellowed with all his might. What game was this little girl playing? Why did she suddenly blocked the path of the Flaming Saber Technique?

Was it because there was something strange about that layer of stone?

Song Shuhang quickly stretched out his hand and made a grabbing motion from afar. The saber intent inside the Flaming Saber Technique disappeared. That saber intent was a copy of Scarlet Heaven's saber intent, and its killing power was very high. Luckily, Song Shuhang could freely control it and make it disappear at any time.

After losing the support of the saber intent, the lethality of the blazing saber qi greatly decreased, only the blazing flames were left.

At this time, Song Shuhang saw Li Yinzhu open her mouth and make several seals with her hands.

"Slurp!" Li Yinzhu inhaled through her small mouth.

In the next moment, something astonishing happened.

That huge slash of blazing saber qi was sucked into her mouth like noodles. In just two seconds, the whole attack had thoroughly disappeared into her mouth.

"Burp~" Li Yinzhu burped with a satisfied expression on her face. It seemed she had enjoyed the meal.

Song Shuhang opened his eyes wide: 🤪

She unexpectedly ate the Flaming Saber Technique!

Although it was only the outer shell of the Flaming Saber Technique without the support of the saber intent, it was still a slash made of true fire born generated from true qi. Those flames were much hotter than normal fire.

Now, Li Yinzhu had unexpectedly sucked it inside her belly through her small mouth... this was literally the saying: 'eat the food while it's warm because you won't like it once it's cold'.

After eating the blazing flames, Li Yinzhu breathed out a

mouthful of warm air, and her originally pale face became somewhat ruddy. She seemed full of energy.

Looking at how skilled she was, it absolutely wasn't her first time eating the Flaming Saber Technique.

Song Shuhang unconsciously glanced at the ancient bronze ring on his finger and thought of the Flaming Saber Technique engraved on it.

Is it possible that Daoist Priest Li Tiansu often fed the flames of the 'Flaming Saber Technique' to his daughter? Is this the reason Li Yinzhu instinctively moved forward and ate the flames as soon as she saw them?

Chapter 499: Venerable White's exploration team getting wiped out

Judging from Li Yinzhu's ruddy complexion, it seems that eating the flames of the Flaming Saber Technique can partially counter the cold inside her body...

In that case, should I make her eat the flames of the Flaming Saber Technique from time to time before we find a method to cure her disease permanently? Song Shuhang thought to himself.

"Ah!" After eating the flames, Li Yinzhu realized that what she did was improper. She bashfully whizzed past Song Shuhang and hid behind his back, tightly grabbing his clothes and not daring to lift her head.

If there was a lolicon on the scene and they were to see her acting like this, they would immediately hug her and bring her home regardless of the price they had to pay.

"Forget it. I can still destroy that layer of stone even without the Flaming Saber Technique." Song Shuhang raised the treasured saber Broken Tyrant. This is time, he didn't use the Flaming Saber Technique but only the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique>.

The true qi poured inside the treasured saber Broken Tyrant, and Song Shuhang used once more those saber skills he acquired from Young Master Phoenix Slayer's basic knowledge of saber techniques. He relied on the sharp blade to slash at the layer of stone, cutting through it as though he was cutting butter.

After five slashes, the big layer of stone finally came down.

Very soon, the place where the wooden puppet was hiding was laid bare before the eyes of the several people on the scene.

Just like in Song Shuhang's dreamland, a lifelike wooden puppet was hidden beneath the layer of stone.

Yu Jiaojiao, who was sitting on Song Shuhang's shoulder, said, "I don't sense any fluctuation of spiritual or other energy come from it."

It seemed that the wooden puppet before their eyes was nothing but an ordinary human-like puppet. There weren't any magical techniques, runes, or secret mechanisms hidden on its body.

"Was it just me overthinking it?" Song Shuhang muttered to himself.

But in the dreamland, he stood in this place and saw the wooden puppet hide behind the layer of stone before the disciple of the Thousand Hands Sect, She Lan, regained consciousness.

Who would believe that the wooden puppet was only an ordinary puppet and nothing more?

Song Shuhang tried to guess. "Is it possible that there might be some hidden mechanism concealed behind the body of the puppet? For example, some fearsome trap will activate if the puppet is moved away from its current position or something of the sort?"

Yu Jiaojiao replied, "It's very likely. Let's put some distance between us and the puppet. I'll use my ability to control water from a safe distance to dig it out."

Thereupon, everyone put some distance between themselves and the layer of stone.

Yu Jiaojiao stretched out her small claw and activated a seal. Soon after, a mass of water appeared in front of her out of nowhere.

Under the effects of Yu Jiaojiao's innate ability to control water, the mass of water changed into four whips that swept toward the wooden puppet.

Yu Jiaojiao said, "Get ready. If something strange happens, let's get out here immediately!"

Song Shuhang and Li Yinzhu simultaneously nodded.

Yu Jiaojiao moved her small claw and the whip of water likewise moved, pulling the wooden puppet out of the layer of stone. No hidden mechanism was activated, and the wooden puppet was easily pulled out of the stone and fell next to Song Shuhang's body.

The body of the wooden puppet shook a few times due to the inertia, but it soon became motionless.

"..." Yu Jiaojiao.

"..." Song Shuhang.

After a short while, Song Shuhang took a step forward and used the treasured saber Broken Tyrant to poke the wooden puppet lying on the ground.

There wasn't any reaction; the wooden puppet didn't get up to attack him, either.

Thereupon, Song Shuhang opened his size-reducing purse and moved it closer to the wooden puppet. The size-reducing purse could only reduce the size of non-living things. In other words, if this wooden puppet was like She Lan, a person whose body had been completely transformed into a puppet, it wouldn't shrink.

But as soon as the size-reducing purse approached it, the wooden puppet started to shrink.

It was really just an ordinary puppet.

In the end, Song Shuhang stored it inside his size-reducing purse.

Yu Jiaojiao said, "So, that's it?"

Song Shuhang nodded and said, "Yeah, that's it."

Later, he would have to ask in the group which senior was familiar with the puppet techniques of the Jet-Black Sect and could help him examine this wooden puppet to see if there were any problems with it.

Yu Jiaojiao said, "It was somewhat disappointing."

Song Shuhang replied, "I feel the same... anyway, we managed to obtain the wooden puppet. Now, it's time to return home."

Mama Song and Papa Song are probably getting anxious... Song Shuhang thought to himself.

❄ ❄ ❄

At this time, in the Nine Provinces Number One Group.

Several fellow daoists suddenly popped up.

True Monarch Fallout: "..."

Cave Lord Snow Wolf: "..."

Great Master Profound Principle only sent a dot: "."

Spirit Butterfly Island's Soft Feather: "Ahaha."

Northern River's Loose Cultivator: "Eh? Didn't you guys enter the ancient ruins together with Venerable White to explore them? How come you are all here? Is it possible that your phones managed to get the signal while inside the ruins?"

Spirit Butterfly Island's Soft Feather: "Ahaha, Senior Northern River, our team was wiped out."

Northern River's Loose Cultivator: "What?"

Their team was wiped out? They were wiped out even though Venerable White was leading them and Venerable Spirit Butterfly was also present on the scene?

True Monarch Fallout: "Yes. We just recently regained our senses. Moreover, we received some injuries as well. We left the ruins earlier, and we are currently trying to heal our wounds. Ahaha."

When the bright moon appears: "You all fainted even though there were two Venerables together with you, and you were forced to leave the ruins as well? Are these ruins really so scary? In that

case, congratulations!"

The scarier the ruins, the bigger the reward inside!

Fairy Lychee: "Scholar Drunken Yang, hello. Actually, I'm more interested in how the exploration team was wiped out."

When the bright moon appears: "It's Drunken Moon, Drunken Moon! If you really can't remember it, look at my current username 'When the bright moon appears', there is the word 'moon' inside!"

Fairy Lychee: "I'm sorry... I'll make sure to remember it the next time. Bright moon, bright moon!"

"Cough, as for how our team was wiped out... it's a long story! 😞" Cave Lord Snow Wolf sent a sad emoji, as well as a :senior_white_smile: emote.

Unexpectedly, Cave Lord Snow Wolf still dared to send Senior White's emotes in the chat. Was he tired of living?

True Monarch Fallout: "It's like this... not long after Senior White led us into the ruins, he started to explore them while studying the ancient runes and magical techniques all around.

Great Master Profound Principle: "."

Cave Lord Snow Wolf continued, "Then, not sure how, but Senior White got somewhat distracted while he was studying the runes."

***\[System notification: A welcome to 'Tyrant Flood Dragon wants to father a football team' who just joined the 'Nine Provinces Number One Group'.\]**

Tyrant Flood Dragon wants to father a football team: "Thank you Fellow Daoist Yellow Mountain for adding me to the group. Hello, everyone. I'm Tyrant Flood Dragon!"

"True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon's username is really something," Northern River's Loose Cultivator said with a smile.

"Anyway, let's not get sidetracked and continue with what we were talking about."

"I'll explain what happened next." Spirit Butterfly Island's Soft Feather quickly wrote: "Senior White got distracted, but we lot were behind him, and from the very start, we didn't notice it. Then, we kept walking and walking... until Senior White suddenly stumbled."

Northern River's Loose Cultivator: ":face_palm:"

Fairy Lychee: "Restrain your grief!"

When the bright moon appears: "Restrain your grief! +1"

Dongfang Snow: "Restrain your grief! +2"

Sun Splitting Halberd Guo Da: \"[Picture of a cute puppy]\".

Sun Splitting Halberd Guo Da: \"[Picture of the head of a dog being furiously rubbed]\".

Sun Splitting Halberd Guo Da: "Now that I'm done making fun of myself, Restrain your grief! +3"

Treasure Forging Heavenly Mansion's Yang Xian: "Fellow Daoist Guo Da, don't destroy the chain! Restrain your grief! +4"

Island Master Tian Tiankong: "You above, you also broke the chain... f*ck. Anyway, since Senior White fell, did he cause that terrifying explosion as well? No wonder your entire team was wiped out!"

Vice-Island Master Tian Tianwei: "Stupid Elder Brother, don't forget that Venerable Spirit Butterfly entered the ancient ruins together with them! Although Venerable White's skill to suddenly stumble and fall to the ground is rather fearsome, Venerable Spirit Butterfly should be able to swiftly protect all the people on the scene."

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman: "Therefore, how was your team wiped out?"

Spirit Butterfly Island's Soft Feather continued with her explanation. "The ancient ruins we were exploring were full of traps and hidden mechanisms. In the instant Venerable White stumbled and fell to the ground, the several traps and hidden mechanisms concealed in the surrounding area exploded."

The fellow daoists of the Nine Provinces Number One Group tried to visualize the scene in their minds... it was simply too terrifying.

"But to tell you the truth, we were lucky that Fellow Daoist White stumbled," Tyrant Flood Dragon wants to father a football team said at this time. "The hidden mechanisms concealed within the ancient ruins were very ingenious, and not even the two Venerables traveling together with us were able to discover all of them. At the time, our group had already carelessly entered within the range of these hidden mechanisms. We were very lucky that Fellow Daoist White stumbled and destroyed the traps and hidden mechanisms before they could activate. If Fellow Daoist White hadn't tripped and had the traps and hidden mechanisms activated, perhaps the situation of our group would've been even worse."

"Yes, my father was of the same mind. He said that we got really lucky that Senior White suddenly stumbled back then," Spirit Butterfly Island's Soft Feather added.

Therefore, Venerable White suddenly stumbling and falling to the ground was actually a heaven-sent gift that saved the whole group?

Northern River's Loose Cultivator: "Senior White's luck is incredible!"

At the same time, he selected the :senior_white_bless: emote from the 'Senior White's expression package' and carefully saved it.

He was planning to keep this picture close to him until he was

done breaking through to the Sixth Stage Realm. Who knew, perhaps he might receive Senior White's blessing and advance in realm more easily with this picture at hand?

Afterward, the group was completely flooded with the sentence 'Senior White's luck is incredible'.

* * *

After a short while, Fairy Firefly popped up and wrote: " ***@Baijing Street's Traveling Sabersman,*** little friend Song Shuhang, how come you haven't returned home yet? I've been waiting for you at your place for more than half a day! I can't bear it anymoreeeee!"

* * *

Right at this time, Song Shuhang was lying on the back of the silver dragon puppet; he looked very pale.

Due to his acrophobia flaring up more and more frequently, he was having trouble controlling the silver dragon puppet. Therefore, he made up his mind and decided to let Yu Jiaojiao control the puppet for the time being.

Amongst the people on the scene, Guoguo was too small, and Li Yinzhu's state of mind wasn't too stable. Therefore, there was only Yu Jiaojiao left that could control the puppet.

However... Song Shuhang quickly regretted making this decision.

It was said that a tiger could not beget a dog... and a flood dragon couldn't beget a weak daughter, either.

This was more or less the meaning.

Yu Jiaojiao was True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon's daughter, the winner of the first session of the hand-guided tractor competition of the world of cultivators. Therefore, she was very talented and enthusiastic when it came to driving vehicles and racing on the road...

As soon as her small claws grabbed the reins of the silver puppet dragon, she changed into a completely different person.

Her eyesight sharpened and killing intent flashed through her small eyes.

An indomitable aura was surging on her whole body, ready to slay gods and devils alike if they were to block her path!

The speed of the silver dragon puppet was pushed to the limit and reached supersonic speed in a split second!

Chapter 500: Sideways King's car and the unexpected traffic accident

After pulling through the long journey with much difficulty, the silver dragon puppet looked for an isolated area next to Wenzhou City's seashore and slowly landed.

After he jumped down from the back of the silver dragon puppet, Song Shuhang felt that his legs had become somewhat soft. The state of his acrophobia had also worsened. If we were to rank the gravity of one's acrophobia on a scale of 1 to 10, Song Shuhang's current level of acrophobia had already reached level 8.

Song Shuhang secretly swore not to let Yu Jiaojiao touch this silver dragon puppet ever again.

After storing the silver dragon puppet away, Song Shuhang glanced at Guoguo, Li Yinzhu—who had become sleepy without him noticing—and the two seahorse dragons in the water tank.

Afterward, he said, "This seashore is pretty far from Baijing Street. It seems we'll need a car to go there."

"You need a car? Leave it to me!" Yu Jiaojiao said as she patted her chest.

"You can get us a car?"

"Of course! An uncle of mine directly manages this sea area. Therefore, there are people of our faction here. It's rather easy to obtain a car," Yu Jiaojiao said.

The seas and the oceans were much bigger than the land.

The land was full of humans, and even a Sixth Stage True Monarch could only occupy a small territory. In some cases, they had to directly create their domain in a different dimension.

On the other hand, a Sixth Stage True Monarch was able to occupy a very large territory in the middle of the sea. Moreover,

they had several scattered small territories as well aside from the main one.

This sea area close to Wenzhou City just happened to be under the control of a sworn brother of True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon.

Yu Jiaojiao took out her small and lovely phone and dialed a number.

Soon after, a heartfelt laughter was transmitted from the other end. "Jiaojiao, is that you? Did the sun rise in the west today? How come you called your uncle on your own?"

"Hehe. Uncle Da Jiao, I'm currently in the sea area next to Wenzhou City. Do you have any subordinate here that can help me deal with a matter?" Yu Jiaojiao said sweetly.

"You are in the sea area next to Wenzhou City? No problem, wait a moment. I'll determine your coordinates and send someone over to look for you," Uncle Da Jiao said readily.

Then, less than ten minutes later, waves started to surge on the surface of the sea.

Soon after, a crab whose body alone was three meters long crawled out of the water and moved sideways until arriving in front of Song Shuhang's group.

It was a monster crab of the Third Stage.

This monster crab obviously had had some fortuitous encounter. After it reached the shore, it rolled on the spot and the shell on its body changed like that of a Transformer, disjoining and uniting continuously.

Very soon, it changed into a monster crab with a humanoid shape. It could be considered as a half-human and half-monster creature.

The hard shell was firmly protecting its entire body, and its two big pincers changed and shifted to the arm position of the human body. Its legs likewise changed and shifted toward the bottom, turning into two human-like feet.

Afterward, the monster crab moved sideways and arrived in front of Song Shuhang. It raised its pincer and said to Yu Jiaojiao, "Milady Jiaojiao, I'm ' <anno data-annotation-id="e26f8dd2-2c45-892e-b839-7aaa76af454c" data-title="Sideways King"> Sideways King 1 </anno> '. I hurried here after I received Master Da Jiao's order. Milady Jiaojiao, what do you need of me?"

Yu Jiaojiao blinked her small eyes and said, "We need a car."

"A car?" The monster crab nodded and said, "I understand. I just happen to have some human cars in my collection. Actually, I quite like cars and the like, and I found this session of the hand-guided tractor competition truly exciting. Right, congratulations to Your Excellency True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon for winning the competition!"

After it was done with its speech, the monster crab moved sideways toward a storehouse on the shore. "Milady Jiaojiao and the others, please follow me. I'll bring you to the garage. Although the vehicles I've collected aren't that many, they are all pretty good."

"See, it's settled," Yu Jiaojiao said complacently.

Song Shuhang lifted the two water tanks and followed behind the monster crab, heading toward the garage. Now then, this monster crab was unexpectedly moving sideways even after assuming a humanoid shape?

It was worthy of being called Sideways King, overbearingly <anno data-annotation-id="939bf853-d2f2-63f5-7a21-cd3cd92d98db" data-title="moving sideways"> moving sideways 2 </anno> and going its own way without caring for others, truly cool.



The monster crab Sideways King was a sincere fellow. Just like it said, although the cars it collected were few—there were only seven of them—they were all high-quality ones.

Moreover, they all had one thing in common: the volume of all the cars was pretty big.

The reason for this was that Sideways King was more than two meters tall even after assuming a humanoid shape.

"Milady Jiaojiao, you can choose one of the cars here," Sideways King said.

Song Shuhang said, "All the cars here are pretty good. Moreover, they are big enough to accommodate the two water tanks. You can choose the one you prefer."

Yu Jiaojiao nodded in agreement.

Then, just as they were chatting, Guoguo saw a car that was different than the others.

The car was hidden behind a large curtain.

Guoguo's childish nature resurfaced and he quickly ran toward the vehicle, moving the curtain to a side.

"So cool!" Guoguo's eyes immediately lit up.

Although Guoguo wasn't an expert when it came to cars, he could easily tell that this car hidden behind the curtain was on a completely different level than the other seven.

The shiny-black body of the massive car was somewhat similar to the Batmobile seen in the 'Batman' movie from a few years ago.

But the insides of the car, as well as its volume, had been modified and increased in size. Especially the wheels—each wheel was one meter and a half tall. They looked very overbearing.

"That's the one!" Yu Jiaojiao's eyes also lit up.

She didn't even wait for Sideways King's reply and leapt down from Song Shuhang's shoulder, changing her size midair and reaching a height of 170 centimeters.

Then, she quickly jumped on the driver seat.

Inside the Batmobile, the key to the car was placed on the edge of the seat of the driver.

Yu Jiaojiao picked up the key and started the car.

"Vroom, vroom, vroom~"

The rumbling sound of the engine echoed. The sound was really overbearing; it was truly a domineering car.

Song Shuhang placed down the two water tanks and patted the sleepy Li Yinzhu, hinting her stay here and look after the tanks.

Soon after, Song Shuhang arrived next to the Batmobile and shot a glance at those huge wheels. The body of the car was truly domineering.

All men were bound to love such a car.

But the problem was... they couldn't really drive such a car on the streets, right?

Moreover, it seemed that this car was Sideways King's beloved treasure. It was improper for a gentleman to take away someone else's treasured belongings.

Therefore, Song Shuhang decided to urge Yu Jiaojiao to choose another car for the time being. If she really liked this car, she could pay Sideways King and have him deliver her an identical one later.

"Let me try the power of this car." Yu Jiaojiao's voice echoed from within the car.

Right at this time, the distant Sideways King shouted, "Milady Jiaojiao, be careful! That's something I personally modified, it's a car custom-made for me!"

"Don't worry. I don't want to take your car. I just want to try it out. If its power can satisfy me, I'll pay you five times its value later, enough for you to modify five such cars! At the time, give me one as well!" Yu Jiaojiao shouted as she released the handbrake.

"Milady Jiaojiao, this isn't what I meant! It's not about the money I spent to modify the car. What I'm talking about is the way to operate this car... ah, too late." Sideways King facepalmed.

Yu Jiaojiao tightly held the steering wheel and pressed the accelerator with her foot... in the next moment, the wheels of the Batmobile moved until placing themselves into a horizontal position.

"Vroom~" In the next instant, the car moved sideways.

Song Shuhang, who was standing next to the car, appreciating it while sighing with emotion, felt everything become black.

The big and black Batmobile had suddenly moved sideways!

It was something he hadn't expected in the least!

In the next moment, Song Shuhang bumped into the frontal part of the massive car... no wait, he bumped into the side of the car!

Anyway, the huge power of the car knocked him flying. His body flew for about ten meters before crashing into the wall of the storehouse.

What happened? What happened just now?

Song Shuhang was dumbfounded.

Although Yu Jiaojiao was a female driver, what was the deal with the car moving sideways?

Was it possible that female drivers were fearsome to the point of ignoring the laws of physics and motion...?



Just as Song Shuhang's body was sliding down from the wall, he

thought of the reason. The Batmobile was something that Sideways King modified personally.

Therefore, the car also 'overbearingly moved sideways' just like him.

After becoming aware of the reason, Song Shuhang shed some tears.

What's the deal with the car moving sideways!

Even if you're a monster crab and you walk sideways, what need was there to modify the car and make it move sideways as well?

Moreover, even if the car was modified to move sideways, why didn't it move toward the right side? Did it really have to move toward the left, exactly where I was standing, and hit me in the face?

In short...

"So unlucky..." Song Shuhang sighed.

Luckily, his true qi automatically activated and protected his body in the instant the heavy car bumped into him. Although he was sent flying for more than ten meters, his body didn't suffer any injury and was only slightly aching due to the impact.

Luckily, Yu Jiaojiao quickly braked, and there wasn't a second impact.

Song Shuhang activated the 'healing spell' on the ancient bronze ring and stretched his body; he was now in perfect condition.



In the end, Song Shuhang and the others chose a van with a lot of space in the cargo compartment and placed the two water tanks in there. The two seahorse dragons inside the water tanks used the innate ability of spirit beasts to change the size of their bodies and were now as big as ordinary seahorses, around the size of a palm.

With that, he could easily take them home and treat them as pet

seahorses for now. At the same time, he would need to remind Mama Song not to get strange ideas about cooking these seahorses. Song Shuhang had learned his lesson from the previous experience with Lady Onion.

This time, Song Shuhang decided to drive himself.

Yu Jiaojiao lay prone on the front passenger seat and apologized sincerely, "I'm sorry, it wasn't intentional."

"It's not your fault. Who would have thought that Sideways King's car would also move sideways." Song Shuhang sighed and just accepted his bad luck.

"Yes. The next time, it would be better not to mess with Sideways King's cars before making sure how they work," Yu Jiaojiao said earnestly.

However, that car was really cool!



After getting through his first traffic jam, Song Shuhang was able to return to Baijing Street with much difficulty.

Just as he was about to reach home, he decided to give Mama Song and Papa Song a call.

"Boy, you are finally back!" Mama Song said. "The guest waited for you for almost half a day."

"Guest? Who is it?" Song Shuhang asked in puzzlement.

He wasn't even home yet, and there were already people visiting him?

"It's a pretty girl called Liu Ying. Which one are you more intimate with? Liu Ying or that Yu Rouzi from the previous time?" Mama Song asked in a low voice.

Liu Ying... like... firefly?

Wait a moment... this isn't the same Fairy Firefly that wants to

send me to space, right?

Table of Contents

[Cultivation Chat Group](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 401: The 21st-century good neighbor](#)

[Chapter 402: A Blood Demon Boss suddenly spawning in the countryside](#)

[Chapter 403: Strange phenomena appearing while discussing profound principles](#)

[Chapter 404: The seniors of the group using misdirection](#)

[Chapter 405: Ostracized by his fellow daoists?](#)

[Chapter 406: Gathering the scrolls to summon the '1S edition'](#)

[Chapter 407: A beautiful saber attack](#)

[Chapter 408: Blood Bone](#)

[Chapter 409: Song of the Stupid Yellow Mountain](#)

[Chapter 410: All the scrolls are gathered](#)

[Chapter 411: Ah? Pew~](#)

[Chapter 412: Scattering sword qi](#)

[Chapter 413: Dying while transforming](#)

[Chapter 414: The eyeball of the Sea King](#)

[Chapter 415: Summoning Venerable White!](#)

[Chapter 416: It seems it will be very interesting to disassemble you](#)

[Chapter 417: Senior Song, don't die!](#)

[Chapter 418: An innate inability in regards to sword techniques](#)

[Chapter 419: What is Senior Song's clone eating?](#)

[Chapter 420: Do you want to sweep countless battlefields without suffering a single defeat?](#)

[Chapter 421: A fearsome cooperation between giants](#)

[Chapter 422: Song Shuhang, how come it's you again?!](#)

[Chapter 423: Senior Song's expression package](#)

[Chapter 424: Doudou's nemesis](#)

[Chapter 425: The spectators should also have their share](#)

[Chapter 426: The so-called 'nemesis'?](#)

[Chapter 427: Woof, woof! Mr. Yellow Mountain is my loyal little dog!](#)

[Chapter 428: Little friend Shuhang, here is your kasaya!](#)

[Chapter 429: Great Master Profound Principle's obsessive-compulsive disorder](#)

[Chapter 430: Young Master Phoenix Slayer's request](#)

[Chapter 431: Mastering the Inverted Scale Saber Technique](#)

[Chapter 432: Senior, can I borrow your brain for a bit?](#)

[Chapter 433: The seasoned driver ran into some difficulties](#)

[Chapter 434: The huge express delivery box](#)

[Chapter 435: I have comprehended the starter pistol formula!](#)

[Chapter 436: Hello Fellow Daoists watching from home, I'm Su Clan's Seven](#)

[Chapter 437: Choose, either place amongst the first ten or go for a one month trip into space](#)

[Chapter 438: Intense fighting!](#)

[Chapter 439: Soft Feather with tears streaming down her face](#)

[Chapter 440: Thrice Reckless Mad Saber's fear](#)

[Chapter 441: A kamikaze driver is hiding amongst us](#)

[Chapter 442: Super Phoenix Slayer System, activate!](#)

[Chapter 443: Lady Onion entering into action](#)

[Chapter 444: Frozen little Shuhang](#)

[Chapter 445: The new Wielder of the Will has some issues](#)

[Chapter 446: Toward the sea](#)

[Chapter 447: The hand-guided tractor got flooded, anxiously waiting for a reply!](#)

[Chapter 448: I've been imprisoned for 500 years](#)

[Chapter 449: A relative of the Sea King?](#)

[Chapter 450: Fellow Daoist Phoenix Slayer, will you sing for me?](#)

[Chapter 451: The silver bracers](#)

[Chapter 452: How come it's you again?](#)

[Chapter 453: Not letting go of any opportunity to show off!](#)

[Chapter 454: I'll make you happy!](#)

[Chapter 455: Congratulatory messages from all over the world](#)

[Chapter 456: Experiencing the rewarding formation](#)

[Chapter 457: Lie down and don't move, let's break through first!](#)

[Chapter 458: With the walkthrough in hand, I'm the absolute king of the world!](#)

[Chapter 459: A dao name must consist of four words!](#)

[Chapter 460: Those are not four-word dao names!](#)

[Chapter 461: Daoist Priest China, Zhejiang Province, Wenzhou City, Baijing Street](#)

[Chapter 462: A week has seven days!](#)

[Chapter 463: So unlucky!](#)

[Chapter 464: Song Shuhang's disciples and followers](#)

[Chapter 465: Young Master Phoenix Slayer's gift](#)

[Chapter 466: Fairy Lychee's video broadcast](#)

[Chapter 467: Bewitching screams](#)

[Chapter 468: That's happiness~](#)

[Chapter 469: F*ck, I hit the wrong person](#)

[Chapter 470: Three consecutive dreams](#)

[Chapter 471: The grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue](#)
[Chapter 472: Another one is happy?](#)
[Chapter 473: Don't sing, we are on the same side!](#)
[Chapter 474: Pearls with the spiritual energy of a beast](#)
[Chapter 475: How about exploring an ancient grave?](#)
[Chapter 476: Borrowing spirit stones](#)
[Chapter 477: Another spirit beast crystal](#)
[Chapter 478: No problem, I'm in no way in a hurry!](#)
[Chapter 479: A new and refreshing feeling](#)
[Chapter 480: Father, I want 365 dao names](#)
[Chapter 481: A sea urchin warrior in the friend list of a monster hunter](#)
[Chapter 482: The poisonous snake hiding in the dark](#)
[Chapter 483: Why would I want to escape?](#)
[Chapter 484: If you don't need any of the above-mentioned things, please hang up](#)
[Chapter 485: I might as well try to give my cheat a go](#)
[Chapter 486: The Fiercely Kneeling on the Ground and Surrendering Technique](#)
[Chapter 487: Actually, I'm a stallion spirit](#)
[Chapter 488: The demodragon medicine](#)
[Chapter 489: The secret of the golden chain](#)
[Chapter 490: The Whale Swallowing Technique!](#)
[Chapter 491: Please, can you not mention these disgusting things while I'm eating?](#)
[Chapter 492: I'm not the one in the wrong, the world is!](#)
[Chapter 493: The horse dragon isn't actually a horse](#)
[Chapter 494: So cold, get me out of here!](#)
[Chapter 495: The white-haired girl inside the ice coffin](#)
[Chapter 496: People mustn't be judged by their appearances](#)
[Chapter 497: Hello, I'm looking for Baijing Street's Sabersman](#)
[Chapter 498: The Flaming Saber Technique, eat it while it's still warm!](#)
[Chapter 499: Venerable White's exploration team getting wiped out](#)
[Chapter 500: Sideways King's car and the unexpected traffic accident](#)